

*Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica & Lusitano-Anglica:*  
O R, A  
**NEW GRAMMAR,**  
**ENGLISH and PORTUGUESE,**  
A N D  
**PORTUGUESE and ENGLISH;**  
Divided into two P A R T S :

The F I R S T, for the Instruction of the E N G L I S H, who  
are desirous to attain a Knowledge of the *Portuguese* Language.  
The S E C O N D, for the Use of the P O R T U G U E S E, who have  
the like Inclination to the *English* Tongue.

The First Part of which is corrected and amended, and the Second  
executed in a plain, familiar, and easy Method.

---

The F O U R T H E D I T I O N.

---

To which is now added,

*Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica & Lusitano-Anglica:*  
O U,  
**GRAMMATICA NOVA,**  
**INGLEZA e PORTUGUEZA,**  
E  
**PORTUGUEZA e INGLEZA;**

Dividida em Duas P A R T E S :

A P R I M E I R A para a Instrução dos I N G L E Z E S que dezeja-  
rem alcançar o conhecimento da Lingua *Portuguesa*.

A S E G U N D A, para o uso dos P O R T U G U E S E S que tiverem  
a mesma Inclinação a Lingua *Ingleza*.

Das quais a Primeira está corrigida e emendada, a Segunda exe-  
cutada por Methodo claro, familiar, e facil.

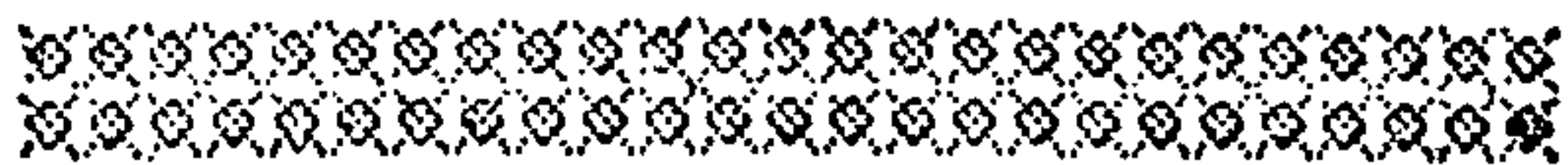
---

*Por J. CASTRO, Mestre e Traductor de ambas as Linguas.*

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for T. DAVIS, G. KEITH, T. CASLON, T. HOPE, and  
G. BURNET. 1767.



# THE CONTENTS.

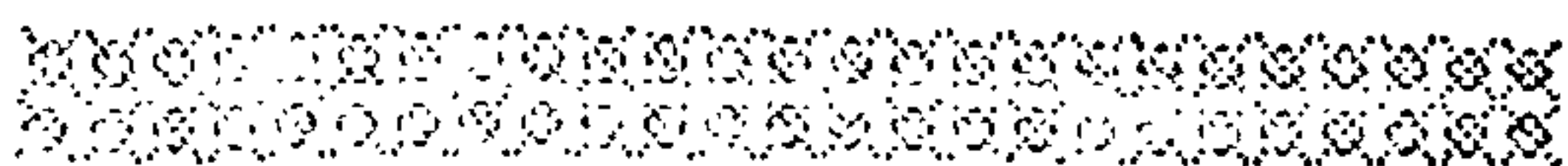
Chap. I.	<i>OF the Letters, and their Pronunciation</i>	P. 1
Chap. II.	<i>Of the Accents and Apostrophe</i>	8
Chap. III.	<i>Of the Parts of Speech</i>	10
Chap. IV.	<i>Of Genders, Numbers, and Cases</i>	14
Chap. V.	<i>Of the Articles, and their Declensions</i>	16
Chap. VI.	<i>The Declensions of the Nouns Substantives, and their Termination</i>	18
Chap. VII.	<i>Of Nouns Adjective, regular and irregular, their Genders, Terminations, Declensions, and Comparisons</i>	25
Chap. VIII.	<i>Of the Pronouns, their several Sorts, &amp;c.</i>	31
Chap. IX.	<i>Of the Verb, its Moods, Tenses, and Persons</i>	37
Chap. X.	<i>Of the Division and Conjugations of the Verbs</i>	41
Chap. XI.	<i>Of the auxiliary Verbs Avoir and Être</i>	43
Chap. XII.	<i>Of the Verbs Sou and Estou, I am</i>	57
Chap. XIII.	<i>Of the Regular Verbs, and their three Conjugations</i>	64
Chap. XIV.	<i>Of the Terminations, Formations, and Equivocations of the three Conjugations</i>	83
Chap. XV.	<i>Of the Irregular Verbs, and their Formation</i>	89
Chap. XVI.	<i>Of the Reciprocal Verbs</i>	100
	<i>Of the Impersonal Verbs</i>	104
	<i>The SYNTAX. Some general Remarks</i>	110
Chap. I.	<i>Of the Genders</i>	111
Chap. II.	<i>Of the Definite and Indefinite Articles</i>	116
Chap. III.	<i>Of the Use and Concordance of Nouns</i>	120
Chap. IV.	<i>Of the Pronouns</i>	122
Chap. V.	<i>Of the Verbs</i>	126
Chap. VI.	<i>Of the Participles</i>	136
Chap. VII.	<i>Of the Adverbs</i>	138
Chap. VIII.	<i>Of the Conjunctions</i>	141
	Chap. IX.	

# C O N T E N T S.


Chap. IX. <i>Of the Prepositions</i>	Page 143
Chap. X. <i>Of the Interjections</i>	150
<i>The Orthography of the Portuguese Language</i>	ibid.
<i>The Etymology and Observations on the Language itself</i>	153
<i>The Prosodie, or the accenting of Syllables</i>	157
<i>The VOCABULARY. Nouns Substantive</i> 163.	Nouns
<i>Adjective</i> 192. <i>The Numbers</i> 195. <i>The Colours</i> 197.	197.
<i>The Verbs</i>	ibid.
<i>The DIALOGUES</i>	202



G R A M-



T O T H E  
R E A D E R.

INCE the *Portuguese* Language is of great Use in Commerce, we justly admire how it comes that it is so little known among us. Most People think it a harsh and unpolite Language; and as the *Spanish* is commonly imagined to be its Mother, we generally apply ourselves to this, and neglect the other; but that these are vulgar Errors, and that the *Portuguese* is as valuable a Language as the *Spanish*, both in Respect to its Original and Use, I hope to prove by the following Remarks.

To trace the Rise of this Language, as well as of all others, we must look back into History, to know what Nations have inhabited this Country. The earliest Account we have is, that the *Grecians* and *Carthaginians* had several Colonies in *Spain*; but as the *Romans*, when they made themselves Masters of the Kingdoms of *Spain* and *Portugal*, soon expelled them, there is hardly any Sign of their Language either in the *Spanish* or *Portuguese* remaining.



As the *Roman* Language, by Reason of their powerful Conquests, became a Kind of an universal Language, so it obtained likewise in *Spain* and *Portugal*, where (for about five Centuries) it was spoken as familiarly as in *Latium* itself. Then the *Goths* and *Vandals* made themselves Masters of these Countries, and possessed them almost 200 Years, till the *Saracens* were called over from *Africa*, to revenge an Injury their *Gothic* King *Roderick* had done to a Lady of an antient and noble Family. Upon this, the *Saracens* rendered themselves Masters of *Spain* and *Portugal*, and remained in Possession of them till they and the *Jews* were expelled by King *Ferdinand* in 1485; who, as the most secure Means of keeping out those Nations, set up an Inquisition, for which Pope *Innocent* gave him the Surname of *Catholick King*.

All these Nations, who made themselves Masters of *Spain*, subdued likewise the Province of *Lusitania*, now called *Portugal*, because of its lying so conveniently on the Ocean, which opened a Commerce to other Parts, and secured the quiet Possession of the rest.

Thus we see the *Portuguese* Language is coeval with the *Spanish*, and that it cannot be said to proceed from the *Spanish*, since it had the same Original with that Language.

But that it has a different, or which some will call a more barbarous Sound, proceeds from this, that *Henry* Duke of *Burgundy*, one of the Family of the Dukes of *Lorraine*, (who married

married a Daughter of *Alphonso VI.* King of *Castile*, with whom he had the Province of *Lusitania* for a Portion) introduced the *Gaulic* Dialect: And this we may conclude with the more Probability, since that *French* Prince was the Occasion that the Province *Lusitania* received the Name of *Portugal*; for great Numbers of his Countrymen followed him, who intermarried with the People of *Oporto*, where his Court then resided; and from this Mixing of the *Gauls* with the people of *Oporto*, the Kingdom obtained the Name of *Portu-gal*.

And if we observe, that the Difference there is betwixt the *Spanish* and *Portuguese* Pronunciation is all conformable to the *Gaulic* or *French* Dialect, I hope this Conjecture will be allowed a good one. Those that know *French*, and compare their Pronunciation with the *Portuguese*, require no farther Demonstration; but for the Sake of others, who have not that Advantage, I here observe the following Particularities.

The *Portuguese* then differ from the *Spaniards* in the Sound of their *g*, *j*, *m*, *x*, *lh*, *ao*, *oés*, *āā*. The *Spaniards* sound the *g*, *j*, and *x* as a Cutchal, with a strong Aspiration in the Throat; but the *Portuguese* sound the *g* and *j* exactly like the *French*, and the *x* they use instead of the *French ch*, except in some Words derived from the *Latin*, as is shewn in the Grammar, where it keeps the Sound it has in the *English* Tongue. The *m* sounds like *eng* in *English*: This is a true *French* Sound; for

for when the *Portuguese* sound *bon* good, and the *French* their *bon* good, there is no Difference at all to be perceived. Likewise the *Portuguese* words *sim*, *ton*, a Sound, a Tone, the *French* write *son*, *ton*, but pronounce exactly alike. The *lle* sounds like the *French ll* when an *i* stands before it, and another Vowel follows; thus the *French* Word *fille*, a Daughter or Girl, would be wrote by the *Portuguese* *fille*. The *ão* is pronounced like *aung* in *English*, which is also of *French* Extraction; and the *French* Words *jean*, *pain*, a Deer a Peacock, if wrote in *Portuguese* Characters, must be *jeão* or *jam*, or *pão* or *pam*. Besides, it is obvious that the *French* often sound the *em* like *aung*. The *ons* is pronounced like *oings*; this also is easily perceived to be a *French* Sound, and therefore, for Brevity's Sake, we'll say no more on this Head, but take it for granted, that the Sounds wherein the *Portuguese* differ from the *Spanish* are of *French* Extraction.

And as the *French* Language has so generally obtained all over *Europe*, by Reason of its Softness of Sound and Expression, it is surprizing that what is admired in the *French* Tongue should be condemned and despised in the *Portuguese*. What I have said here is to vindicate the *Portuguese* Tongue from the Prejudices which it bears under in the Opinion of Men. And, to conclude this Argument, we may very justly say, that the *Portuguese* Tongue has a Mixture of the *Spanish* Gravity and *French* Softness, and is as useful in Commerce as the *Spanish*,

*Spanish*, and therefore equal (if not superior) to its Rival.

Was I to enurnerate the many *Portuguese* Settlements on the *African* Coast and both the *Indies*, I could easily verify what I advance; but that is too obvious to need being taken Notice of here; I will only observe, that the *Portuguese*, being near a-kin to the *Lingua-Franca*, is current upon all the Coasts of the *East-Indies* and *Africa*; and as a *Portuguese* is easily understood by a *Spaniard*, one may correspond to all their Dominions in *Europe* and *America* in that Language; to which I may add, that the *Portuguese* is easier for an *Englishman's* Tongue than the *Spanish*; and that that Nation are better and more constant Friends to the *English* than the *Spaniards*.

By Reason of the aforesaid Prejudices, Men have had in Favour of the *Spanish* Tongue, the *Portuguese* has lain disregarded and uncultivated among us; insomuch, that hardly any *Portuguese* Books are imported, and within these thirty Years past but one Grammar has been printed; which Work was done in so confused a Method, that many did not learn the Language for Want of a proper Guide; and those who resolved to make a Progress in it were confused by the many Contradictions, and led into gross Mistakes by the erroneous Account the Author gives of the Declensions and Conjugations.

All these Disadvantages, I hope, have been removed in this present Undertaking. I have  
con-



consulted the Grammars of all the *European* Languages, to bring this into the best Method possible; and since I am acquainted with all those Languages, I have endeavoured to explain, in an easy Manner, the Difficulties of the *Portuguese* Tongue, by comparing them with one or other of the modern Languages.

First, the Letters and their Pronunciation, and the reading of them, is shewn in an easy Method, from *English* Examples: That done, the Accents are treated on; and then, to acquaint the Learner with what he is going to do when he handles Nouns, Verbs, &c. all the Parts of Speech are explained to him in so familiar a Manner, that the weakest Capacity may learn thereby, that Nouns, Verbs, Participles, Adverbs, &c. are not such Mysteries as in some Grammars they seem to be. The Signification of Cases, and Numbers, Singular and Plural, both in Nouns and Verbs, is afterwards explained; so that this Grammar, may serve as well as any to one who has a Desire of knowing the Rudiments of Grammar, be it for what Language soever, the Foundations being laid down here in a clear, intelligible, concise, and methodical Order.

When the Reader takes a View of the Contents of the Chapters, the Work will speak for itself.

The Articles, which most Beginners are strangely perplexed at, are in no Grammar, that I have seen yet, explained in so plain and ample a Manner as in this. The Declensions of  
Nouns

Nouns and Pronouns, I flatter myself, will be found clear and satisfactory. In the conjugating of Verbs I have avoided the unnecessary Multiplication of Moods, and only set down the Indicative, Imperative, Optative or Subjunctive, and Infinitive. Some are fond of others they call *Potential*, *Permissive*, and *Conjunctive*, which many and hard Words deter and discourage the Learner, thinking he has so many different Moods and Terminations yet to learn, when, in Effect, those Moods are nothing else but the Indicative or Subjunctive, conjugated with some Conjunction prefixed, which governs either the one or the other of these Moods: and if the Multiplication of strange and hard Things adds to the Beauty of a Grammar, I have shewn the Reader how at Leisure he may compose as many different Moods as there are different Kinds of Conjunctions. The *Permissive* Mood, taken Notice of, p. 82, seems somewhat confused on Account of the Word *amasse*, which is said to be of the perfect Signification; but as some Authors make Use of it in that Sense, I hope the Critic will lay the Fault on the Idiom of the Language, and not on me. The Use of these Moods must be learned by Practice; and when the Learner once knows how to apply the Conjunctions, which we have shewn in the Syntax, he will in Course speak in the Permissive, Potential, &c. Moods, without knowing there are any such perplexing Things belonging to Grammar.



The Syntax is short, because I would not overload the Learner with Numbers of Rules, as some Grammarians do; and as the Syntax is to shew the Use of the Parts of Speech in combining them together, I have done that in as simple and concise a Manner as possible. The Treatises on the *Orthography*, *Etymology*, or the Nature of the Language itself, and the *Prose* and accenting of Syllables, I hope will also be found satisfactory.

The Vocabulary is composed of Nouns Substantive and Adjective, and Verbs, the most useful and common in their Kind, and so full, that, in some Measure, it may supply the Place of a Dictionary. The Dialogues treat of the most common Occurrences of Life; and a Person who knows them by Heart, may help himself in all Manner of Conversation.

And lastly, to make this Grammar likewise useful to a *Portuguese* who wants to learn *English*, I have subjoined a Compendium of the *English* Grammar; by which Assistance, I flatter myself, the Learner will be led so far, as to be able to make Use of the first Part of this Grammar to perfect himself in the *English* Tongue. If any Faults should be observed in this Work, I hope the Critic will be the gentler with me, considering I had no Pattern of this Kind to copy from; and but a very confused and indirect Grammar to consult, when any Difficulty occurred.

---

# GRAMMATICA

## Anglo-Lusitanica.

---

### C H A P. I.

#### *Of the Letters, and their Pronunciation.*

**T**HE Portuguese endeavour to pronounce as they write, and to sound all their Letters; several of them have Sounds peculiar only to that Nation, which we have attempted here to represent by Examples from the *English* Tongue, to the End that the Reader, with very little Assistance, may be able to attain the true Pronunciation of that Language.

They have Twenty-four Letters, as  
*A B C D E F G H I J L M N O P Q R S T U V X Y Z.*

Six of them are Vowels, viz. *a, e, i, y, o, u.*

*A* is pronounced like the *English* *au* or *a* in *all, wall, fall*; as *amór* Love, read *aumór*; *amo* a Master, r. *aumo*.

It is sometimes long, sometimes short, according as the Accent is placed, as shall be shewn hereafter.

*E* sounds like the *English* *e* in *every*; or *a* in *same*; *edificár*, to build, r. *adificaur*; *escola*, a  
B School,

## 2 Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.

School, r. *Ajcolau*. It is both Masculine and Feminine, the Masculine is marked with an Accent, the Feminine not; as *Pedro*, Peter, r. *Pa-dro*; but *bisqué*, I looked for, r. *booská*.

*I* sounds like *e* or *i* in *intimate*; as *indiciar*, to disclose; *intimar*, to intimate.

*U* stands also for *e*, but with this Difference, that it is pronounced longer, or like *ee*, *Rey*, the King, r. *Raĩ*; as *monumento*, a Monument, r. *monumento*; and before *a* and *o* it is perceived most; as *joya*, a Jewel, r. *joe-iau*; *joyo*, Darnel, or Tare, r. *joe-io*.

*O* sounds like *o* in *over*, *open*, &c.

*U* is pronounced like *oo* in *shoot*, or *ou* in *you*; as *abóluto*, absolute, r. *aubsolooto*.

### The C O N S O N A N T S are,

*B*, which has the same Power or Sound as the *English*.

*C* before *e* and *i* sounds like *s*, and before *a*, *o*, and *u*, like a *k*; but when it is marked with a little *s*, or a Stroke underneath, which they call a *Plica*, it also assumes the Sound of an *s*, or rather a *ss* before *a*, *o*, and *u*; as *capato*, a Shoe, r. *saupauto*, *aglate*, a Whip, r. *assoete*; *çumo*, Juice, r. *sumo*.

*D* and *F* always retain the same Sound they have in other Languages.

*G* before *a*, *o*, and *u*, sounds like the *English*, but before *e* and *i* like a *French* *g*, much softer than the *English*, or like the *g* in *Edge*, if that Word could be imagined to be pronounced without the *d* in it, which is always heard before the *English* *g*, and causes that Difference there is in the Sound between the *English* and *French*, or *Portuguese* *g*; but as we have no Example truly to represent its Sound, we must leave it to be learnt from a Voice. *Gue* and *gui* are pronounced hard, and the last Vowel only heard, as *guerra*,  
War,

War, r. *garrau*; *guisa*, a Manner, r. like *gi* in *give*, *gisau*.

When *g* stands before *ua*, the two Vowels must be sounded distinctly; as *guarda*, a Guard, r. *gaurdan*.

*H* before a Vowel has hardly the Force of any Sound; as in *homem*, *herdéyro*, *bonrado*, r. *ómeng*, *erda-eero*, *onraudo*.

But this Letter is of Use in a peculiar Manner among the *Portuguese*, when placed after the Letters *c*, *l*, *n*; as *ch*, *lh*, *nh*.

*Cha*, *che*, *chi*, *cho*, *chu*, pronounce as you do the *ch* in Chamber, Cherry, Child, Choice, Church: Thus *chave*, a Key, r. *chau-ve*; *chegár*, to arrive, r. *chegaur*; *chinela*, a Slipper, r. *cheenálau*; *chorár*, to cry, r. *choraur*; *chupar*, to suck, r. *choopaur*.

Some pronounce the *ch* as the *English* do *sh*, but as that Custom has not yet universally prevailed, we cannot lay it down for a Rule.

*Lha*, *lhe*, *lbi*, *lho*, *lhu*, r. *liau*, *liée*, *le-á*, *li-o*, *li-oo*; as *abelha*, a Bee, r. *aubal-eau*; *Mulher*, a Woman, r. *Mool-eár*; *colhido*, gathered, r. *col-e-eedo*; *filho*, a Son, r. *feel-e-o*; *olbudo*, full of Eyes, r. *ol-e-oodo*.

*Nha*, *nbe*, *nbi*, *nbo*, *nbu*, r. *ne-au*, *ne-a*, *ne-ee*, *ne-ó*, *ne-oo*; as *unha*, a Nail, r. *oon-e-au*; *dinhéyro*, Money, r. *deen-e-áero*; *grunbir*, to grunt, r. *groon-e-eer*; *linho*, Flax, r. *leen-e-o*; *nenhum*, Nobody, r. *nan-e-oom*.

N. B. Observe the *b* in *cha*, *che*, *chi*, *cho*, *chu*, and *nha*, *nbe*, *nbi*, *nbo*, *nbu*, stands for an *i*, or *English e*, which, however, ought to be pronounced very short.

*ŷ* or the *j* consonant, sounds like their *g*, with this Difference, that it is soft before all Vowels, without Exception.

*L*, whether single or double, always sounds like



#### 4 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.*

like the *English* *l*; *lado*, a Side, r. *laudo*; *alli*, there, r. *allee*.

*M* sounds like the *English* *m*; as *macho*, a Male, r. *maucko*; but *am*, *em*, *im*, *om*, *um*, at the End of Words, read *aung*, *eng*, *ing*, *ong*, *oong*; as *carcam*, a Coal, r. *caurcaung*; *bem*, well, r. *beng*; *assim*, so, r. *aussing*; *bom*, good, r. *bong*; *algun*, somebody, r. *algoong*.

*Am*, *im*, *om*, *um*, in the Beginning or Middle of Words, retain their natural Sound: But *em*, either in the Beginning or Middle of a Word, sounds like *eng*; as *emgano*, a Cheat, r. *eng-gauno*; *dizemke*, they tell him, r. *deesenglié*; except in the Words that come from the *Latin*, where the *m* keeps its natural Sound; so *emperador*, an Emperor, r. *emperadór*; *exemplo*, an Example, r. *ex-emp'lo*.

*N* sounds like the *English*.

*P* sounds like the *English*.

*Q* before *ua*, r. *kuaw*; thus *qual*, which, r. *kual*; but *que* and *qui*, r. *ka* and *ke*; *quebrar*, to break, r. *kabraur*; *quinta*, a Country Seat, r. *keerlau*.

*R*, or *rr*, is pronounced as in other Languages.

*S*, or *ss*, the same.

*T*, the same, except that before *i* it never assumes the Sound of a *c*, as in *English*; thus, *fatar*, to cut, r. *faut-e-aur*; *fatia de pam*, a Slice of Bread, r. *fautçeau de paung*.

*V* sounds like the *English*.

*X*, pronounce like *sh*; *queyxáda*, a Cheekbone, r. *kaïsháuda*; *queyxarje*, to complain, r. *kaïshaurse*; but in some Words derived from the *Latin*, beginning with *a* and *e*, it retains its natural Force, as in *axungia*, *exemplo*, &c.

*Z* is pronounced like *s*; thus *produzir*, to produce, r. *prodosfeer*; *prezar*, to value, r. *presaur*; *razão*, Reason, r. *raçauung*.

The

## The DIPHTHONGS.

The *Portuguese* have many Diphthongs, which they generally pronounce like distinct Letters, with this Difference, that the first Letter must be sounded longer than the second; as, *máis*, more, r. *mau-is*; *náo*, a Ship, r. *nau-o*; *auto*, an Act, r. *au-uto*; *déito*, I fling away, r. *dá-ito*; *vestío*, I cloath, r. *vestí-o*; *pois*, then, r. *po-i*; *peffóá*, a Person, r. *peffó-au*; *rúa*, a Highway, r. *roo-au*.

The Diphthongs or Combinations of Vowels are of five Sorts.

The first is the *ae*, as *cae*, *caem*, he falls, they fall; also in *ay*, as *pay*, Father; in *ao*, as in *páo*, Wood; *máo*, bad; and in *au*, as in *causa*, a Cause; *pausa*, a Pause.

The second is in *ea*, *ey*, *ei*, *eo*, and *eu*, as *céa*, a Supper; *rey*, *ley*, a King, the Law; *véo*, I see; *meu*, *teu*, *seu*, mine, thine, his.

The third in *ia* and *io*; *Clemencia*, Clemency; *fugio*, he fled.

The fourth in *oa*, *oe*, *oy*, and *ou*, as *peffóá*, a Person; *póem*, they put; *boy*, an Ox; *dóu*, I give.

The fifth in *ua*, *ue*, *ui*, and *uo*, as *guarda*, a Guard; *guerra*, War; *guinchar*, to cry aloud; *quotidiano*, daily.

Observe, The *i* before the *o* in Words derived from the *Latin* is short; as, *necessario*, necessary, r. *necessâur-e-o*; *contrario*, contrary, r. *contraur-e-o*.

Also when two Consonants follow, the first Vowel of the Diphthong is short; as *poente*, the West, r. *po-énte*; *doente*, sick, r. *do-ente*; *migalha*, a Crum, r. *mig-aulíau*.

*i* before *u* is short when a Syllable follows; as, *viuva*, a Widow, r. *ve-óovau*; *miuda*, small, r. *me-óodau*.



## 6 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitânica.*

Likewise when an *r* or *z* follows after a Diphthong, the first Vowel is short; as *doér*, to feel, Pain, *r. do-ár*; *roer*, to gnaw, *r. ro-ár*; *juíz*, a Judge, *r. jou-ees*.

And the *i* in *uim* and *oim* is long; as, *ruina*, Ruin, *r. roo-eenau*; *roim*, evil, *r. ro-íng*.

*óens* is pronounced *o-ins* and *o-ings*; as *galióens*, Galeons, *r. gaulio-ins*; *rezóens*, Reasons, *r. rezo-ings*; others write *óes* instead of *oens*; as *galióes*, *rezóes*, *dilaçóes*, *cargações*, &c.

*Ou* is sounded by some like *oi*; thus, *ouro*, Gold, is pronounced by some like *óiro*; *óutro*, another, they read *óitro*; but the politer Way is to pronounce it like the *ow* in a *Bow*; thus, *outro*, *r. owtro*; *ouro*, *r. owro*, &c.

*ao* with a Stroke over them, called *Til*, sounds like *am*, and they are indifferently wrote one for the other; though some pretend, that putting *am* instead of *āo*, is the most elegant Way of Writing, thus, *naçam*, or *naçāo*, a Nation, *r. naussaung*; *provisāo*, or *provisam*, Provision, *r. provisauung*.

*āā* pronounce *aung*; thus, *irmāā*, a Sister, *r. eer-maung*; *maçāā*, an Apple, *r. maussaung*.

*āēs*, *r. au-engs*; thus, *escrivāēs*, Writers or Clerks, *r. escree-vaengs*.

They have also some Triphthongs, which always have the Accent placed on the middlemost Vowel; as *poéira*, Dust, *r. poé-ira*.

Many other Exceptions might be added; but as too many Rules commonly perplex the Reader, we leave the rest to be attained by Practice.

To put these Rules about Pronunciation in Practice, we'll give the Reader here a few Lines of *Portuguese*, expressed after the *English* Way of Spelling, to shew how easy it is for any one to learn, almost by himself, to read that Language by the Help of those Rules.

PORTUGUESE.

Tive a honra de suas de quinze e vinte do mes passado pello correo, e de 22 ditto pello navio A. Capitam j pelas quais recebi suas ordens de carregar por seu risco e Conta a bordo do primeiro bom navio, fazendo a viagem para Amburgo 25 caixas de Açucares com 6. Caixas de brancos, e 50 rolos de Tabaco consignados aos seus amigos e Correspondentes os senhores A. B. e Companhia o que tudo a seu tempo fera puntualmente comprado. Pello Correo proximo passado remety a V.M. 2 Letras de cambio huã por 11. Esterl. 250 e outra por 320 ditto, das quaes despois de chagadas não duvido de devido comprimento; pella primeira occasiam avizarey a V. M. o necessario mais largamente.

ENGLISH.

Teeve au honra de suaus de kinze e veente do mes paussado pello Corráo, a de 22 ditto pello Nau-veeo A. Capitaung j pellaus qu-aus recebee soo-aus ordengs da cauregaur por sa oo risco a Conta au bordo do primá-iro bong nau-veeo, fauzendo au vee-augeng paura Aum-boorgo 25 Cau-ishaus de Ausoocaures cong 6 Cau-ishaus de brauncos, a 50 rolos de Taubauco consignaudo aos sa oos aumeegos e Correspondentes os Saniores A. B. a Companee-au, o ke toodo au sa-oo tempo farau poontooaulmente compreedo. Pello Corrao proximo paussado remetee au Vossau Merced. 2 Létraus de caumbio, hooma por 11. Esterl. 250 a owtrau por 320 ditto, daus qu-aus despo-es de chegáudaus nau-ong dooveedo de deveedo comprimento; pellau prima-ira ocáu-siauong aveez-aura-ee a V. M. o necessaurio mau-is largaumente.

## C H A P. II.

*Of the Accents and Apostrophe.*

**A**CCENTS are little Notes, invented to mark the Tone of the Voice in the Pronunciation.

These Inflections of the Voice are of three Sorts; the raising it, the falling it, and that which partakes of both raising and falling the Voice in the same Syllable.

Therefore Men have invented three Sorts of Accents, two of them simple, *viz.* the Grave and Acute; and the third composed of both, to wit, the Circumflex.

The Acute raises the Syllable a little, and is marked by a little Line that rises from the Left to the Right; thus, (´).

Thus Grave falls the Syllable, and is marked by a little Line descending from the Left to the Right; thus, (`).

The Circumflex is composed of both, and is marked thus, (^).

The *Portuguese* don't use many Accents; but when they do, it is to distinguish the different Signification of some Words depending upon the placing of the Accent; for which use they commonly apply the Acute, as *ésta*, the Accent being placed upon the first Letter, is the Pronoun *this*; and *está* the Accent on the last, is the Verb *estou* I am, in the third Person Singular, of the Indicative Mood, Present Tense; *partíram*, the Accent over the *i*, is the third Person Plural, of the Imperfect Subjunctive, of the Verb *partir*, to part, and *partirám* the third Person Plural of the future Indicative.

The *Grave* has but little Share in their Writing, and is only placed over some few Monosyllables, as the Feminine Article in the Dative Case, and the Adverb *jà*, already: But many mark even these with the *Acute Accent*.

The Circumflex is also but seldom made use of, it being looked upon as no Fault to put the *Acute* instead of it, as *nô* a Knot, is likewise wrote by some *nó*. Here an Accent is absolutely required to distinguish it from the Particle *no*, in the, e. g. *Day hum nô nó Cordel*, make a Knot in the Rope.

To know which Syllables are long and to be marked with Accents, belongs to another Part of Grammar, and shall be shewn under the Head of the *Prosodia*.

✎ We have made use of more Accents in this Grammar than is customary, which we beg the Criticks not to find fault with, it being done to point out the Letters the Strefs should be put upon, for the Sake of Beginners.

The *Apostrophe* likewise takes Place in this as in other Languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easy Pronunciation of Words, by cutting off a Vowel; as *de ouro, de arroz, de ovos*, the Vowel *e* of the Particle *de* is supplied by a Synalepha or Vocal Note, or what we commonly call an *Apostrophe*, and is writ as follows, *d'ouro, d'arroz, d'ovos*; but they generally put the Letters close together, and place an *Acute* on the first Vowel instead of the *Apostrophe*; as *dóuro, dárroz, dóvos, néste, nélle, délle, &c.*



## C H A P. III.

*Of the Parts of Speech.*

**T**H E *Portuguese*, as well as the *Latins*, have Eight Parts of Speech, which we think proper to explain before the Declensions and Conjugations, that the Learner may know what is meant by the Word Noun Substantive or Adjective, Pronoun, a Verb, &c. before he undertakes to decline, or conjugate them.

A Speech or Discourse is composed of Sentences, a Sentence of Words, a Word of Syllables, and a Syllable of Letters. *N. B.* Some Words have but one Syllable, which are called Monosyllables, as *bem*, well; *sem*, without; *por*, for.

By the Parts of Speech we mean here Words, which of what Signification soever they may be, are reduced under the eight following Heads, *viz.* *Noun*, *Pronoun*, *Verb*, *Participle*, *Preposition*, *Adverb*, *Conjunction*, and *Interjection*. Some call the *Article* the ninth Part of Speech, which however, upon due Consideration, will be found to belong to the Class of the Pronouns.

A Noun expresses a Thing that may be felt, heard or understood; it is of two Kinds, as the Substantive and Adjective.

A *Noun Substantive* (from the *Latin*, *nomen* a Name, *substantivum* standing by itself, from *subsisto*, I subsist) may be understood by itself, without the Addition of any other Word; and is divided into two different Classes: As Appellative and Common.

The

The Noun Substantive Appellative is the Christian or Surname of any Man or Woman, Town or Country; as *Joam*, John; *Carlos*, Charles; *Anna*, Anne; *Catherina*, Catherine; *Londres*, *França*, London, France, &c.

The Noun Substantive Common, is a Word that is common to all Things of the same Sort; as *homem*, a Man; *mulher*, a Woman; *caza*, a House; *pam*, Bread; *cam*, a Dog; *gallo*, a Cock; *pedra*, a Stone; *navio*, a Ship; *livro*, a Book; *ouro*, Gold; *fogo*, Fire; *agua*, Water, &c.

A Noun Adjective (from *adjicio*, I add) is a Word that has no determinate Signification of its own, but is commonly joined to a Noun Substantive to signify its Quality: Therefore whenever you can join the Word Thing with it, it is a certain Sign of its being a Noun Adjective. Thus you may say a great, handsome, white, black, good, long, full, hard, &c. Thing; but a Man, Woman, Child, Table, Pen, Book, House, is a Noun Substantive; because you cannot say a Man, Woman, Child, Table, Pen, Book, House, Thing.

And *grande*, great; *bello*, handsome; *branco*, white; *negro*, black; *bom*, good; *longo*, long; *cheyo*, full; *duro*, hard, &c. cannot be understood till some Noun Substantive is joined with them, to explain who or what is great, handsome, white, black, good, long, full, hard, &c. as a great House, a handsome Woman, a white Hand, black Ink, a good Law, a long Street, a full Measure, a hard Metal or Stone, &c. and you may say a great, handsome, white, black, &c. Thing.

A Pronoun (i. e. *pronomen*, a Fore-name, or something before the Name) is a Word which stands instead of some other Noun to denote a Person or Thing; as, *eu*, *tu*, *elle*, I, thou, he; *que*,



*que*, what; *quem*, who; *este*, this; *aquelle*, that; as, *que diz elle ou ella*, what doth he or she say? Here the Pronouns *elle* and *ella* denote the Person of a Man or Woman that spoke before; and *que*, what, the Thing spoke of; *quem he este*, who is that? here *quem* and *este* indicate the Person of some Man.

A *Verb* (i. e. *Verbum* a Word) is a Word that signifies either some Action or Passion; as, *quero*, I will; *siguo*, I follow; *encho*, I fill; *tolero*, I suffer; *sou* or *estou*, I am; *ey* or *tenho*, I have.

A *Participle* (from *participo*, I partake) is made of a Verb, and partakes of it in such a Manner, that it may also be used for a Noun, and always has Regard to some Person. There are Participles of three different Kinds, as of the Preterperfect Tense, in *Latin amatus*, beloved; of the Present Tense, loving, *amans*; and the Future, as *amaturus*, he that shall or will love.

☞ We make use here of Examples from the *Latin*, because they, expressing the Thing in one Word may best serve to illustrate the Nature of this Part of Speech; which the modern Languages have retained, though they cannot express themselves in so simple and pure a Manner, but are fain to make use of some auxiliar Verbs for that Purpose; as may be seen in its Place in the Conjugation of the Verbs, whither we refer the Reader.

The *Adverb* (from *ad* to, *verbum* a Word) is joined to the Verb to signify some Qualification: Thus to express the Manner how I read, write, &c. cannot be done without the Help of an Adverb, e. g. *levo bem*, *escrevo mal*, I read well, I write ill. *Vid. the Chap. of Adverbs.*

The *Conjunction* (from *conjungo*, I join together) is a Particle which joins Verbs and Sentences together; as, *e*, and; *se*, if; *ou*, or; *que*, that; *mas*, but; *meo páy e máy*, my Father and Mother; *se tudizes que ésta cósua he verdadeira ou falsa*, if you say, *that* this Thing is true or false, &c.

A *Preposition* (from *præpono*, I put before) is an indeclinable Particle, and is often joined with Nouns, Pronouns, and Verbs, to modify their Signification: Such are the Words *em*, in; *fora* without; *sem*, without; *a*, to; *de*, from, &c. (*Vid. the Chap. of Prepos.*) as *estar em casa*, to be in the House, or at Home; *escrever á hum amigo*, to write to a Friend; *não pode viver sem elle*, he cannot live without him; *em amár*, in loving; *para ler*, for to read.

An *Interjection* (from *interjicio*, to cast between) is a Particle not declinable, used to express some Emotion of the Mind, as Surprise, Admiration; as *háy de ti*, woe be to thee! *O que me pesa*, O how sorry am I! *O que Deós he grande*, O how great God is! *O mofoíno de mim*, O miserable that I am!

☞ If you should find these Rules too few and short, to conceive a perfect Idea of all the Parts of Speech and their Use, you may turn over the Syntax, where you will find more ample Instruction.

## C H A P. IV.

*Of the Genders, Numbers, and Cases.*

THE *Portuguese* Nouns have but two Genders, viz. the Masculine, which is signified by the Article *o*, and the Feminine, by the Article *a*, answering to the Latin *hic* and *hæc*. Some of their Pronouns have also the Neuter Gender, which may be seen under the Head of *the Pronouns Demonstrative*; some Nouns both Substantive and Adjective are of the Masculine and Feminine Gender at once.

The Declension, which is a Changing of a Noun into several Cases, has two Numbers, viz. the *Singular*, which speaks but of one, and the *Plural*, comprehending many; as in Singular *livro* a Book, in Plural *livros* Books.

The Plural is commonly made by adding an *s* to the Singular: As *caza*, a House; *muro*, a Wall; *cidade*, a City; in Plural *cazas*, Houses; *múros*, Walls; *cidádes*, Cities.

They have six Cases, or Changes, viz. the *Nominative*, *Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accusative*, *Vocative*, and *Ablative*, to denote so many different Senses the Word should be taken in.

The *Nominative* (from the Latin *nominare*, to name) only names the Person or Thing, as *homem*, a Man; *pédra*, a Stone.

The *Genitive* (from *generare*, to beget) betokens that one Person or Thing proceeds from, depends from, or is another's Property; as *filho de Joam*, the Son of John; here *Joam* stands in the Genitive Case, being the Person the Son belongs to, proceeded or depended from: *Caza de Pedro*, the House

House of *Peter*, or *Peter's* (his) House, *Peter* stands in the Genitive, he being the Person the House belongs to.

The *Dative* (from the Latin *dare* to give) denotes the Person to whom a Person or Thing is given ; as *dou a Pedro*, I give to *Peter*.

The *Accusative* (from the Latin *accusare*, to accuse) signifies the Person or Thing we do or intend to act upon ; as *escrevo a carta*, I write the Letter ; *lerey o livro*, I will read the Book ; *açoutarey a Pedro*, I will whip *Peter* ; here *carta*, *livro*, and *Pedro*, stand in the Accusative, being the Subject of some Action.

The *Vocative* (from the Latin *vocare*, to call upon) signifies that a Person or Thing is called upon ; as *O filho que fazes !* O Son, what dost thou ! *O desgraçada casa !* O unhappy House ! *filho* and *casa* being here called upon, stand in the Vocative Case.

The *Ablative* (from the Preterperfect Participle *ablatus*, the Verb *aufero*, I take from) shews that Person or Thing, a Person or Thing is taken away from ; as *venho da cidade*, I come from the City ; *Pedro o salvó do fogo*, *Peter* saved him from the Fire ; here *cidade* and *fogo* stand in the Ablative, because something comes from, or is taken from the City and the Fire.

For a further Information about the Use of the Cases, and how they are often governed by Prepositions, I refer the Reader to the *Syntax*, the present being only to instruct him so far, that he may know what he doth when he declines a Noun through the Numbers and several Cases.



## C H A P. V.

*Of the Articles, and their Declensions.*

**T**HE Articles properly belong to the Pronouns, as we said above; but as no Noun can be declined without them, I thought it necessary to shew how they are declined, before we enter upon Nouns Substantive and Adjective.

The Articles are either *definite* or *indefinite*.

The Masculine Article	The Feminine Article
definite.	definite.

*Singular Number.*

N. o, *the*.  
 G. dó, *of the*.  
 D. ao, pera o, pélllo, *to the*.  
 Ac. o, ao, *the*.  
 V. o, ô.  
 A. dó, *from the*.

*Singular Number.*

N. a, *the*.  
 G. dá, *of the*.  
 D. à, pera a pélla, *to the*.  
 Ac. á, *the*.  
 V. o, ô.  
 A. dá, *from the*.

*Plural Number.*

N. os, *the*.  
 G. dos, *of the*.  
 D. aos, pera os, pellos, *to the*.  
 Ac. os, aos, *the*.  
 V. o, é.  
 A. dós, *from the*.

*Plural Number.*

N. as, *the*.  
 G. dás, *of the*.  
 D. às, pera as, péllas, *to the*.  
 Ac. ás, *the*.  
 V. o, ô.  
 A. dás, *from the*.

When the *Portuguese* would express the *English* Article *it*, they make use of the Article *o*, and say *eu não o vi*, I have not seen it; and therefore, we justly ascribe also a neuter Gender to this Article; which

which has only a Singular Number, and is declined in the Manner following :

*Sing.*

*N.* o, *it.*

*Ac.* o, *it.*

*G.* dó, *of it.*

*V.* caret.

*D.* ao, *to it.*

*A.* dó, *from it.*

The Article *a* in *English*, is expressed by the *Portuguese hum, huma*, and declined as follows :

*Sing.*

*Plur.*

*N.* hum, ma, *a.*

*N.* huns, mas, *some.*

*G.* de hum, ma, *of a.*

*G.* de huns, mas, *of some.*

*D.* a hum, ma, *to a.*

*D.* a huns, mas, *to some.*

*Ac.* a hum, ma, *a.*

*Ac.* a huns, mas, *some.*

*V.* caret.

*V.* caret.

*A.* de hum, ma, *from a.*

*A.* de huns, mas, *from some.*

Observe, the *English* Article *a* has no Plural, but borrows another Word to express the Plural Signification.

### Of the Article indefinite.

This Article has no Distinction of Genders, and only four Cases (in the *Spanish* and *Portuguese*, and but three in *French* and *Italian*) which serve both in the Singular and Plural Number, *viz.*

*Gen.* de, *of.*

*Dat.* á & para, *to.*

*Acc.* á & para.

*Abl.* de or por, *from.*

By the following Example you may see, that the Words which are declined with the *Article indefinite*, have no Article in the Nominative, and Vocative Case.

C

*N.* Roma,



*N.* Roma, *Rome.*

*G.* de Roma, *of Rome.*

*D.* á & pera Roma, *to Rome.*

*Ac.* á Roma, *Rome.*

*V.* Roma, *Rome.*

*A.* de Roma, *from Rome.*

The Article Indefinitive serves to decline the Names of Angels, Men, Towns, the Names of the Months, and the Pronouns.

This Article is also put with any other Noun, when two Nouns meet together, the last being in the Genitive Case, and having no determinate Signification assigned to it; as *kuma duzia de meyas*, a Dozen of Stockings; *hum número de cazas*, a Number of Houses; *humel arrat de carne*, a Pound of Flesh. Here it is not determined what Stockings, Houses, or Flesh you speak of; and when you employ the indefinite Article *of* in *English*, the *Portuguese* do so likewise.

When the Article indefinite *de* precedes a Word which begins with a Vowel, the *e* is often cast away, and the next following Letter marked with an Acute Accent; as *algum délles*, some one of them; and some leave a little Space betwixt the *d* and the next following Letter, with an Apostrophe on the Top; as *algum d' elles*; but the first Way is most practised at present, as we have said above.

☞ Of the Use, Application, and Distinction of these two Articles, see the *Syntax*.

## C H A P. VI.

*Of the Declensions of the Nouns Substantives, and their Terminations.*

THE *Portuguese* have but one Sort of Declension; and their Cases, which admit of  
no

no Variety of Termination, as was usual with the Romans, are only distinguished by prefixing the Articles, and the Plural Number is commonly made by adding an *s* to the Singular.

An Example of the Masculine Gender.

*The Singular Number.*

- N. o Têmplo, *a or the Church.*  
 G. do Têmplo, *of the Church.*  
 D. ao & perao, pello Têmplo, *to the Church.*  
 Ac. o, ao Têmplo, *the Church.*  
 V. ô Têmplo, *ô Church!*  
 A. do Têmplo, *from the Church.*

*The Plural Number.*

- N. os Têmplos, *the Churches.*  
 G. dos Têmplos, *of the Churches.*  
 D. aos & peraos, pellos Têmplos, *to the Churches.*  
 Ac. os, aos Têmplos, *the Churches.*  
 V. ô Têmplos, *ô Churches!*  
 A. dos Têmplos, *from the Churches.*

An Example of the Feminine Gender.

*The Singular Number.*

- N. a Caza, *a or the House.*  
 G. da Caza, *of the House.*  
 D. a & pera a, pella Caza, *to the House.*  
 Ac. á Caza, *the House.*  
 V. ô Caza, *ô House!*  
 A. da Caza, *from the House.*

*The Plural Number.*

- N. as Cazas, *the Houses.*  
 G. das Cazas, *of the Houses.*  
 D. às & pera as, péllas Cazas, *to the Houses.*  
 Ac. às Cazas, *the Houses.*  
 V. ô Cazas, *ô Houses!*  
 A. das Cazas, *from the Houses.*

Declensions of the Nouns in *m*.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
N. a Adem, <i>a or the Duck.</i>	N. as Adens, <i>the Ducks.</i>
G. dá Adem, <i>of the Duck.</i>	G. das Adens, <i>of the Ducks.</i>
D. à & para a, pella Adem, <i>to the Duck.</i>	D. ás & para as, péllas Adens, <i>to the Ducks.</i>
Ac. à Adem, <i>the Duck.</i>	Ac. ás Adens, <i>the Ducks.</i>
V. ô Adem, <i>ô Duck!</i>	V. ô Adens, <i>ô Ducks.</i>
A. dá Adem, <i>from the Duck.</i>	A. das Adens, <i>from the Ducks.</i>

Declension of the Nouns terminating in *az*.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
N. o Rapáz, <i>a or the Boy.</i>	N. os Rapázes, <i>the Boys.</i>
G. dó Rapáz, <i>of the Boy.</i>	G. dós Rapázes, <i>of the Boys.</i>
D. ao & para o, pello Rapáz, <i>to the Boy.</i>	D. aos & para os, pellos Rapázes, <i>to the Boys.</i>
Ac. o, ao, Rapáz, <i>the Boy.</i>	Ac. os, aos Rapázes, <i>the Boys.</i>
V. ô Rapáz, <i>ô Boy!</i>	V. ô Rapázes, <i>ô Boys!</i>
A. dó Rapáz, <i>from the Boy.</i>	A. dós Rapázes, <i>from the Boys.</i>

They have Nouns Substantive of many other Terminations, which it will be necessary to set down here, to shew how they change their Singulars into Plurals.

All *Portuguese* Nouns Substantive end either with the six Vowels, *a, e, i, o, u, y*, or these five Consonants, *l, m, r, s, z*; which, complicated with the Vowels, make

<i>al</i>	<i>am</i>	<i>ar</i>	<i>as</i>	<i>az</i>
<i>el</i>	<i>em</i>	<i>er</i>	<i>es</i>	<i>ez</i>
<i>il</i>	<i>im</i>	<i>ir</i>	<i>is</i>	<i>iz</i>
<i>ol</i>	<i>om</i>	<i>or</i>	<i>os</i>	<i>oz</i>
<i>ul</i>	<i>um</i>	<i>ur</i>	<i>us</i>	<i>uz</i>

Examples of the several Terminations.

*The Singular.*

*The Plural.*

<i>A. Maria, Catherina.</i>	<i>Marias, Catherinas.</i>
<i>a Alma, a Soul.</i>	<i>Almas, Souls.</i>
<i>a Vida, Life.</i>	<i>Vidas, Lives.</i>
<i>a Romãã, a Pomegranate.</i>	<i>Romããs, Pomegranates, or Romãens.</i>
<i>a Maçãã, an Apple.</i>	<i>Maçããs, Apples, or Maçãens.</i>
<i>E. o Barrete, a Cap.</i>	<i>Barretes, Caps.</i>
<i>o Capote, a Cloak.</i>	<i>Capotes, Cloaks.</i>
<i>I &amp; X c Thalí, a Belt.</i>	<i>Thalíys, Belts, or Thalíns.</i>
<i>o Nebrí, a Hawk.</i>	<i>Nebríys, Hawks, or Nebríns.</i>
<i>o Rubi, a Ruby.</i>	<i>Rubíys, Rubies, or Rubíns.</i>
<i>o Pay, a Father.</i>	<i>Páys, Fathers.</i>
<i>a May, a Mother.</i>	<i>Máys, Mothers.</i>
<i>a Ley, a Law.</i>	<i>Léys, Laws.</i>
<i>o Rey, a King.</i>	<i>Reys, Kings.</i>
<i>O. Antonio, Anthony.</i>	<i>Antónios, Anthony's.</i>
<i>o Livro, a Book.</i>	<i>Lívro, Books.</i>
<i>U. o Perú, a Turkey.</i>	<i>Perús, Turkeys.</i>
<i>o Mú, a Mule.</i>	<i>Mus, Mules.</i>
<i>o Judéu, a Jew.</i>	<i>Judéus, Jews.</i>
<i>Al. o Avental, an Apron.</i>	<i>Avantáys, Aprons.</i>
<i>o Punhál, a Ponyard.</i>	<i>Punháys, Ponyards.</i>
<i>o Hospital, an Hospital.</i>	<i>Hospityás, Hospitals.</i>
<i>El. Daniél, Daniel.</i>	<i>Daniéys, Daniels.</i>
<i>C 3</i>	<i>o Granel,</i>



## 22 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitânica.*

### *The Singular.*

### *The Plural.*

o Granél, <i>a Granary.</i>	Granéys, <i>Granaries.</i>
o Capitél, <i>a Head of a Pillar.</i>	Capitéys, <i>Heads of Pil- lars.</i>
II. o Barríl, <i>a Barrel.</i>	Barriys, <i>Barrels.</i>
o Gomíl, <i>a Leaver.</i>	Gomíys, <i>Leavers.</i>
o Funíl, <i>a Funnel.</i>	Funiys, <i>Funnels.</i>
OL. o Sol, <i>the Sun.</i>	Soys, <i>Suns.</i>
o Caracól, <i>a Snail.</i>	Caracoys, <i>Snails.</i>
o Lançól, <i>a Sheet.</i>	Lançoys, <i>Sheets.</i>
UL. o Sul, <i>South.</i>	Suis, <i>Souths.</i>
o Tafúl, <i>a Gamester.</i>	Tafúys, <i>Gamesters.</i>

Words ending in *am* regularly make their Plurals  
in *óens*; as,

o Trovám, <i>Thunder.</i>	Trovóens.
o Padrám, <i>a round Pillar or Post.</i>	Padróens, <i>round Pillars or Posts.</i>
o Feijám, <i>a French Bean.</i>	Feijóens, <i>French or Kid- ney Beans.</i>
o Esquadrám, <i>a Squa- dron.</i>	Esquadróens, <i>Squadrons.</i>

Except some that make their Plural in *ãos*; as,

o Cortezám, <i>a Courtier.</i>	Cortezãos, <i>Courtiers.</i>
o Irmám, <i>a Brother.</i>	Irmãos, <i>Brothers.</i>
o Villám, <i>a Countryman.</i>	Villãos, <i>Countrymen.</i>
o Cidadám, <i>a Citizen.</i>	Citadãos, <i>Citizens.</i>
o Christám, <i>a Christian.</i>	Christãos, <i>Christians.</i>

And except, secondly, such as make their Plurals  
in *ães*; as,

o Cám, <i>a Dog.</i>	Cães, <i>Dogs.</i>
o Escrivám, <i>a Clerk or Writer.</i>	Escrivães, <i>Clerks.</i>
o Capitám, <i>a Captain.</i>	Capitães, <i>Captains.</i>

o Pám,

*The Singular.*

*The Plural.*

o Pám, <i>Bread.</i>	Pães, <i>Bread or Loaves of Bread.</i>
o Rufiám, <i>a Russian.</i>	Rufiães, <i>Russians.</i>
o Gaviám, <i>a Sparrow-Hawk.</i>	Gaviães, <i>Sparrow-Hawks.</i>
o Alemám, <i>a German.</i>	Alemães, <i>Germans.</i>
<i>Em.</i> a Adém, <i>a Duck.</i>	Adêns, <i>Ducks.</i>
o Almazém, <i>a Warehouse.</i>	Almazéns, <i>Warehouses.</i>
o Homem, <i>a Man.</i>	Hômens, <i>Mén.</i>
<i>Im.</i> o Chím, <i>a Chinese.</i>	Chins, <i>Chinese.</i>
o Rocím, <i>a Horse.</i>	Rocins, <i>Horses.</i>
o Espadím, <i>a little Sword.</i>	Espadins, <i>little Swords.</i>
<i>Om.</i> o Tom, <i>a Tone.</i>	Tons, <i>Tones.</i>
o Dom, <i>a Gift.</i>	Dons, <i>Gifts.</i>
<i>Um.</i> o Atum, <i>Tunny-Fish.</i>	Atúns, <i>Tunny-Fishes.</i>
o Jejúm, <i>a Fast.</i>	Jejúns, <i>Fasts.</i>
<i>Ar.</i> Cefár, <i>Cesar.</i>	Cefâres, <i>Cæsars.</i>
o Açucár, <i>Sugar.</i>	Açucâres, <i>Sugars.</i>
o Polegar, <i>a Thumb.</i>	Polegâres, <i>Thumbs.</i>
<i>Er.</i> o prafér, <i>Pleasure.</i>	Prazêres, <i>Pleasures.</i>
o Aluger, <i>the Rent of a House.</i>	Aluguêres, <i>Rents of Houses.</i>
<i>Ir and Yr.</i> o Martyr, <i>a Martyr.</i>	Mártýres, <i>Martyrs.</i>
<i>Or.</i> o Açór, <i>an Hawk.</i>	Açôres, <i>Hawks.</i>
o Bemfeitór, <i>a Benefactor.</i>	Bemfeitóres, <i>Benefactors.</i>
o Caçadór, <i>a Huntsman.</i>	Caçadóres, <i>Huntsmen.</i>
o Lavradór, <i>a Husbandman.</i>	Lavradóres, <i>Husbandmen.</i>

## 24 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitana.*

<i>The Singular.</i>	<i>The Plural.</i>
<i>Ur.</i> Catúr, <i>a small Vessel at Sea, in Latin Liburnum.</i>	Catúres.
<i>Az.</i> o Primáz, <i>a Pimate.</i>	Primázes, <i>Primates.</i>
o Arcáz, <i>a Trunk-Maker.</i>	Arcázes, <i>Trunk-Makers.</i>
o Rapáz, <i>a Boy.</i>	Rapázes, <i>Boys.</i>
<i>Ez.</i> o Ingléz, <i>an Englishman.</i>	Inglézes, <i>Englishmen.</i>
o Méz, <i>a Month.</i>	Mézes, <i>Months.</i>
o Marquéz, <i>a Marquis.</i>	Marquézes, <i>Marquisses.</i>
<i>Iz.</i> o Apprendíz, <i>an Apprentice.</i>	Apprendízes, <i>Apprentices.</i>
a Codorníz, <i>a Quail.</i>	Codornízes, <i>Quails.</i>
a Raíz, <i>a Root.</i>	Raízes, <i>Roots.</i>
<i>Oz.</i> o Arrioz, <i>a Globe of Stone.</i>	Arriózes, <i>Globes of Stone.</i>
<i>Uz.</i> o Abestrúz, <i>an Ostrich.</i>	Abestrúzes, <i>Ostriches.</i>
o Archabúz, <i>a Musket.</i>	Archabúzes, <i>Muskets.</i>

### Noun Substantives Irregular.

Some of them have only a Singular Number ; as *Cal*, Lime ; *Sal*, Salt ; *Pez*, Pitch ; *Ar*, Air ; *Doença*, Sickness ; *Próveito*, Profit.

Others have only a plural Termination, altho' they signify but one single Thing, and have the plural Article prefixed to them ; as *os Láyvos*, the Foulness of the Face ; as *Grêlhas*, a Gridiron ; as *Calças*, Breeches ; as *Migas*, Sops ; as *Ceróulas*, Drawers ; *Andás*, a Carriage ; *Andillas*, a little Litter ; as *Cámaras*, a Flux or Looseness ; as *Pareas*, a Tribute ; as *Primícias*, the First-fruits ; as *Cócegas*, Ticklishness ; as *Cústas*, Expence ; *os Editos*, Edicts ; as *Entrânhas*, Bowels ; as *Exéquias*,

*quias*, a Funeral; *os Erpes*, mortified; *os Tornéos* & *as Justas*, Tilts and Tournaments; *resto*, *ou demazia*, an Overplus.

N.B. I cannot forbear observing one of the Beauties of this Language, which is, that the *Portuguese* have many Nouns Substantive ending in *ada*, which cannot be express'd in other Languages without Circumlocution; as *Pedrada*, a Blow with a Stone; *Pancáda*, a Blow with a Stick or Club; *Cutiláda*, a Cut with a Sword; *Estocáda*, a Stab with a Sword or Dagger, &c.

## CHAP. VII.

*Of Nouns Adjective, regular and irregular; their Genders, Terminations, Declensions, and Comparisons.*

THE Nouns Adjective, like the Substantive, have but two Genders, *viz.* the *Masculine*, which they signify by the Article *o*, and *Feminine* by *a*, and some Words are both Masculine and Feminine.

Their Terminations are,

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
<i>A. o Virtuoso, virtuous.</i>	<i>os Virtuosos, virtuous.</i>
<i>o Linda, fair.</i>	<i>os Lín dos, fair.</i>
<i>E. o &amp; a grande, great.</i>	<i>os &amp; as Grá ndes, great.</i>
<i>o &amp; a Forte, strong.</i>	<i>os &amp; as Fortés, strong.</i>
<i>O. o Fermoso, handsome.</i>	<i>os Fermósos, handsome.</i>
<i>o So &amp; a Só, alone,</i> <i>adj.</i>	<i>os Sos &amp; as Sós, alone,</i> <i>or only.</i>

*U. o Ná*



# 26 Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.

## Singular.

## Plural.

U. o Nú, a nua, <i>naked.</i>	os Nús, as nuas, <i>naked.</i>
o Crú, a crua, <i>raw.</i>	os Crús, as cruas, <i>raw.</i>
o Méu, a minha, <i>mine.</i>	os Méus, as minhas, <i>mine.</i>
o Téu, a tua, <i>thine.</i>	os Téus, as tuas, <i>thine.</i>
o Séu, a sua, <i>his.</i>	os Séus, as suas, <i>theirs.</i>
Al. o & a principál, <i>chief.</i>	os & as Principáis, <i>the chief.</i>
o & a Géral, <i>general.</i>	os & as Geráis, <i>generals.</i>
El. o & a Agradável, <i>agreeable.</i>	os & as agradáveis, <i>agreeable.</i>
Il. o & a Sotil, <i>subtle.</i>	os & as Sotíys, <i>subtle.</i>
o & a Utíl, <i>useful.</i>	os & as Utíys, <i>useful.</i>
Ol. o Espanhól, a Espanhóla, <i>a Spanish Man, or Spanish Woman.</i>	os Espanhóis, as Espanhólas, <i>Spanish Men, or Spanish Women.</i>
Ul. o & a Azúl, <i>blue.</i>	os & as Azúys, <i>blue.</i>
Om. o Bóm, a bóa, <i>good.</i>	os Bóns, & as bóas, <i>good.</i>
Um. Nenhúm, nenhuma, <i>no one.</i>	Nenhuns, nenhúas, <i>none.</i>
o Comúm, a comúa, <i>common.</i>	os Comúns, as comúas, <i>common.</i>
Algúm, Algúma, <i>Somebody.</i>	Algúns, algúmas, <i>some.</i>
Ar. o & a Particulár, <i>particular.</i>	os & as Particuláres, <i>particular.</i>
o & a Singulár, <i>singular.</i>	os & as Singuláres, <i>singular.</i>
Or. o & a Melhór, <i>better.</i>	os & as Melhóres, <i>better.</i>
o & a Mayór, <i>greater.</i>	os & as Mayóres, <i>greater.</i>
Az. o & a Mordáz, <i>a spiteful Man or Creature.</i>	os & as Mordázes, <i>Spitefulness.</i>
o & a Capáz, <i>capable.</i>	os & as Capázes, <i>capable.</i>
Ex. o & a Ingléz, <i>English.</i>	os & as Inglêses, <i>English.</i>
	Ex. o & a

Singular.

Plural.

Ex. o & a Portugéz, os & as Portuguêzes,  
a Portuguese Man, Portuguese Men, and  
a Portuguese Wo- Portuguese Women.  
man.

o & a Cortéz, cour- os & as Cortés, cour-  
teous. teous.

Iz. o & a Felíz, happy. os & as Felízes, happy.

o & a Bellí, sharp. os & as Bellízes, sharp.

Oz. o & a Feróz, fierce. os & as Ferózes, fierce.

Uz. o & a Truz, cruel. os & as Trúzes, cruel.

### Irregular Adjectives.

Are such as admit of no Plural Number; as the numerical Adjectives, *trinta*, thirty; *quárenta*, forty; *cincóenta*, fifty; *sessenta*, sixty; *settentá*, seventy; *outénta*, eighty; *novénta*, ninety; *cem*, hundred. But *hum*, one; is in the Plural *huns*, some; *cento*, hundred, in Plural, *centos*, hundreds; *conto & milbám*, a Million; *contos & milbóens*, Millions.

N. B. Some who pretend to be curious in this Language, think it no Impropriety to admit even of Plurals to all or most of the Numeral Adjectives, e. g. *múytos vintes*, *múytos trintas*; many Twenties, many Thirties. Also in Arithmetick it is usual to say, *nóves fora*, cast away the Nines.

Some of these Numerals are esteemed irregular for want of the Singular Number; as *duzéntos*, two hundred; *trezéntos*, three hundred, &c. for *duzénto* and *trezénto*, which are not allowed.

The Nouns Adjective are declined like the Substantives; yet to remove all Difficulties, we shall set down here a few Examples of them.

Declen-

Declension of the Termination in *o* and *a*.*Singular.**N.* o Fermófo, a fermófa, *handsome*.*G.* do Fermófo, da Fermófa.*D.* ao & pera o, pello Fermófo; á & péra, a pélla fermófa.*Ac.* o, ao Fermófo, fermófa.*V.* o Fermófo, o fermófa.*Ab.* dá Fermófo, dá fermófa.*Plural.**N.* os Fermófos; as fermófas.*G.* dos Fermófos; das fermófas.*D.* aos & pera os, pellos Fermófos; ás pera as pellas fermófas.*Ac.* os aos Fermófos; as fermófas.*V.* o Fermófos, o fermófas.*Ab.* dos Fermófos, das fermófas.Declension of the Termination *al* of the Common Gender.*Singular.**N.* o & a Principál, Principál.*G.* do & dá Principál.*D.* ao, péra o, pello; a & pera a, pélla Principal.*Ac.* o, ao; á, Principál.*V.* o Principál.*Ab.* do; dá, Principal.*Plural.**N.* os & as Principáis.*G.* dos; das Principáis.*D.* aos péra os; pellos; as, & pera as, pellas Principáis.*Ac.* os, aos; as, ás Principáis.*V.* o Principáis.*Ab.* dos; das Principáis.

All Nouns Adjective are declined in this Manner. It would be superfluous to insert more Examples, when I am persuaded that you will find no Difficulty to decline any of them, by the Help of the foregoing Table of Terminations.

### Comparison of Nouns Adjective.

The Adjectives have three different Degrees of increasing or diminishing their Signification, which is called *Comparison*.

1. The *Positive*, which is the positive or simple Signification of the Thing, as *grande*, great; *pequeno*, little; *máo*, bad.
2. The *Comparative*, which makes a Comparison between Things, and increases the Signification of the Positive, as *mayór*, greater; *menór*, lesser; *peyór*, worse.
3. The *Superlative*, which signifies the Manner of the Thing in the greatest, or least Degree, and with Excess; as *maximo*, the greatest; *mínimo*, the least; *péssimo*, the worst.

But all Adjectives have not this pure Way of Comparisons, for they commonly make their Comparative by adding the Word *mais* or more, or *ménos* less, to the Word, *e. g.* *perfeito*, perfect; in Comparative *mais perfeito*, more perfect; in Superlative *perfeitíssimo*, the most perfect. *Poderoso*, powerful; *mais poderoso*, more powerful; *poderosíssimo*, the most powerful. *Excellente*, excellent; *mais excelente*, more excellent; *excellentíssimo*, the most excellent.

Thus many *Portuguese* Words, derived from the *Latin*, make their Superlative in *íssimo*; but for the Generality their Comparisons are made by the



the Particle *mais*, as *mais grande*, greater, or more great, for the Comparative ; and *o mais*, the most, as *o mais grande*, the greatest, for the Superlative.

<i>Positive.</i>	<i>Comparative.</i>	<i>Superlative.</i>
Fermoso, <i>fa,</i> <i>handsome,</i>	máis Fermoso, <i>fa,</i> <i>handsomer,</i>	Fermosíssimo, <i>or</i> ó máis fermoso, <i>the handsomest.</i>
Sotil c. <i>subtle,</i>	máis Sotil, <i>more</i> <i>subtle,</i>	Sotilíssimo, <i>or</i> ó máis sotil, <i>the</i> <i>most subtle.</i>
Valente, c. <i>valiant,</i>	máis Valente, <i>more valiant,</i>	o máis Valente, <i>the most valiant,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>

The Comparative is known when you find one compared with many, or with many of a different Kind ; *e. g.* *Hum Européo hé máis valente que muitos Americanos*, one European is more valiant than many Americans. *Os Ingлезes são máis valentes que os Francêzes*, the Englishmen are more valiant than the Frenchmen.

The Superlative is when one Thing is compared with many, or with many of the same Kind, *e. g.* *Este Portuguez he o mais valente de todos os Portuguezes*, this Portuguese is the most valiant of all the Portuguese. *Os Ingleses são os mais valentes de todos os homens*, the English are the most valiant of all Men. Some, though not so elegantly, express the Superlative in this Manner ; as, *Este Portuguez he máis valente que todos os Portuguezes*, and *Os Ingleses são mais valentes que todos os homens*, this Portuguese is more valiant than all the Portuguese, and the English are more valiant than all Men.

## CHAP. VIII.

### Of the Pronouns.

*Their several Sorts, and how they are declined.*

**P**RONOUNS are used instead of a Noun to avoid Repetition. They are divided into seven Classes, viz. into *Personal, Conjunctive, Possessive, Demonstrative, Interrogative, Relative* and *Improper*.

### Of the Pronoun Personal.

This Pronoun is to mark the first, second and third Person in both Numbers, as in Singular, *Eu*, I, for the first Person; *tu*, thou, the second; *elle*, he, the third. And in Plural, *nós*, we, the first; *vós*, you, the second; and *elles*, they, the third Person; to which Class also belong the Pronouns *se* or *si*, himself.

### Declensions of the Pronouns Personal.

#### Singular.

N. *Eu*, I.  
G. de *Mim*, of *me*.  
D. a *Mim*, & *pera mim*  
& *me*, to *me*.  
Ac. a *Mim* & *me*, *me*.  
V. caret.  
Ab. de *Mim*, from *me*.

#### Plural.

N. *Nôs*, *we*.  
G. de *Nôs*, of *us*.  
D. á *Nôs* & *pera nós*,  
to *us*.  
Ac. á *Nôs*, *us*.  
V. caret.  
Ab. de *Nôs*, from *us*.

Declen-

Declension of the Pronoun of the second Person.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
N. Tu, <i>thou.</i>	N. Vós, <i>ye or you.</i>
G. de Ti, <i>of thee.</i>	G. de Vós, <i>of you.</i>
D. a & para Ti & Te, <i>to thee.</i>	D. a & para Vós, <i>to you.</i>
Ac. a Ti & Te, <i>thee.</i>	Ac. á Vós, <i>you or ye.</i>
V. o Tu, <i>ô thou.</i>	V. o Vós, <i>ô you or ye!</i>
A. de Ti, <i>from thee.</i>	A. de Vós, <i>from you.</i>

Declension of the Pronoun of the third Person.

*Elle* and *Ella* are declined like Nouns Adjective. The Pronoun *Se*, or *Si*, him or himself, has no Nominative or Vocative, and is only declined in the Singular, which serves also for the Plural Signification.

G. de Si, *of him; of her; of it (self).*  
D. á Si & Se, *to him; to her; to it (self).*  
Ac. a Si & Se, *him, her, it (self).*  
A. de Si, *from him; from her; from it (self).*

☞ *Me*, *Te*, and *Se*, are used both in the Dative and Accusative Case; as for Example in the Dative, *meu pay me da, meu pay te da*, my Father gives me or to me, my Father gives thee or to thee; *elle me faz honra, elle te faz honra*, he doth me (to me) Honour, he doth thee (to thee) Honour; *não se lbe da disso*, he doth not care for it. In the Accusative Case, as *meu pay me, te chama*, my Father calls me or thee; *entretense, abrise*, &c.

Of the Pronoun Conjunctive.

This Pronoun has a very near Resemblance to the Personal, but differs in this, that it is never  
the

the Nominative Case to the Verb ; it always precedes as well as the other, but always is the Dative or Accusative of the said Verb.

There are six Pronouns of this Order, viz. *me*, me ; *te*, thee ; *se*, himself ; *nós*, us ; *vós*, you ; *lhe*, and *lhes*, him, her, and them ; e. g. *meu pay me falla*, my Father speaks to me ; *teu amigo te escreve*, thy Friend writes to thee ; *muitos nam se conhecem*, many don't know themselves ; *os philosophos nós dizem*, the Philosophers tell us ; *o Réy vós ordena*, the King orders you ; *eu lhe*, or *lhes pago*, I pay him or them.

N.B. The Pronoun *elle*, *ella* & *isto*, in Dative Case *a elle*, *a ella*, *a isto*, is express'd by *lhe*, which serves in all the Genders ; and in Dative Plural *a elles* & *ellas* by *lhes* ; e. g. *meu irmão ou min'ha irmã me perguntou, mas não quero dizer-lhe*, my Brother or my Sister has ask'd me, but I don't care to tell him or her. Likewise in Plural they say, *dizelhes*, tell them, speaking of Men or Women.

#### Of the Pronoun Possessive.

The Pronoun Possessive is that which indicates a Property or Possession. There are six of these Pronouns, three Singular and three Plural, viz. *meu* & *minha*, mine ; *teu* & *tua*, thine ; *seu*, *sua*, his, hers ; *nosso*, *nossa*, our ; *vosso*, *vossa*, your ; *seus*, *suas*, their : As *meu pay*, my Father ; *tua may*, thy Mother ; *seu livro*, his Book ; *nossa casa*, our House ; *vosso cam*, your Dog ; *seus amigos*, their Friends.



## Of the Pronoun Demonstrative.

This Pronoun points out either a Person or a Thing, and is both Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter. This is the only Instance, besides the Article, where the *Portuguese*, as well as the *Spaniards*, admit of the Neuter Gender, which reigns only in the Singular, and not in the Plural. Thus you say in Masculine, *elle*, he; in Feminine *ella*, she; and in the Neuter, *isto*, that.

In Masculine *este*, this; in Feminine *esta*, this; in Neuter *isto*, this (Thing); as *este hómem*, this Man; *esta Mulher*, this Woman; *isto não me agrada*, this doth not please me; and in Masculine *esse*, that (Man); Feminine *essa*, that (Woman); Neuter *isso*, that (Thing); as *esse pão*, that Bread; *essa pedra*, that Stone, and *isso he verdade*, that is true. These, as all Pronouns in general, are declined like Nouns Adjective, and therefore 'tis not necessary to decline them here; but the Word *aquelle* being irregular in its Declension, we put it down here at large.

<i>Singular.</i>		
<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>	<i>Neuter.</i>
N. <i>aquelle, this.</i>	<i>aquella, this.</i>	<i>aquelle, that.</i>
G. <i>d'aquelle, of this.</i>	<i>d'aquella, of this.</i>	<i>d'aquelle, of that.</i>
D. <i>a &amp; pera aquelle, to this.</i>	<i>a &amp; pera aquella, to this.</i>	<i>a &amp; pera aquelle, to that.</i>
Ac. <i>a isto &amp; isso, this.</i>	<i>a esta, essa, this.</i>	<i>a isto, isso, that.</i>
I. caret.		
A. <i>d'isto, from this.</i>	<i>d'esta, from this.</i>	<i>d'isto, from this.</i>
<i>d'isso, from that.</i>	<i>d'essa, from that.</i>	<i>d'isso, from that.</i>

*Plural.*

Plural.

Masculine.

Feminine.

N. aquelas.	aquellas, <i>those</i> .
G. d'aquelles.	d'aquellas, <i>of those</i> .
D. a & pera aquellas.	a & pera aquellas, <i>to those</i> .
Ac. á aquellas.	a aquellas, <i>those</i> .
V. caret.	
A. d'istos, d'issos.	d'istas, d'issas, <i>from those</i> .

Pronouns Interrogative.

As the Name sufficiently declares, they serve in the asking a Question; as *que*, what; *que dizes?* what do you say? *quem*, who; *quem he este?* who is that? *qual*, which; *qual dos dous?* which of the two? *cujo* and *cuja*, whose; *cujo cavallo he esse?* whose Horse is that? *cuja casa he esta?* whose House is this?

The Pronoun Relative.

Points out the Subject without repeating it; as for Example, *Déus, quem eu adoro hé o criador*, &c. God whom I adore, is the Creator, &c. where the Relative *whom* refers to God, the Subject of my Adoration, and amounts to the same as if I had said, *God, which God I adore, is the Creator*, &c. Hither belongs also the Word *cújo, cúja*, whose; as *mêu amigo cújo honór*, &c. my Friend, whose Honour, &c. And thus the Words *quem*, and *cújo, cúja*, which we said before were Interrogatives, are also often used as Relatives, according to the Manner in which they are apply'd; and if you take but Notice of the Sense of the Clause, you'll never fail discerning when those Words are Interrogative, and when Relative.

☞ When they stand in the Beginning of a Phrase they are Interrogatives, when in the Middle Relatives.

### The Pronouns Improper.

Some Grammarians bring under this Class the Words *tal*, such; *algun*, *alguma*, somebody; *cada*, every; *quem*, who; *que*, what; *nenhum*; *nenhuma*, none; *certo*, *certa*, certain; *outro*, *outra*, another; *todo*, *toda*, all; *mesmo*, the same.

N.B. The *Latins* treat the Words *nullus*, *certus*, *alter*, and *totus*, as Nouns Adjective.

Before we proceed, we cannot but observe a singular Propriety of this Language, which greatly contributes to the Softness of its Tone, and renders some Words very expressive; which is, that they join the adjunctive Particle *N* (which stands for *em*, in) close to some of their Pronouns in both Numbers and Cases, to intimate an Indication. As for Example, *nêle*, *nêlla*; *nêlles*, *nêllas*; in him or it; in her, in them. In the same Manner you say, *náquelle*, *náquella*, *náquillo*, *náquelles*, *náquellas*; *nêste*, *nêsta*, *nêsto*, *nêstos*, *nêstas*; *nêsse*, *nêssa*, *nêssô*, *nêsses*, *nêssas*.

The *Portuguese* likewise join the Word *outro* to the forementioned Pronouns *aquelle*, *este*, *esse*, e. g. *aquellôutro*, that other, *estôutro*, *essôutro*, this other.

For the other Remarks concerning Pronouns, we refer the Reader to the *Syntax*.

But observe, that when a Vowel is omitted for the Sake of joining two Words together, the first Vowel after that which was omitted, ought to be mark'd with an Accent Acute; as *essôutro*, for *esse outro*; here an Accent is placed on the *o*, to signify that a Letter is left out.

C H A P. IX.

*Of the Verb, its Moods, Tenses, and Persons.*

**T**HE *Verb* is a Part of Speech which varies its Termination, but not after the same Manner as the Noun doth, which has six Cases, and marks no Time or Mood; whereas the Verb is conjugated with Moods and Tenses, has a Singular and Plural Number, and three Persons.

The Moods determine the Signification of the Verb, as to the Manner and Circumstance of the Affirmation; as *I love, love thou, that I may love, and to love.* Tenses are Distinctions of Time; as *I do love, and I did love;* and to conjugate a Verb is to form or vary it according to its several Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons.

There are five Moods: The first is the *Indicative*, from the *Latin* Word *indico*, I shew, which simply denotes the Action; as *eu léyo*, I read; *eu quéro*, I love. The second is the *Imperative*, from *imperare*, *Latin*, to command; as *lé tu*, read thou; *ouve tu*, hear t'ou. The third is the *Optative*, from *optare*, to wish, to desire, to pray; as *oxala amára eu, proveira & queyra Déos & praza à Déos, amára eu & amasse eu*, God grant (that) I did love. The Particles *o* and *assim* also express the Optative Mood; thus you say, *o se fosse eu tal*, O that I were such; *assim Deos me ajude*, so help me God. The fourth is the *Conjunctive*, which is known by the Particle *como*; as *como eu amo*, when I love; *como eu amava*, when I did love; *como estivestes múyto tempo doente*, since you have been a long Time sick; but as this Mood is nothing but the Indicative conjugated through all the Tenses with the Particle *como* before it, we thought it needless to swell the Conjugations by



inserting it. The fifth is the *Infinitive*, from the *Latin infinitus*, because it is not limited either by Number or Person, as other Moods are; as *lér*, to read.

Verbs have also *Gerunds* and *Participles* in the *Portuguese* as well as in the *Latin*.

The *Gerund* is so called from *gero*, I bear, from its bearing a double Signification, *viz.* that of a *Noun* and that of a *Verb*. There are three of these *Gerunds*, as in *Latin*; *amandi*, of loving; *amando*, in loving; and *amandum*, to love; for that in *di* the *Portuguese* use the *Infinitive Mood*, with the Preposition *de*; as *de amár*, of loving: The *Gerund* in *do* follows the *Latin* exactly; thus the *Portuguese* say, *amando léndo*, in loving, in reading; for the *Gerund* in *dum* they use the *Infinitive Mood*, and the Preposition *a* and *pera*; as *á amar*; or *pera amar*, *á lér*, and *pera lér*, to love, and to read.

A *Supine* is a Termination of a *Verb*, and has the same Signification as the present Tense of the *Infinitive Mood*, either active or passive; *amatum*, in *Latin*, to love; *amutu*, to be loved; in *Portuguese*, *à amar*, to love, and *de ser amado*, to be loved.

A *Participle* derives its Name from *pars* and *capio*, as it partakes both of a *Noun* and a *Verb*. There are three Sorts in *Latin*; as,

The *Participle* of the *Perfect Tense*; as *Latin amatus*, *Portuguese amado*, *amada*, beloved.

The *Participle* of the *Present Tense*; as *Latin amans*, *Portuguese amante*; *o que ama*, loving, or he that loves.

And the *Participle* of the *Future Tense* in *rus*, in active, and in *dus* in passive; as *Latin amaturus*, *Portuguese o que ha de amar*, he that shall, will, or is about to love; and *Latin amandus*, *Portuguese o que ha de ser amado*, he that shall, will, or is to be loved; this last belongs to the *Verb* passive. This

This Account of the Verb and Moods being sufficient, I now proceed to speak of the Tenses.

There are properly but three *Tenses* or *Times*, viz. the Past, the Present, and the Future, or what is to come.

The Preterperfect Tense shews the Action of the Verb either perfectly past; as *Latin amavi*, *Portuguese améy*, or *ténho amado*, I loved, or I have loved; or imperfectly past in the Imperfect Tense; as *Latin, amabam*, *Portuguese, amava*, I did love; which is used when the Action e. g. of loving is past, in regard to the Time in which I speak; and present, with respect to some Circumstance; as I did love (when I was young); I did learn (when I was at School); or, lastly, when an Action is past before some Circumstance happened, which is also past, and then it is called the *Preterpluperfect*; as I had supped when you came in, *eu tinha ceado quando V M entrava*.

The Preterperfect is again divided into the Definite and Indefinite; the former determines the Time of the Action of the Verb entirely past; as I saw your Uncle Yesterday, *ví a seu Tio ontem*.

The Preterperfect Indefinite is when you mention the Time yet passing; as I have seen your Uncle this Morning, *ténho visto a seu Tio esta manhã*. In *English* we are not so nice in this Distinction; for we say indifferently, *I saw your Uncle this Morning*, or *I have seen your Uncle this Morning*.

☞ The natural Order of Things requires the Past or Preterperfect Tense to stand before the Present; but as all Grammarians make the Present Tense the first in their Conjugations, to avoid being particular, or breeding Confusion, we have followed the same Method.

The Present Tense shews the present Action of the Verb; as *eu leyo*, I read; *eu amo*, *tu amas*, *elle ama*, I love, thou lovest, he loveth; *nos amamos*, *vos amays*, *elles amam*, we love, ye love, they love.

The future Tense points out a Time to come; as *Latin*, *amabo*, *amaréy*, I will love. We have in *English* two Signs to this Tense, which, for want of Observation, Foreigners often confound; the one is conditional, as *I shall*; the other positive, as *I will*. Some do not distinguish between these two Words; and it is common to hear *I shall* for *I will*, and *é contra*; as *I will fall*, for *I shall fall*, and *I shall go*, for *I will go*.

The *Portuguese* have two Futures, the one imperfect or simple, the other perfect or compounded; the simple *eu amaréy*, I will or shall love; the compounded *eu teréy amado*, I shall have loved.

There are then six (or with the Subdivision of the Future and Uncertain Tense, eight) Tenses, viz. the Present, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect definite, the Preterperfect indefinite, the Preterpluperfect, the Future imperfect and perfect, and the uncertain Tense, of which we shall speak at large in the *Syntax*.

A Tense has two Numbers, viz. the Singular and Plural, and three Persons in the Singular; as *eu*, I; the second *tu*, thou; the third, *elle*, *ella*, he, she; and as many in the Plural; the first *nós*, we; the second *vós*, ye and you; the third *elles*, they; e. g. *eu amo*, I love; *tu amas*, thou lovest; *elle ama*, he loves; *nos amamos*, we love; *vos amays*, ye love; *elles amam*, they love.

## C H A P. X.

*The Division and Conjugations of the Verbs.*

**T**H E Verbs are commonly divided into Active, Passive, Neuter, Reciprocal, and Impersonal.

A Verb Active signifies an Action, and has always a Passion opposed to it; as *I love*, the Passion opposed to it is *I am loved*; *I read*, *I am read*; *I hear*, *I am heard*: Or, to make it yet plainer, join with the Verb the Words *a Person*, or *a Thing*, and if then it makes good Sense, it is an Active; thus you may say, *I see a Person or a Thing*, *I strike a Person or Thing*, *I follow a Person or Thing*.

The *Verb Passive* speaks a Sufferance; as *I am loved*, and is formed of the Verb Substantive; as *I am*, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense; as *eu sou amado*, I am loved; *tu eras amado*, thou wert loved; *elle he amado*, he is loved, &c.

The Verb Neuter signifies an Action not conveyed unto another, but remaining within the Person acting, and has no Passion opposed to it; as *I sleep*, *I walk*, *I come in*, *I tremble*, *I fall*, *I grow pale*, cannot make a Passive *I am slept*, *I am walked*, &c. neither will they make Sense if joined to the Words *a Person* or *Thing*; thus you cannot properly say, *I sleep a Thing*, *I walk a Thing*, or *Person*, *I fall*, *I grow old*, &c.

Some of the Verbs Neuter make use of the Verb *ey*, I have; and others of *sou*, I am, in the Preterperfect Tense.

The *Verb Reciprocal* has the same Person for its Nominative and Subject; as *me espanto*, I am surprized. This Sort of Verb is hardly known in  
the



the *English*, though very common in the *Italian*, *French*, *Spanish*, and *Portuguese* Languages.

*Verbs Impersonal* have only the third Person, being called so from their wanting the first and second; as *chóve*, it rains; *gέα*, it freezes; *trovéja*, it thunders, &c. they are conjugated throughout in the third Person, and in the Singular Number only. See the Conjugations below.

Verbs again are divided into

*Regular* and *Irregular*. The *Regular* are such as are confined to general Rules: The *Irregular* have none, and differ from the former, in the first Preterperfect of the Indicative Mood, and Preterperfect of the Conjunctive.

### The Conjugations of Verbs.

Of this Language, both regular and irregular, are commonly reduced to three Terminations, and as many Conjugations; the first Conjugation is known by the Termination of the Infinitive Present in *ar*, as *amo*, I love, *amar*, to love; the second terminates in *er* in Infinitive, as *léyo*, I read, *léer*, to read; the third in *ir*, as *ouço*, I hear, *ouvir*, to hear.

☞ The Verb *póinho*, I put, in Infinitive Present, *pór*, to put, with its Compounds, of which we shall speak at the End of the Conjugations, is the only one of the Termination in *or*, and therefore hardly deserving to make a Conjugation by itself.

C H A P. XI.

*Of the Auxiliary Verbs aver and ter.*

**A**S the auxiliary or helping Verbs *aver* and *tér*, to have, are necessary for the conjugating the Preterperfects of the Verbs, both Active, Passive, Neuter and Reciprocal; and since without the Verb *sóu* and *estóu*, I am, the Passive Verb cannot be conjugated, I shall begin with these two Verbs, as absolutely necessary to be first learned.

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb *aver*.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu éy, <i>I have.</i>
	{	Tu has, <i>thou hast.</i>
	{	Elle ha, <i>he has.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs hémos, avémos, <i>we have.</i>
	{	Vôs éys, avéys, <i>ye have.</i>
	{	Elles ham, <i>they have.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu avía, <i>I had.</i>
	{	Tu avías, <i>thou hadst.</i>
	{	Elle avía, <i>he had.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs avíamos, <i>we had.</i>
	{	Vôs avíeys, <i>ye had.</i>
	{	Elles avíam, <i>they had.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu óuve, <i>I have had.</i>
	{	Tu ouviste, <i>thou hast had.</i>
	{	Elle óuve, <i>he has had.</i>

Plur.

# 44 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.*

Plur. { Nós ouvêmos, *we have had.*  
 Vós ouvêstes, *ye have had.*  
 Elles ouvêram, *they have had.*

## *Second Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu tenho avido, *I have had.*  
 Tu tens avido, *thou hast had.*  
 Elle tem avido, *he has had.*  
 Plur. { Nós temos avido, *we have had.*  
 Vós tendes avidos, *ye have had.*  
 Elles tem avido, *they have had.*

## *Preterpluperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu tinha avido, *I had had.*  
 Tu tinhas avido, *thou hadst had.*  
 Elle tinha avido, *he had had.*  
 Plur. { Nós tínhamos avido, *we had had.*  
 Vós tínheys avido, *ye had had.*  
 Elles tínham avido, *they had had.*

## *Future Imperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu averéy, *I shall or will have.*  
 Tu averás, *thou shalt or wilt have.*  
 Elle averá, *he shall or will have.*  
 Plur. { Nós averémos, *we shall or will have.*  
 Vós averéys, *ye shall or will have.*  
 Elles averam, *they shall or will have.*

## *Future Perfect Tense.*

Sing. { *ja entam* { Eu teréy avido, *I shall then have had.*  
 Tu teras avido, *thou shalt have had.*  
 Elle terá avido, *he shall have had.*  
 Plur. { *ja entam* { Nós terémos avido, *we shall have had.*  
 Vós teréys avido, *ye shall have had.*  
 Elles terám avido, *they shall have had.*

Imperative.

Imperative. *The first Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Has no first Person.*  
 ájas, ou ha tu, *have thou.*  
 ája elle, *let him have.*
- Plur.* { Ajámus nós, *let us have.*  
 Ajáys vós, *have ye or you.*  
 Ajam elles, *let them have.*

*The second Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Has no first Person.*  
 Averás tu, *thou shalt have.*  
 Averá elle, *he shall have.*
- Plur.* { Averémos nós, *we shall have.*  
 Averéys vós, *ye shall have.*  
 Averám elles, *they shall have.*
- 

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing.* { Oxala aja eu, *God grant I may have.*  
 Oxala ajas tu, *God grant thou mayst have.*  
 Oxala aja elle, *God grant he may have.*
- Plur.* { Oxala ajámos nós, *God grant we may have.*  
 Oxala ajáys vós, *God grant ye may have.*  
 Oxala ájam elles, *God grant they may have.*

*Imperfect Tense.*

- Sing.* { Oxala ouvêra, ovêsse eu, *would to God I had  
 or might have.*  
 Oxala ouvêras, ouvesses tu, *would to God thou  
 hadst, or mightest have.*  
 Oxala ouvêra, ouvêsse elle, *would to God he  
 had, or might have.*

*Plur.*



- Plur. { Oxala ouvéramos, ouvéssemos nós, *would to God we had, or might have.*  
 Oxala ouvéreys, ouvésseys vós, *would to God ye had, or might have.*  
 Oxala ouvéram ovésssem elles, *would to God they had, or might have.*

*The Uncertain Tense.*

- Sing. { Eu averia, *I would or might have.*  
 Tu averias, *thou wouldst or mightest have.*  
 Elle averia, *he would or might have.*
- Plur. { Nós averíamos, *we would or might have.*  
 Vós averíays, *ye would or might have.*  
 Elles averíam, *they would or might have.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

- Sing. { Quéyra Deos que eu tenha avido, *God grant I have had, or might have had.*  
 Quéyra Deos que tu tenhas avido, *God grant thou hast had, or mightest have had.*  
 Quéyra Deos que elle tenha avido, *God grant he has had, or might have had.*
- Plur. { Quéyra Deos que tu nós tenhamos avido, *God grant we have had, or might have had.*  
 Quéyra Deos que vós ténhays avido, *God grant ye have had, or might have had.*  
 Quéyra Deos que elles ténham avido, *God grant they have had, or might have had.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

- Sing. { Prouvera Deos que eu ouvéra, ou ouvesse avido, *would to God I had had.*  
 Prouvera Deos que tu ouvéras, ou ouveesses avido, *would to God thou hadst had.*  
 Prouvera Deos que elle ouvéra, ou ouvesse avido, *would to God he had had.*

Plur.

- Plur. { Prouvera Deos que nôs ouvêramos, ou ouvêfemos avido, *would to God we had had.*  
 Prouvera Deos que vôs ouvêrys, ou ouvêffeis avido, *would to God ye had had.*  
 Prouvera Deos que elles ouvêram, ou ouvêfem avido, *would to God they had had.*

*Future Imperfect Tense.*

- Sing. { Quando eu ouvêr, *when I shall or will have.*  
 Quando tu ouvêres, *when thou shalt or wilt have.*  
 Quando elle ouvêr, *when he shall or will have.*  
 Plur. { Quando nôs ouvêrmos, *when we shall or will have.*  
 Quando vôs ouvêrdes, *when ye shall or will have.*  
 Quando elles ouvêrem, *when they shall or will have.*

*Future Perfect Tense.*

- Sing. { Quando eu tivêr avido, *when I shall or will have had.*  
 Quando tu tivêres avido, *when thou shalt or wilt have had.*  
 Quando elle tivêr avido, *when he shall or will have had.*  
 Plur. { Quando nôs tivêrmos avido, *when we shall or will have had.*  
 Quando vôs tivêrdes avido, *when ye shall or will have had.*  
 Quando elles tivêrem avido, *when they shall or will have had.*

*Infinite Mood. Present Tense.*

*Avêr, to have.*

*Preter-*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Ter auido, *to have had.*

*Future Tense.*

Ter de avér ou Esperár de avér, (*to have to have, to hope to have*) *to have hereafter.*

*Gerund.*

Avêndo, *in having*, E de avér, *of having.*

*Participle Present.*

Ouvênte, *having*; o que ha, *he that has.*

*Participle Preterperfect.*

Avído, avída, *having had*; o que ha auido, *he that has had.*

*Participle Future.*

O que ha de avér E espéra de aver, *he (one) that is to have, or hopes to have.*

It may not be improper to observe here, that the Verb *ey*, *has*, *ha*, I have, thou hast, he has, assist all Sorts of Verbs in their Moods, Tenses, and Persons, both in the Active and Passive Signification. In the Active, by adding the Particle *de* to the present Tense of the Infinitive of the Verbs, *e. g.* *Ey de amar*, I am about to love, or I shall love; *Ey de ler*, *ouvir*, I am about to hear, or shall read or hear, &c. and so in the other Persons and Tenses.

In the Passive Significations are added to the Particle *de* the Present Tense of the Infinitive of *Ser*, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense of any Verb, as *Ey de ser amada*, I shall or will  
be

be loved ; *has de ser ouvido*, thou shalt or wilt be heard ; *ha de ser lido*, he or it shall be read.

---

The Auxiliary Verb, *Ter*.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu têmho, <i>I have.</i>
	{	Tu téns, <i>thou hast.</i>
	{	Elle têm, <i>he has.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs têmos, <i>we have.</i>
	{	Vós têmdes, <i>ye have.</i>
	{	Elles tem, <i>they have.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu tinha, <i>I had.</i>
	{	Tu tinhas, <i>thou hadst.</i>
	{	Elle tinha, <i>he had.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs tínhamos, <i>we had.</i>
	{	Vós tínheys, <i>ye had.</i>
	{	Elles tínham, <i>they had.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu tive, <i>I have had.</i>
	{	Tu tiveste, <i>thou hast had.</i>
	{	Elle teve, <i>he hath had.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs tivemos, <i>we have had.</i>
	{	Vós tivestes, <i>ye have had.</i>
	{	Elles tiveram, <i>they have had.</i>

*Second Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu tenho tido, <i>I have had.</i>
	{	Tu tens tido, <i>thou hast had.</i>
	{	Elle tem tido, <i>he has had.</i>

E

Plur.



Plur.	{	Nôs temos tido, <i>we have had.</i>
		Vôs tendes tido, <i>ye have had.</i>
		Elles tem tido, <i>they have had.</i>

## Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu * tinha tido, <i>I had had.</i>
		Tu tinhas tido, <i>thou hadst had.</i>
		Elle tinha tido, <i>he had had.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs tínhamos tido, <i>we had had.</i>
		Vôs tínheys tido, <i>ye had had.</i>
		Elles tínham tido, <i>they had had.</i>

## Future Imperfect.

Sing.	{	Eu teréy, <i>I shall or will have.</i>
		Tu terás, <i>thou shalt or wilt have.</i>
		Elle terá, <i>he shall or will have.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs terémos, <i>we shall or will have.</i>
		Vôs teréys, <i>ye shall or will have.</i>
		Elles terám, <i>they shall or will have.</i>

## Future Perfect.

Sing.	{	Ja entam eu teréy tido, <i>I shall (then already) have had.</i>
		Ja entam tu téras tido, <i>thou shalt (then already) have had.</i>
		Ja entam elle terá tido, <i>he shall (then already) have had.</i>
Plur.	{	Ja entam nós terémos tido, <i>we shall (then already) have had.</i>
		Ja entam vós teréys tido, <i>ye shall (then already) have had.</i>
		Ja entam elles terám tido, <i>they shall (then already) have had.</i>

\* Some express the Preterpluperfect, though improperly, by *tivera, tiveras, tivera; tiveramos, tiveréys, tiveram.*

*Imperative Mood. First Tense.*

- Has no first Person.*
- Sing.* { *Tem ou ténhas tu, have thou.*  
*Ténha elle, let him have.*
- Plur.* { *Ténhamos nós, let us have.*  
*Ténde ou tenháys vós, have ye.*  
*Ténham elles, let them have.*

*Second Tense.*

- Has no first Person.*
- Sing.* { *Terás tu, thou shalt have.*  
*Terá elle, he shall have.*
- Plur.* { *Terémos nós, we shall have.*  
*Teréys vós, ye shall have.*  
*Terám elles, they shall have.*

*Optative Mood. Present Tense.*

- Oxala tenha eu, would to God I may have.*
- Sing.* { *Oxala ténhas tu, would to God thou mayst have.*  
*Oxala tenha elle, would to God he may have.*
- Plur.* { *Oxala tenhamos nós, would to God we may have.*  
*Oxala ténhays vós, would to God ye may have.*  
*Oxala tenham elles, would to God they may have.*

*Imperfect Tense.*

- Oxala tivéra, tivésse eu, wish to God I had.*
- Sing.* { *Oxala tivéras, tivesses tu, wish to God thou hadst.*  
*Oxala tivéra, tivésse elle, wish to God he had.*
- Plur.* { *Oxala tivéramos, tivéssemos, nós, wish to God we had.*  
*Oxala tivéreys, tivésseys vós, wish to God ye had.*  
*Oxala tivéram, tivéssem elles, wish to God they had.*

## Uncertain Tense.

- Sing. { Eu teria, *I would or might have.*  
 Tu terias, *thou wouldst or mightest have.*  
 Elle teria, *he would or might have.*
- Plur. { Nós teríamos, *we would or might have.*  
 Vós teríeis, *ye would or might have.*  
 Elles teriam, *they would or might have.*

## Preterperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Quéyra Deos que eu tenha tido, *God grant that I may have had.*  
 Quéyra Deos que tu téngas tido, *God grant that thou mayst have had.*  
 Quéyra Deos que elle tenha tido, *God grant that he may have had.*
- Plur. { Quéyra Deos que nós tenhamos tido, *God grant that we may have had.*  
 Quéyra Deos que vós ténhays tido, *God grant that ye may have had.*  
 Quéyra Deos que elles tenham tido, *God grant that they may have had.*

## Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivésse eu tido, *would to God I had had.*  
 Prouvéra Deos que tivéras ou tivesses tu tido, *would to God thou hadst had.*  
 Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivésse elle tido, *would to God he had had.*
- Plur. { Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos ou tivéssemos nós tido, *would to God we had had.*  
 Prouvéra Deos que tivéreis, ou tivésseis vós tido, *would to God ye had had.*  
 Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tivessem elles tido, *would to God they had had.*

*First Future Tense.*

Sing.	{	Quando eu tiver, <i>when I shall have.</i>
	{	Quando tu tiveres, <i>when thou shalt have.</i>
	{	Quando elle tiver, <i>when he shall have.</i>
Plur.	{	Quando nós tivermos, <i>when we shall have.</i>
	{	Quando vós tiverdes, <i>when ye shall have.</i>
	{	Quando elles tiverem, <i>when they shall have.</i>

*Second Future Tense.*

Sing.	{	Quando eu tiver tido, <i>when I shall have had.</i>
	{	Quando tu tiveres tido, <i>when thou shalt have had.</i>
	{	Quando elle tiver tido, <i>when he shall have had.</i>
Plur.	{	Quando nós tivermos tido, <i>when we shall have had.</i>
	{	Quando vós tiverdes tido, <i>when ye shall have had.</i>
	{	Quando elles tiverem tido, <i>when they shall have had.</i>

*Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.*

*Ter, to have.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

*Ter tido, to have had.*

*Future Tense.*

*Avêr de ter (to shall or will have, to be to have) to have hereafter.*



## Gerund.

Tendo, *in having*; de ter, *of having*.

## Participle Present.

Em ter, *having*; o que tem, *he that has*.

## Participle Preterperfect.

Tido, tida, *having had*; o que ha tido, *he that has had*.

## Participle Future.

O que ha de ter, o que espéra de ter, *he that is to have, or hopes to have*.

Observations on the Verb *Ey* and *Tenbo*.

The Verb *Ey* has one Irregularity peculiar to itself, and not to be found in other Verbs, which is, that in all Moods, Tenses, and Persons of the Singular Number, it serves Nouns both Singular and Plural; e. g. *ha hum anno*, it is a Year; *ha muitos annos*, it is many Years; *avia hum anno*, & *avia muitos annos*, as the French say, *il y a un an*, & *il y a plusieurs années*, which is also a usual Way of expressing themselves in the Spanish Language.

This Verb is made use of in all Moods, Tenses, and Persons, with the Addition of the Particle *de*, with the Present and Imperfect of the Verb Substantive *Sou* and *Estou*; as *ey de ser, amar, ler*, I shall be, love, read; *avia de ser, amar, ler*, and *ouve de ser, amar, ler*. The Verb *Tenbo* in this Form is improper, although elegant enough in Spanish; for the Portuguese do not say *tenbo de amar, ler, escrever*; but the Spaniards say properly enough, *tengo de amar, ler, escribir*, I am to love, read, write, &c.

The

The Particle *me* is also sometimes added, and must always be placed before the Particle *de*; as *ba me de custar*, it will cost me; *ba me de dar*, he shall give me; it being improper to say *ba de me dar*, *ba de me custar*, &c.

The Verb *Ey* is also often used with the Particle *de*, and the Infinitive of the Verb *Sou*, that is, *ser*, joined with the Participle Preterperfect of any Verb in the Passive Voice, e. g. *ey de ser amado*, I am to be loved; *ey de ser lido, ouvido*, &c. I am to be read, heard; so *avía de ser amado, lido, ouvido*, and so through all the Numbers and Persons.

The Verb *Ey* in Passive Voice is always put before the Infinitive *ser*; as *ey de ser, avía de ser*, &c. but in the Active Voice it is not only put before the Verb to which it is joined, but sometimes after; as *se me fizerdes a vontade, deyxár vos ey por méu erdeyro*, if you please me, I will make you my Heir; *se fordes obediente a vossos páys, far-vos ha Deos múytas mercês*, if you are obedient to your Parents, God will bestow many Blessings on you.

The Word *ouve*, I had, he had, the first or third Person in Singular of the first Preterperfect Tense of the Verb *Ey*, is the same with *ouve*, the third Person Singular Present Indicative of the Verb *ouço*, I hear, which must be distinguished by Experience.

The Verb *Tenho*, I have, is often joined with Verbs Active and Neuter, not in all the Tenses, only the Preterperfect and Preterpluperfect of the Indicative, Optative, and Subjunctive Moods; as also in the Futures Perfect of the Indicative and Conjunctive. Examples; *tenho amado*, I have loved; *tivera (tinha) amado*, I had loved; *prouvera Deos que tivera eu amado*, would to God I had loved; *tendo amado*, having loved; *ter amado*, to

have loved; *eu terey amado*, I shall have loved; *quando eu tiver amado*, when I shall have loved.

The Verb *Tenho* is auxiliary to other Verbs through all its Moods and Tenses, only in an Active Sense, with the Addition of a Participle Preterperfect Tense of the said Verb; as *tenho amado*, I have loved; *tens, tem amado, lido, ouvido*, loved, read, heard; *tinha*, I had, *tinhas, tinha amado, lido, ouvido*, &c. And note, That the three auxiliary Verbs, *sou, ey, and tenho*, are often auxiliary to one another; as *ey de ser*, I shall be; *tenho sido*, I have been; *tenho avido*, I have had; and sometimes the same Verb is auxiliary to itself; as *ey de aver*, I shall or am to have; *tenho tido*, I have had, &c. but is not well joined with all Participles of the Active Voice; for it would be improper to say *tenho podido*, I have been able; or *tenho querido*, I have desired; *tenho rido*, I have laughed; *tenho abhorrecido*, I have abhorred; for *ey podido, querido, rido, abhorrecido*, because the Verb *tenho* doth not square with the Signification of all Verbs, of which Experience will be the best Informer.

*Note*, That the Verbs which admit not of the auxiliary Verb *tenho*, are generally of the second or third Conjugation, and those rare; it is joined with all of the first Conjugation, excepting the Verb *matar*, to kill; for it would be improper to say *tenho matado*, but rather *tenho morto*, I have killed.

☞ The Imperfect Tense of the Verb *tenho, tinha*, I had, is exactly expressed as the Word *tinha*, a Scald Head: *Tinha* is also both the first and third Person Singular of the Imperfect Indicative Mood; the third Person Singular of the Indicative Present equivocates with the third in the Plural; thus you write, *ellé tem, & elles tem,*

*tem*, he has and they have. Likewise the Verb *ponho*, I put, is in the third Person Singular *elle poem*; and in the third Person Plural of the Indicative Present you say *elles poem*, they put. The Verb *foy* equivocates also in the first Person Singular of the Imperfect Indicative with the third Person Singular; as *eu era*, & *elle era*, I was and he was; so you say, *eu tivera*, & *elle tivera*, all which is easily learnt by Experience, and the Sense the Words stand in.

## C H A P. XII.

*Of the Verbs Sou and Estou, I am.*

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu sóu, estóu, <i>I am.</i>
	{	Tu es, estás, <i>thou art.</i>
	{	Elle he, está, <i>he is.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós somos, estamos, <i>we are.</i>
	{	Vós soys, estáys, <i>ye are.</i>
	{	Elles são, estão, <i>they are.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eú éra, estava, <i>I was.</i>
	{	Tu éras, estavas, <i>thou wast.</i>
	{	Elle éra, estava, <i>he was.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós eramos, estávamos, <i>we were.</i>
	{	Vós éreys, estáveys, <i>ye were.</i>
	{	Elles eram, estavam, <i>they were.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu foy, estive, <i>I have been.</i>
	{	Tu foste, estiveste, <i>thou hast been.</i>
	{	Elle foy, esteve, <i>he has been.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós fomos, estivemos, <i>we have been.</i>
	{	Vós fostes, estivestes, <i>ye have been.</i>
	{	Elles foram, estiveram, <i>they have been.</i>

*Second*



## Second Perfect.

Sing.	{	Eu tenho sido, ou estado, <i>I have been.</i>
	{	Tu tens sido, ou estado, <i>thou hast been.</i>
	{	Elle têm sido, ou estado, <i>he has been.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós temos sido, ou estado, <i>we have been.</i>
	{	Vós tendes sido, ou estado, <i>ye have been.</i>
	{	Elles têm sido, ou estado, <i>they have been.</i>

## Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu * tinha sido, estado, <i>I had been.</i>
	{	Tu tinhas sido, estado, <i>thou hadst been.</i>
	{	Elle tinha sido, estado, <i>he had been.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós tínhamos sido, estado, <i>we had been.</i>
	{	Vós tínheys sido, estado, <i>ye had been.</i>
	{	Elles tínham sido, estado, <i>they had been.</i>

## Future Imperfect.

Sing.	{	Eu feréy, estaréy, <i>I shall or will be.</i>
	{	Tu serás, estarás, <i>thou shalt or wilt be.</i>
	{	Elle fará, estará, <i>he shall or will be.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós ferémos, estarémos, <i>we shall or will be.</i>
	{	Vós feréys, estaréys, <i>ye shall or will be.</i>
	{	Elles ferám, estarám, <i>they shall or will be.</i>

## Future Perfect.

Sing.	{	Ja entám eu teréy sido, ou estado, <i>I shall then already have been.</i>
	{	Ja entám tu terás sido, ou estado, <i>thou shalt then already have been.</i>
	{	Ja entám elle terá sido, ou estado, <i>he shall then already have been.</i>
Plur.	{	Ja entám nós terémos sido, ou estado, <i>we shall then already have been.</i>
	{	Ja entám vós terés sido, ou estado, <i>ye shall then already have been.</i>
	{	Ja entám elles terám sido, ou estado, <i>they shall then already have been.</i>

\* Some use *fora & estivera, foras, estiveras, &c.* for the Preterpluperfect *tenho sido*, which however is not so proper.

Impe-

Imperative Mood. First Tense.

- Has no first Person.*
- Sing. { Sé tu, está, *be thou.*  
Seja elle, estéja, *be he, or let him be.*
- Plur. { Sejámos nós, estejámos, *let us be.*  
Séde vós, estáy, *be ye.*  
Séjam elles estejam, *let them be.*

Second Tense.

- Has no first Person.*
- Sing. { Serás tu, estarás, *thou shalt be, or be thou.*  
Será elle, estará, *he shall be, or be he.*
- Plur. { Serémos nós, estaremos, *we shall be.*  
Seréys vós, estaréys, *ye shall be, or be ye.*  
Serám elles, estarám, *they shall be, or be they.*

Optative Mood. Present Tense.

- Sing. { Oxala féja eu, ou estéja, *wish to God I may be.*  
Oxala féjas tu, ou estéjas, *wish to God thou mayst be.*  
Oxala féja elle, ou estéja, *wish to God he may be.*
- Plur. { Oxala sejámos nós, ou estejámos, *wish to God we may be.*  
Oxala féjays vós, ou estéjays, *wish to God ye may be.*  
Oxala féjam elles, ou estejam, *wish to God they may be.*

Imperfect

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{ Oxala fóra eu ou fosse, estivéra ou estivesse, <i>would to God I were.</i>
	{ Oxala fóras tu ou fosses, estivéras ou estivesse, <i>would to God thou wert.</i>
	{ Oxala fóra elle ou fosse, estivéra ou estivesse, <i>would to God he were.</i>
Plur.	{ Oxala fóramos nós ou fóssemos, estivéramos ou estivéssemos, <i>would to God we were.</i>
	{ Oxala fóreys vós ou fósseys, estivéreys ou estivésseis, <i>would to God ye were.</i>
	{ Oxala fóram elles ou fóssem, estivéram ou estivésssem, <i>would to God they were.</i>

*The Uncertain Tense.*

Sing.	{ Eu seria, estaria, <i>I might be.</i>
	{ Tu serias, estarias, <i>thou mightest be.</i>
	{ Elle seria, estaria, <i>he might be.</i>
Plur.	{ Nós seríamos, estaríamos, <i>we might be.</i>
	{ Vós serieys, estarieys, <i>ye might be.</i>
	{ Elles feriam, estariam, <i>they might be.</i>

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{ Queyra Deos que eu tenha sido estado, <i>God</i> <i>grant I may have been.</i>
	{ Queyra Deos que tu tenhas sido estado, <i>God</i> <i>grant that thou mayst have been.</i>
	{ Queyra Deos que elle tenha sido estado, <i>God</i> <i>grant that he may have been.</i>
Plur.	{ Queyra Deos que nós ténhamos sido estado, <i>God grant that we may have been.</i>
	{ Queyra Deos que vós ténheys sido estado, <i>God</i> <i>grant ye may have been.</i>
	{ Queyra Deos que elles ténham sido estado, <i>God grant that they may have been.</i>

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

- |       |   |  |
|-------|---|--|
| Sing. | { | Prouvéyra Deos que eu ouvéra, ouvésse fido,<br><i>would to God that I had been.</i>        |
|       |   | Prouvéyra Deos que tu ouvéras, ouvesses fido,<br><i>would to God that thou hadst been.</i> |
|       |   | Prouvéyra Deos que elle ouvéra, ouvésse fido,<br><i>would to God that he had been.</i>     |
| Plur. | { | Prouvéyra Deos que nós ouvéramos, ouvéssemos fido, <i>would to God that we had been.</i>   |
|       |   | Prouvéyra Deos que vós ouvéreys, ouvésseys fido, <i>would to God that ye had been.</i>     |
|       |   | Prouvéyra Deos que elles ouvéram, ouvéssem fido, <i>would to God that they had been.</i>   |

*First Future Tense.*

- |       |   |   |
|-------|---|---|
| Sing. | { | Quando, praza á Deos que eu for, estiver,<br><i>when or please God I shall or may be hereafter.</i>           |
|       |   | Quando, praza á Deos que tu fores, estiveres,<br><i>when or please God thou shalt or may'st be hereafter.</i> |
|       |   | Quando, praza á Deos que elle for, estiver,<br><i>when or please God he shall or may be hereafter.</i>        |
| Plur. | { | Quando, praza á Deos que nós formos, estivermos, <i>when or please God we shall or may be hereafter.</i>      |
|       |   | Quando, praza á Deos que vós fordes, estiverdes, <i>when or please God ye shall or may be hereafter.</i>      |
|       |   | Quando, praza á Deos que elles forem, estiverem, <i>when or please God they shall or may be hereafter.</i>    |

*Second Future Tense.*

- |       |   |  |
|-------|---|--|
| Sing. | { | Quando eu tivér fido, ou estado, <i>when I shall have been.</i>      |
|       |   | Quando tu tivéres fido, ou estado, <i>when thou shalt have been.</i> |
|       |   | Quando elle tivér fido, ou estado, <i>when he shall have been.</i>   |

Plur.



- Plur. { Quando nós tivérmos sido, ou estado, *when we shall have been.*  
 Quando vós tiverdes sido, ou estado, *when ye shall have been.*  
 Quando elles tiverem sido, ou estado, *when they shall have been.*
- 

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Ser, estar, *to be.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Aver sido, estado, *to have been.*

*Future.*

Aver de ser, estar, *to be hereafter.*

*Gerund.*

Sendo, estando, *in having*; de ser estar, *of having.*

*Supine.*

á ser, estar, e pera ser, estar, *to be.*

*Participle Present.*

Em ser, estar, *being*; o que he, está, *one (he) that is.*

*Participle Perfect.*

Sido, estado, *having been*; o que ha sido, estado, *be (one) that has been.*

*Participle Future.*

O que ha, ou espera de sér, ou estar, *be (one) that is or hopes to be.*

Obser-

Observations on the Verb *Sou*, I am.

The Verb *Sou*, I am, is exactly express'd and pronounced in the Preterperfect Tense, like the Verb *vou*, I go, by the Word *eu fuy* in both, for I have been and I went; only with this Distinction, that the Preterperfect Tense of the Verb *vou*, I go, is always followed by a Substantive of Place and Motion: As for Example, *fuy a Roma*, I went to Rome; *fuy a Londres*, I went to London; and sometimes with an Adjective adjoined; as *fuy a famosa Roma*, I went to famous Rome. Sometimes follows a Verb of the Infinitive Mood; as *fuy ver*, *fuy ler*, I went to see, I went to read; but the Preterperfect Tense of the Verb *Sou* hath always a Substantive or Adjective following it, and signifies no Motion; e. g. *fuy bom estudante*, I have been a good Student; *Lisboa foy fundada por Ulisses*, Lisbon was founded by Ulysses, &c. See the Verb *vou*, I go.

Besides these Equivocations, there are also many others of the like Nature, v. g. the third Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood of the Verb *sou sam*, they are, is written and pronounced as the Word *sam*, well or sound; *era*, I or he was; and *era*, an Ivy-tree; *eras*, thou wast, and *eras*, Ivy-trees; *ou fora*, I might be, and *fora*, without; *fóram*, they might have been, and *forám*, a Ferret, distinguish'd only by the Accent; *seram*, they shall be, and *seram*, the Beginning of the Night; *se tu*, be thou, and *se*, himself; *sede vos*, be ye, and *sede*, Thirst; *tu estás*, thou art, and *éstar*, these; *está*, he is, and *ésta*, this; which Words are to be distinguish'd by the Accent, or Connexion of the Discourse.

## C H A P. XIII.

*Of the Regular Verbs, and their three Conjugations.*The First Conjugation in *ar*.Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu ámo, <i>I love.</i>
		Tu ámas, <i>thou lovest.</i>
		Elle áma, <i>he loveth.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs amámos, <i>we love.</i>
		Vós amays, <i>ye love.</i>
		Elles amam, <i>they love.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu amáva, <i>I loved or did love.</i>
		Tu amavas, <i>thou lovedst or didst love.</i>
		Elle amáva, <i>he loved or did love.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs amávamos, <i>we loved or did love.</i>
		Vós amáys, <i>ye loved or did love.</i>
		Elles amávam, <i>they loved or did love.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu améy, <i>I have loved.</i>
		Tu amáste, <i>thou hast loved.</i>
		Elle amóu, <i>he hath loved.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs amémos, <i>we have loved.</i>
		Vós amástes, <i>ye have loved.</i>
		Elles amaram, <i>they have loved.</i>

*Second Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu tenho amado, <i>I have loved.</i>
		Tu tens amado, <i>thou hast loved.</i>
		Elle tem amado, <i>he has loved.</i>

Plur.

Plur. { Nós temos amado, *we have loved.*  
Vós tendes amado, *ye have loved.*  
Elles tem amado, *they have loved.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu \* tinha amado, *I had loved.*  
Tu tinhas amado, *thou hadst loved.*  
Elle tinha amado, *he had loved.*  
Plur. { Nós tínhamos amado, *we had loved.*  
Vós tínheys amado, *ye had loved.*  
Elles tínham amado, *they had loved.*

*Future Imperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu amarey, *I shall or will love.*  
Tu amarás, *thou shalt or wilt love.*  
Elle amará, *he shall or will love.*  
Plur. { Nós amaremos, *we shall or will love.*  
Vós amaréys, *ye shall or will love.*  
Elles amarám, *they shall or will love.*

*Future Perfect Tense.*

Sing. { Ja entam eu teréy amado, *I shall then have loved.*  
Ja entam tu terás amado, *thou shalt then have loved.*  
Ja entam elle terá amado, *he shall then have loved.*  
Plur. { Ja entam nós terémos amado, *we shall then have loved.*  
Ja entam vós teréys amado, *ye shall then have loved.*  
Ja entam elles téram amado, *they shall then have loved.*

\* Some use *amara, amaras, amara*, &c. for the Preterpluperfect, which by the best Criticks is judged an Impropriety, it being the Imperfect of the Optative Mood.



Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Has no first Person.*  
*Ama tu, love thou.*  
*Ame elle, let him love.*
- Plur.* { *Amémos nós, let us love.*  
*Amáy vós, love ye.*  
*Amem elles, let them love.*

*Second Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Has no first Person.*  
*Amarás tú, thou shalt love.*  
*Amara elle, he shall love.*
- Plur.* { *Amarémos nós, we shall love.*  
*Amaréys vós, ye shall love.*  
*Amaràm elles, they shall love.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Oxala áme eu, I wish I may love.*  
*Oxala ámes tu, I wish thou mayst love.*  
*Oxala áme elle, I wish he may love.*
- Plur.* { *Oxala amémos nós, I wish we may love.*  
*Oxala ámeys vós, I wish ye may love.*  
*Oxala amem elles, I wish they may love.*

*Imperfect Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Oxala amára, ou amáffe eu, would I might or could love.*  
*Oxala amáras, ou amáffes tu, would thou mightest or couldst love.*  
*Oxala amára, ou amáffe elle, would he might or could love.*

*Plur.*

- Plur. { Oxala amáramos, ou amássemos nós, *would we might or could love.*  
 Oxala amareys, ou amásseys vós, *would ye might or could love.*  
 Oxala amáram, ou amássem elles, *would they might or could love.*

Uncertain Tense.

- Sing. { Eu amaria, *I might love.*  
 Tu amarias, *thou mightst love.*  
 Elle amaria, *he might love.*  
 Plur. { Nós amaríamos, *we might love.*  
 Vós amaríeys, *ye might love.*  
 Elles amaríam, *they might love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Queyra Deos que tenha eu amado, *God grant that I may have loved.*  
 Queyra Deos que ténhas tu amado, *God grant that thou mayst have loved.*  
 Queyra Deos que tenha elle amado, *God grant that he may have loved.*  
 Plur. { Queyra Deos que ténhamos nós amado, *God grant that we may have loved.*  
 Queyra Deos que ténhays vós amado, *God grant that ye may have loved.*  
 Queyra Deos que ténham elles amado, *God grant that they may have loved.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Prouvéyra Deos que tivera ou tivesse eu amado, *would to God that I had loved.*  
 Prouvéra Deos que tiveras ou tivesses tu amado, *would to God that thou hadst loved.*  
 Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivesse elle amado, *would to God that he had loved.*

- Plur. { Prouvéyra Deos que tivéramos ou tiveſſemos  
nôs amado, *would to God that we had loved.*  
Prouvéyra Deos que tivéreys ou tivésſeys vôs  
amado, *would to God that ye had loved.*  
Prouvéyra Deos que tivéram ou tiveſſem elles  
amado, *would to God that they had loved.*

## First Future.

- Sing. { Quando eu amar, *when I shall or will love.*  
Quando tu amares, *when thou shalt or wilt love.*  
Quando elle amar, *when he shall or will love.*  
Plur. { Quando nós amármos, *when we shall or will love.*  
Quando vôs amardes, *when ye shall or will love.*  
Quando elles amarem, *when they shall or will love.*

## Second Future.

- Sing. { Quando eu tiver amado, *when I shall or will  
have loved.*  
Quando tu tivéres amado, *when thou shalt or  
wilt have loved.*  
Quando elle tiver amado, *when he shall or  
will have loved.*  
Plur. { Quando nós tivérmos amado, *when we shall  
or will have loved.*  
Quando vôs tivérdes amado, *when ye shall or  
will have loved.*  
Quando elles tivérem amado, *when they shall  
or will have loved.*

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Amár, *to love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Tér amado, *to have loved.*

Future

*Future Tense.*

Tér de amar, ou esperar de amar (*to have to love, to hope to love*) to love hereafter.

*Gerund.*

Amando, *in loving ; and* de amar, *of loving.*

*Supine.*

á amar, ou pera amar, *to love.*

*Participle Present.*

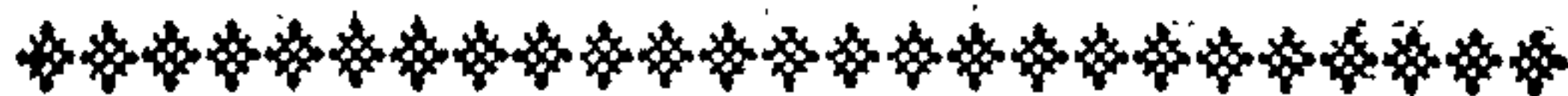
Amante, *loving ; o que ama, he (or one) that loves.*

*Participle Perfect.*

Amado, *having loved ; o que ha amado, he (or one) that has loved.*

*Participle Future.*

O que ha de amar, ou espéra de amár, *he (or one) that is to love, or hopes to love.*



The First Conjugation in the Passive Voice.

*Indicative Mood. Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu sou amado, <i>I am loved.</i>
		Tu es amado, <i>thou art loved.</i>
		Elle he amado, <i>he is loved.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs fomos amados, <i>we are loved.</i>
		Vós foyes amados, <i>ye are loved.</i>
		Elles sam amados, <i>they are loved.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu éra amado, <i>I was loved.</i>
		Tu éras amado, <i>thou wert loved.</i>
		Elle éra amado, <i>he was loved.</i>



Plur. { Nós éramos amados, *we were loved.*  
 Vós éreis amados, *ye were loved.*  
 Elles eram amados, *they were loved.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu fui amado, *I have been loved.*  
 Tu foste amado, *thou hast been loved.*  
 Elle foy amado, *he has been loved.*  
 Plur. { Nós fomos amados, *we have been loved.*  
 Vós fostes amados, *ye have been loved.*  
 Elles foram amados, *they have been loved.*

These three Tenses may suffice to shew how the Verb Passive is conjugated, which consists in this, that you conjugate the Verb Substantive *Sou* thro' all the Moods and Tenses, adding the Participle of the Perfect Tense of the Verb to it; as *amado*, *lido*, *ouvido*, which in the Plural Number, are put in *os*, or in *as* if of the Feminine Gender; thus you say, *os homens são amados*, the Men are beloved; *as mulheres são amadas*, the Women are beloved.

*Note*, If you speak but to one Person, you put the Verb *sou* in Plural, but the Participle in Singular; as *digo a Vósse que soys amado, amada, lido, lida, & ouvido, ouvida*, I tell you, Sir, or Madam, that you are beloved, read, and heard; for the Plural, or when you speak to more than one Person, you say, e. g. *digo a Vosses que soys amados, amadas, lidos, lidas, & ouvidos, ouvidas*, I tell you (to Men or Women) that you are beloved, read, and heard.

Example of the Second Conjugation in *er*.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu léyo, <i>I read.</i>
	{	Tu lés, <i>thou readest.</i>
	{	Elle lé, <i>he reads.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs lémos, <i>we read.</i>
	{	Vôs lédes, <i>ye read.</i>
	{	Elles lém, <i>they read.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu lía, <i>I read or did read.</i>
	{	Tu lías, <i>thou readest or didst read.</i>
	{	Elle lía, <i>he read or did read.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs líamos, <i>we read or did read.</i>
	{	Vôs líeys, <i>ye read or did read.</i>
	{	Elles líam, <i>they read or did read.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu lí, <i>I read.</i>
	{	Tu léste, <i>thou readest.</i>
	{	Elle léo, <i>he read.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs lemos, <i>we read.</i>
	{	Vôs lestes, <i>ye read.</i>
	{	Elles léram, <i>they read.</i>

*Second Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu ténho lido, <i>I have read.</i>
	{	Tu tens lido, <i>thou hast read.</i>
	{	Elle tem lido, <i>he has read.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs témos lido, <i>we have read.</i>
	{	Vôs téndes lido, <i>ye have read.</i>
	{	Elles tem lido, <i>they have read.</i>

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu * tinha lido, <i>I had read.</i>
	{	Tu tinhas lido, <i>thou hadst read.</i>
	{	Elle tinha lido, <i>he had read.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós tínhamos lido, <i>we had read.</i>
	{	Vós tínheys lido, <i>ye had read.</i>
	{	Elles tínham lido, <i>they had read.</i>

*Future Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu leréy, <i>I shall or will read.</i>
	{	Tu lerás, <i>thou shalt or wilt read.</i>
	{	Elle léra, <i>he shall or will read.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós lerémos, <i>we shall or will read.</i>
	{	Vós leréys, <i>ye shall or will read.</i>
	{	Elles lerám, <i>they shall or will read.</i>

*Future Perfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Ja entám eu teréy lido, <i>I then shall have read.</i>
	{	Ja entám tu téras lido, <i>thou then shalt have read.</i>
	{	Ja entám elle terá lido, <i>he then shall have read.</i>
Plur.	{	Ja entám nós terémos lido, <i>we then shall have read.</i>
	{	Ja entám vós teréys lido, <i>ye then shall have read.</i>
	{	Ja entám elles terám lido, <i>they then shall have read.</i>

*Imperative Mood. First Tense.*

Sing.	{	<i>Has no first Person.</i>
	{	Lé tu, <i>read thou.</i>
	{	Léya ellé, <i>let him read, read be.</i>
Plur.	{	Leyámos nós, <i>let us read.</i>
	{	Lede vós, <i>read ye.</i>
	{	Léyam elles, <i>let them read.</i>

\* Some express the Preterpluperfect by *lera, leras, lera, &c.* tho' improperly, it being the Imperfect of the Optative Mood.

*Second*

## Second Tense.

- Has no first Person.*
- Sing.* { *Lerás tu, thou shalt read.*  
*Lerá elle, he shall read.*
- Plur.* { *Leremos nós, we shall read.*  
*Leréys vós, ye shall read.*  
*Lerám elles, they shall read.*
- 

## Optative Mood. Present Tense.

- Sing.* { *Oxala léya eu, would to God I may read.*  
*Oxala léyas tu, would to God thou mayst read.*  
*Oxala léya elle, would to God he may read.*
- Plur.* { *Oxala léyamos nós, would to God we may read.*  
*Oxala léyas vós, would to God ye may read.*  
*Oxala léyam elles, would to God they may read.*

## Imperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { *Oxala lera, ou leffe eu, would I might or could read.*  
*Oxala leras tu, ou leffes tu, would thou mightest or couldst read.*  
*Oxala lera elle, ou leffe elle, would he might or could read.*
- Plur.* { *Oxala léramos nós, ou léffemos nós, would we might or could read.*  
*Oxala léreys vós, ou léffey vós, would ye might or could read.*  
*Oxala léram elles ou léffem elles, would they might or could read.*

## Preterperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { *Quéyra Deos que tenha eu lido, God grant that I have or may have read.*  
*Quéyra Deos que tenhas tu lido, God grant that thou hast or mayst have read.*  
*Quéyra Deos que tenha elle lido, God grant that he hath or may have read.*

Plur.



- Plur. { Quéryra Deos que ténhamos nós lido, *God grant that we have or may have read.*  
 Quéryra Deos que ténhays vós lido, *God grant that ye have or may have read.*  
 Quéryra Déos que ténham elles lido, *God grant that they have or may have read.*

## Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Prouvéra á Déos que tivéra ou tivéffe eu lido, *would to God I had read.*  
 Prouvéra á Deos que tivéras ou tivéffes tu lido, *would to God thou hadst read.*  
 Prouvéra á Déos que tivéra ou tivéffe elle lido, *would to God he had read.*
- Plur. { Prouvéra á Déos que tivéramos ou tivéffemos nós lido, *would to God we had read.*  
 Prouvéra á Deos que tivéreys ou tivéffeyss vós lido, *would to God ye had read.*  
 Prouvéra á Deos que tivéram ou tivéffem elles lido, *would to God they had read.*

## First Future Tense.

- Sing. { Quando eu ler, *when I shall read.*  
 Quando tu léres, *when thou shalt read.*  
 Quando elle ler, *when he shall read.*
- Plur. { Quando nós lérmós, *when we shall read.*  
 Quando vós lérdes, *when ye shall read.*  
 Quando elles lérem, *when they shall read.*

## Second Future Tense.

- Sing. { Quando eu tivér lido, *when or please God I shall have read.*  
 Quando tu tivéres lido, *when or please God thou shalt have read.*  
 Quando elle tivér lido, *when or please God he shall have read.*

Plur.

Plur. { Quando nós tivérmos lido, *when or please God*  
*we shall have read.*  
 Quando vós tivérdes lido, *when or please God*  
*ye shall have read.*  
 Quando elles tivérem lido, *when or please God*  
*they shall have read.*

---

*Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.*

Ler, *to read.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Ter lido, *to have read.*

*Future.*

Aver de lér, ou esperar de ler, (*to be or to have to read*) *to hope to read, or to read hereafter.*

*Gerund.*

Lendo, *in reading, and de lér, of reading.*

*Supine.*

á ler, ou pera ler, *to read.*

*Participle Present.*

Lénte, *reading; ou que lé, be (one) that readeth.*

*Participle Perfect.*

Lido, *having read; o que ha lido, be (one) that has read.*

*Participle Future.*

O que ha dé lér, ou espera de lér, *be (one) that is to read or hopes to read.*

The

The Passive Voice of the Verb *ler*, to read, is also formed by conjugating the Verb *ser*, to be, through all its *Moods* and *Tenses*, and adding the Participle *lido*, read, to it; which in the three Persons in Singular remains *lido*, and in Plural is *lidos*; as *eu sou lido*, *tu es lido*, *elle he lido*; *nós somos lidos*, *vós soys lidos*, *elles sam lidos*: Thus in Imperfect, *eu era lido*; in Perfect, *fuy lido*; Preterpluperfect, *fora lido*; and in Future, *seréy lido*; and so through all the *Moods* and *Tenses*, as we observ'd above of the Verb *amo*.



An Example of the Third Conjugation, in *ir*.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu ouço <i>I hear.</i>
	{	Tu ouves, <i>thou hearest.</i>
	{	Elle ouve, <i>he heareth.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós ouvimos, <i>we hear.</i>
	{	Vós ouvíeis, <i>ye hear.</i>
	{	Elles ouvem, <i>they hear.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu ouvía, <i>I heard or did hear.</i>
	{	Tu ouvías, <i>thou heardst or didst hear.</i>
	{	Elle ouvía, <i>he heard or did hear.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós ouvíamos, <i>we heard or did hear.</i>
	{	Vós ouvíeis, <i>ye heard or did hear.</i>
	{	Elles ouvíam, <i>they heard or did hear.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu ouvi, <i>I have heard.</i>
	{	Tu ouviste, <i>thou hast heard.</i>
	{	Elle ouvió, <i>he has heard.</i>

Plur.

Plur. { Nô's ouvimos, *we have heard.*  
Vô's ouvístes, *ye have heard.*  
Elles ouvíram, *they have heard.*

*Second Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu tenho ouvido, *I have heard.*  
Tu tens ouvido, *thou hast heard.*  
Elle tem ouvido, *he has heard.*  
Plur. { Nô's temos ouvido, *we have heard.*  
Vô's tendes ouvido, *ye have heard.*  
Elles tem ouvido, *they have heard.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu \* tinha ouvido, *I had heard.*  
Tu tinhas ouvido, *thou hadst heard.*  
Elle tinha ouvido, *he had heard.*  
Plur. { Nô's tínhamos ouvido, *we had heard.*  
Vô's tínheys ouvido, *ye had heard.*  
Elles tínham ouvido, *they had heard.*

*Future Imperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Eu ouviréy, *I shall or will hear.*  
Tu ouvirás, *thou shalt or wilt hear.*  
Elle ouvirá, *he shall or will hear.*  
Plur. { Nô's ouviremos, *we shall or will hear.*  
Vô's ouvireys, *ye shall or will hear.*  
Elles ouvirám, *they shall or will hear.*

*Future Perfect.*

Sing. { Ja entam eu térey ouvido, *I shall then have heard.*  
Ja entam tu teras ouvido, *thou shalt then have heard.*  
Ja entam elle terá ouvido, *he shall then have heard.*

\* Some express the Preterpluperfect by *ouvêra*, *ouvêras*, *ouvêra*, &c. the Imperfect of the Optative. which the best Criticks find fault with.

Plur.

Plur. { Ja entam nós terémos ouvido, *we shall then have heard.*  
 Ja entam vós teréy ouvido, *ye shall then have heard.*  
 Ja entam elles téram ouvido, *they shall then have heard.*

*Imperative Mood. The First Tense.*

Sing. { *Has no first Person.*  
 Oúve tu, *hear thou.*  
 Oúve elle, *let him hear.*  
 Plur. { Ouçámos nós, *let us hear.*  
 Ouví vós, *hear ye.*  
 Oúçam elles, *let them hear.*

*The Second Tense.*

Sing. { *Has no first Person.*  
 Ouvíras tu, *thou shalt hear.*  
 Ouvíra elle, *he shall hear.*  
 Plur. { Ouvíremos nós, *we shall hear.*  
 Ouviréys vós, *ye shall hear.*  
 Ouviráam elles, *they shall hear.*

*Optative Mood. Present Tense.*

Sing. { Oxala ouça eu, *would I may hear.*  
 Oxala ouças tu, *would thou mayst hear.*  
 Oxala ouça elle, *would he may hear.*  
 Plur. { Oxala ouçamos nós, *would we may hear.*  
 Oxala ouçays vós, *would ye may hear.*  
 Oxala ouçam elles, *would they may hear.*

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing. { Oxala ouvíra ou ouvísse eu, *would I might or could hear.*  
 Oxala ouvíras ou ouvísse tu, *would thou mightst or couldst hear.*  
 Oxala ouvíra ou ouvísse elle, *would he might or could hear.*

Plur.



- Plur. { Oxala ouvíramos ou ouvíssemos nós, *would we might or could hear.*  
 Oxala ouvíreys ou ouvísseys vós, *would ye might or could hear.*  
 Oxala ouvíram ou ouvíssem elles, *would they might or could hear.*

*The Uncertain Tense.*

- Sing. { Eu ouvería, *I might hear.*  
 Tu ouverías, *thou mightst hear.*  
 Elle ouvería, *he might hear.*  
 Plur. { Nós ouveríamos, *we might hear.*  
 Vós ouveríeys, *ye might hear.*  
 Elles ouveríam, *they might hear.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

- Sing. { Quéyra Deos que téinha eu ouvido, *God grant that I have heard.*  
 Quéyra Deos que téinhas tu ouvido, *God grant that thou hast heard.*  
 Quéyra Deos que téinha elle ouvido, *God grant that he hath heard.*  
 Plur. { Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nós ouvido, *God grant that we have heard.*  
 Quéyra Deos que ténhays vós ouvido, *God grant that ye have heard.*  
 Quéyra Deos que ténham elles ouvido, *God grant that they have heard.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

- Sing. { Prouvera Deos que tivera ou tivesse eu ouvido, *would to God I had heard.*  
 Prouvera Deos que tiveras ou tivesse tu ouvido, *would to God thou hadst heard.*  
 Prouvera Deos que tivera ou tivesse elle ouvido, *would to God he had heard.*

Plur.

- Plur.* { Prouvera Deos que tivéramos ou tivéssemos  
nôs ouvido, *would to God we had heard.*  
Prouvera Deos que tivéreys ou tivésséys vós  
ouvido, *would to God ye had heard.*  
Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tivéssém elles  
ouvido, *would to God they had heard.*

*The First Future Tense.*

- Sing.* { Quando eu ouvir, *when I shall hear.*  
Quando tu ouvires, *when thou shalt hear.*  
Quando elle ouvir, *when he shall hear.*  
*Plur.* { Quando nós ouvirmos, *when we shall hear.*  
Quando vós ouvirdes, *when ye shall hear.*  
Quando elles ouvirem, *when they shall hear.*

*Second Future Tense.*

- Sing.* { Quando eu tiver ouvido, *when I shall have*  
*heard.*  
Quando tu tiveres ouvido, *when thou shalt*  
*have heard.*  
Quando elle tiver ouvido, *when he shall have*  
*heard.*  
*Plur.* { Quando nós tivérmos ouvido, *when we shall*  
*have heard.*  
Quando vós tiverdes ouvido, *when ye shall*  
*have heard.*  
Quando elles tivérem ouvido, *when they shall*  
*have heard.*

*Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.**Ouvir, to hear.**Preterperfect Tense.**Ter ouvido, to have heard.**Future*

*Future Tense.*

Aver de ouvír, ou esperar de ouvír, *to be to hear, to hope to hear, or to hear hereafter.*

*Gerund.*

Ouvindo, *in hearing.*

*Supine.*

á ouvír, ou pera ouvír, *to hear.*

*Participle Present.*

Ouvente, o que óuve, o que esta ouvindo, *he (one) that hears, or is hearing.*

*Participle Preterperfect.*

Ouvindo, *having heard*; o que tem ouvido, *he (one) that has heard.*

*Participle Future.*

O que ha de ouvír, ou espéra de ouvír, *he (one) that is to hear, or hopes to hear.*

Observe,

Some pretend to enrich the *Portuguese* Verbs by Moods not common to other Languages, and therefore, besides the Indicative, Imperative, Optative, and Infinitive Moods, set down a Conjunctive Mood, a Conjunctive peculiar to the *Portuguese* Language, a Potential Mood, and a Permissive Mood. The Conjunctive Mood is nothing else but the Indicative conjugated with the Particle *como*, as, or when.

The Conjunctive peculiar to the *Portuguese* Language is the Subjunctive conjugated with the Words *posto que*, although, or supposing that.

The Potential Mood in the Present Tense is *que ame eu*, that I may love; the Imperfect Tense is *amaria eu*, should or could I love; the Preterperfect Tense is *pude eu amar*, I might have loved; the Preterpluperfect Tense is *eu pudera ter amado*, I might, could, or would have loved; the Future Tense *amarey, poderey amar*, I shall or will love, I shall or will be able to love.

The Permissive Mood in the Present Tense is *am' eu*, let me love; *dóulhe que ame*, I grant I may love; the Imperfect Tense *amara*, I did love; *dóulhe que amara*, I grant I did love; the Preterperfect Tense *amasse eu*, I have loved; *dóulhe, que amasse eu*, I grant I have loved; and *más que tenha amado*, although I have loved; the Preterpluperfect Tense *amara eu*, I had loved; *dóulhe que amara*, I grant I had loved; *mas que tivera amado*, although I or he had loved; the Future Tense *dóulhe que venha eu chegue eu a amar*, I grant that I may come to love.

It appears then that these Moods have no extraordinary Terminations belonging to them, but that they are only composed of Particles joined to the Verb in the Mood which those Particles require, and conjugated in the common Manner. I thought it therefore needless to swell and embroil the Conjugations with those Moods, since the Learner, when he comes to be acquainted with the Conjugations, and knows what Moods the several Conjunctions govern, he not only will find the above-mentioned Moods very easy to him, but also may make as many more if he pleases, giving them Names according to the Nature of the Conjunction joined with them, which may be done in any other Language; and therefore I cannot see in what Respect those Moods are peculiar only to the *Portuguese*.

## C H A P. XIV.

*Of the Terminations, Formations, and Equivocations of the three regular Conjugations.*

**T**HE first Conjugation, as was said above, is known by the Termination of the second Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, and the Present of the Infinitive; as, *amo*, *amas*, and in the Infinitive *amar*, to love; *ensino*, I teach; *ensinas*, thou teachest; *ensinar*, to teach; *louvo*, I praise; *louvás*, thou praisest, *louvar*, to praise.

The *first Conjugation* is so regular, that it keeps the same Characters through all its Moods and Tenses, changing only the last Letter into such Letters as the Tenses are terminated in, *e. g.*

Indic. Present.	Imperf. Tense.	Perfect Tense.
Amo, <i>I love.</i>	amava, <i>I did love.</i>	améy, <i>I have loved.</i>
Chamo, <i>I call.</i>	chamáva, <i>I did call.</i>	chaméy, <i>I have called.</i>

Except the Verb *dou*, I give, which in the rest of the Tenses loseth its two last Letters *ou*, *e. g.*

Dou, <i>I give.</i>	Dava, <i>I did give.</i>	Déy, <i>I have given.</i>
------------------------	-----------------------------	------------------------------

As also such Verbs as end in *co*.

Fico, <i>I remain.</i>	Ficava, <i>I did remain.</i>	Fiquéy, <i>I have remained.</i>
Finco, <i>I fasten.</i>	Fincava, <i>I did fasten.</i>	Finquéy, <i>I have fastened.</i>



Observe here, that in Verbs of the first Conjugation in the Present Tense, the first, second, and third Persons of the singular Number are often written and expressed with the very same Letters without any Difference, and their Signification is only to be guessed at by the Connexion of the Matter discoursed of.

Verbs of the first Conjugation equivocate three Ways with Nouns expressed in the same Form.

First, when the Verb and Noun are expressed with the same Letters in the Indicative Present and the first Person, as for Example,

Agóuro, <i>I divine,</i>	and Agóuro, <i>Divination,</i>
Abrço, <i>I embrace,</i>	and Abrço, <i>an Embrace.</i>
Canto, <i>I sing,</i>	and Canto, <i>a Song.</i>
Chóro, <i>I cry,</i>	and Chóro, <i>a Crying.</i>
Deíprezo, <i>I despise,</i>	and Desprezo, <i>a Contempt.</i>
Dezejo, <i>I desire,</i>	and Dezejo, <i>a Desire.</i>
Ensino, <i>I teach,</i>	and Ensino, <i>a Teaching.</i>
Furto, <i>I steal,</i>	and Furto, <i>a Stealth.</i>
Livro, <i>I free,</i>	and Livro, <i>a Book.</i>
Rogo, <i>I desire,</i>	and Rogo, <i>a Desire.</i>
Soluço, <i>I sob or sigh,</i>	and Soluço, <i>a Sigh, &amp;c.</i>

Secondly, Verbs equivalent to, and writ the same with Nouns Substantive, are very numerous in the second Person of the Indicative Present; as,

Brigas, <i>thou fightest,</i>	and Brigas, <i>Fights and Quarrels.</i>
Buscas, <i>thou seekest,</i>	and Buscas, <i>Seckings or Searches.</i>
Culpas, <i>thou blamest,</i>	and Culpas, <i>Faults, &amp;c.</i>

Thirdly, also of the third Person; as,

Briga, <i>he fighteth,</i>	and Briga, <i>a Fight.</i>
Busca, <i>he searcheth,</i>	and Busca, <i>a Search.</i>
Culpa, <i>he blameth,</i>	and Culpa, <i>a Fault, &amp;c.</i>

There

There are also Verbs of the first Conjugation, which, in the Indicative Present, equivocate with Nouns in all three Persons of the Singular, and the third Person Plural, *v. g. amo*, I love, and a Master of a House or Family; *amas*, thou lovest, the Mistresses (of a House) or Nurses of Children; *ama*, he loveth, Mistress or Nurse; *barro, barras, barra*; *ameaço, ameaças, ameaça*, &c. So in the third Person Plural, *arépellam*, they pull out the Hairs, *arepéllam*, a Pulling out or Cutting off the Hair; and so in many other Verbs, which Use must teach you, and I here omit to avoid Tedioufness.

The *second Conjugation* is of Verbs that in the second Person of the Indicative Present end in *es*, and in the Infinitive in *er*, as,

Leyo, <i>I read.</i>	les, <i>thou readest.</i>	lér, <i>to read.</i>
Conheço, <i>I know.</i>	conhéces, <i>thou knowest.</i>	conhecér, <i>to know.</i>
Escrevo, <i>I write.</i>	escreves, <i>thou writest.</i>	escrever, <i>to write.</i>

Take Notice, that as there is very little Variety or Difference in the Terminations of Verbs of the first Conjugation thro' all its Moods and Tenses, so the said Difference is very considerable in the second and third Conjugations, their Verbs not keeping the same Letters as in the first, but either altogether losing or changing them. For Example, in the second Conjugation they do not only lose the last Letter *o* of the Present Indicative in the other Tenses, but also in the Imperfect and Preterperfect change the Syllable *éy* into *i*, *viz.*

Léyo, <i>I read.</i>	líá, <i>I did read.</i>	lí, <i>I have read.</i>
Créyo, <i>I believe.</i>	cría, <i>I did believe.</i>	crí, <i>I have believed.</i>

The Verb *vejo*, I see, loses the Letter *j* in most Tenses; as *via*, I did see; *vî* and *vîra*, I have and had seen; except the Present of the Optative; as *oxala véja eu*, God grant that I may see; in the third Persons Singular and Plural of the Present Imperative, as *veja elle*, let him see, and *véjam elles*, let them see, and in the Present of the Conjunctive.

Some Verbs that have *c* before *o* in the Present Indicative, change it in the other Tenses in *d*; as *perco*, I lose; *perdia*, I did lose; *perdi*, I have lost; *perdera*, or *tinha perdido*, I had lost.

The third Conjugation is of Verbs that terminate the second Person Indicative Present in *es*, but the Infinitives end in *ir*, v. g. *ouço*, I hear, *ouves*, thou hearest, *ouvir*, to hear; *finjo*, I feign, *finges*, thou feignest, *fingir*, to feign; *abro*, I open, *abres*, thou openest, *abrir*, to open.

In the Verbs of the *third Conjugation* there is to be observed a strange Mutation, even in the Present Indicative; as in the Verb *ouço*, *ouves*, *ouve*, *ouvimos*, *ouvíys*, *ouvem*. The Verb *ouço* changes its *ç* into a *v* in all the Tenses except those mention'd above in *vejo*.

The Verb *meço*, I measure, changes its *ç* into *d* in the rest of the Tenses; as *meço*, *medes*; in Imperfect *media*; in Perfect *medi*. So *peço*, I desire, pray, or beg; *pedes*, *pede*, and *pedia*, I did desire; *pedi*, I have desired.

Verbs that have a *j* before *o* in the Present Indicative, change the *j* into *g* in the other Tenses; as *finjo*, I feign; *finges*, *finge*; *fingia*, I did feign; *fingi*, I have feigned; *afflijo*, I afflict; *affliges*, *afflige*; *affigia*, I did afflict; *affligi*, I have afflicted, &c. So in the Verb *dirijo*, I direct; *frijo*, I fry; *tinjo*, I dye; *cinjo*, I gird, &c.

There are other Verbs that do not only lose the last, or change the last Vowel, but also the last but one, or the Penultima, and that in two Kinds. The first change *i* in the Penultima into *e* in the rest of the Persons and Tenses, v. g. *firo*, I strike; *feres*, *fere*, *fería*, I did strike; *ferí*, I have struck; *figo*, I follow, *segues*, *segue*; *seguía*, I did follow; *seguí*, I have followed; *miento*, I lye, *mentes*, *mentia*, I did lye; *mentí*, I have lyed. Thus *frijo*, *freges*; *cirno*, *cernes*; *sinto*, *sentes*; *persigo*, *persegues*; *sirvo*, *serves*, and the like; but they keep the Letter *i* in the third Persons Singular and Plural Present of the Imperative; as *figa* *elle* *figam* *elles*, let him follow, let them follow; and in the Present Optative in all the Persons; as *oxala* *figa* *eu*, *figas*, *figa*, &c. Also in the first Persons of the Conjunctive; as *como* *eu* *figo*, when I follow.

The second Kind are such Verbs as have an *u* in the Penultima, and in all the other Tenses and Persons change it into *o*; v. g. *bulo*, I meddle with; *boles*, *bole*; *bolía*, I did meddle with; *bolir*, to meddle with; *durmo*, I sleep, *dormes*, *dorme*; *dormía*, *dormir*; *engulo*, I swallow, *engoles*, *engole*; *engolía*, *engolir*; *sumo*, I sum, *somes*, *some*; *somía*, *somir*; *cubro*, I cover, *cobres*, *cobre*; *cobría*, *cobrir*; *subo*, I come or go up, *subes*, *sobe*; *sobía*, *sobir*; *tusso*, I cough, *tosses*, *tosse*, *tossia*, *tossir*. And thus they are easily distinguish'd from such as never lose the Vowel *u*, nor change it into *o*; as *concluo*, *conclues*, *concluir*; *grunho*, *grunhes*, *grunbir*; *zuno*, *zunes*, *zunir*. But those Verbs that change *u* into *o*, do not admit of any Change in the third Person Singular and Plural of the Present Imperative; as *bula* *ou* *suba* *elle*, *bulam* *ou* *subam* *elles*, let him or them meddle or come up: So in all Persons of the Present Optative, as *oxala* *bula*, *suba* *eu*, *bulas*, *subas* *tu*, God grant



that I or thou may or mayst meddle or come up. &c. Also in the first Persons of the Conjunctive, as *como subo*, when I go up.

The Participle of the Preterperfect Tense of the Verb Passive of the second and third Conjugation, are also subject to some Variation; for altho' they commonly end in *ido*, as *lido*, *ido*, *venido*, *corrido*, yet several end in *to*, as *feyto*, made or done, from the Verb *faço*, I make or do; *visto*, seen, from *vejo*, I see; *roto*, torn, from *rompo*; *benzo*, blessed, from *benzo*, I bless; *posto*, put, from *ponho*; *cheço*, full, from *encho*; *eléito*, chosen, from *elejo*; *dito*, said, from *digo*; *absolto*, absolved, from *absolvo*; *escrito*, written, from *escrevo*. All these are of the *second Conjugation*. Of the *third Conjugation* are the following; as *fríto*, fryed, from *frigir*; *surto*, risen, from *surgir*; *aberto*, open'd, from *abrir*; *cuberto*, cover'd, from *cobrir*; *corrêito*, corrected, from *corrigir*. The Verb *venho* and its Compounds end their Participle in *indo*; as *vindo*, come.

But it is remarkable, that but few Verbs of the second and third Conjugation equivocate with Nouns; of the second Conjugation are *corro*, I run; *como*, I eat; *sorvo*, I swallow; and *corro*, a Running, *como*, as if, *sorvo*, a Soop: And of the third *saço*, I go out; *rio*, I laugh; and *saya*, a Petticoat, and *rio*, a River, which, though they equivocate in the first Person of the Indicative Mood Present, and Singular Number, with Nouns so express'd, they are altogether different in other Persons.



C H A P. XV.

*Of the Irregular Verbs, and their Formation.*

**I**T has been already observ'd, that few or no Verbs of the first Conjugation are reputed irregular; but of the second and third there are found several. Of the *second* the Verb *sou, ser*, is accounted one, the second Present Person Indicative ending in *es*. So likewise are the Verbs *ey* and *tenho*, with all its Compounds; as *atenho, contenho, detenho, mantenho, retenho, sostenho*, and the following Verbs.

<i>Ind. Pr.</i>	<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Perf.</i>	<i>Infin.</i>
Sey,	sabia,	soube,	saber, <i>to know.</i>
Posso,	podia,	pude,	poder, <i>to be able.</i>
Quero,	queira,	quiz,	querer, <i>to desire, will or love.</i>
Faço,	fazia,	fiz,	fazer, <i>to do, make.</i>
Digo,	dizia,	dice,	dizer, <i>to say.</i>
Trago,	trazia,	trouxe,	trazer, <i>to bring.</i>

Likewise the Defective Verb

	<i>Preterp.</i>	<i>Infin.</i>
Agradame, <i>it pleaseth me,</i>	agradoume,	agradecer,
agradate, agradalhe.		

As also the Defective Verb

Soes, soe, & soem, soía, soias, soia, *as soe fazer, he is accusom'd to do.*

*Irregular Verbs belonging to the third Conjugation.*

<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Perf.</i>	<i>Infin.</i>
Cayo,	cahia,	cahi,	cahir, <i>to fall.</i>
Sayo,	sahia,	sahi,	sahir, <i>to go out.</i>
Possuo,	possuya,	possuy,	possuir, <i>to possess.</i>
Venho,	vinha,	vim,	vir, <i>to come.</i>

As

As also its Compounds, *Avenbo, antevenbo, con-venbo, intervenbo*, and the Impersonal *convém*, it behoveth; Preterperfect *convéyo*; Infinitive *convir*; it wants a Participle Perfect.

Hitherto is also referr'd the Verb *vóu*, which, as it is a very common Word, and one of the most irregular, we will conjugate it here at large.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu vou, <i>I go.</i>
	{	Tu vas, <i>thou goest.</i>
	{	Elle vay, <i>he goeth.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós vamos, <i>we go.</i>
	{	Vós vays, <i>ye go.</i>
	{	Elles vam, <i>they go.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu hia, <i>I went or did go.</i>
	{	Tu hias, <i>thou wenist or didst go.</i>
	{	Elle hia, <i>he went or did go.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós híamos, <i>we went or did go.</i>
	{	Vós híeys, <i>ye went or did go.</i>
	{	Elles híam, <i>they went or did go.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu fuy, <i>I have gone or have been.</i>
	{	Tu foste, <i>thou hast gone or hast been.</i>
	{	Elle foy, <i>he has gone or hath been.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós fomos, <i>we have gone or have been.</i>
	{	Vós fostes, <i>ye have gone or have been.</i>
	{	Elles foram, <i>they have gone or have been.</i>

*Second Preterperfect.*

Sing.	{	Eu tenho ido, <i>I have gone or have been.</i>
	{	Tu tens ido, <i>thou hast gone or hast been.</i>
	{	Elle tem ido, <i>he hath gone or hath been.</i>

Plur.

*Plur.* { Nós temos ido, *we have gone or have been.*  
 Vós tendes ido, *ye have gone or have been.*  
 Elles tem ido, *they have gone or have been.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

*Sing.* { Eu \* tinha ido, *I had gone or had been.*  
 Tu tinhas ido, *thou hadst gone or hadst been.*  
 Elle tinha ido, *he had gone or had been.*  
*Plur.* { Nós tínhamos ido, *we had gone or had been.*  
 Vós tínhes ido, *ye had gone or had been.*  
 Elles tinham ido, *they had gone or had been.*

*First Future Tense.*

*Sing.* { Eu irey, *I shall or will go.*  
 Tu iras, *thou shalt or wilt go.*  
 Elle irá, *he shall or will go.*  
*Plur.* { Nós irémos, *we shall or will go.*  
 Vós iréys, *ye shall or will go.*  
 Elles iram, *they shall or will go.*

*Second Future Tense.*

*Sing.* { Ja entam eu teréy ido, *I shall then have gone or been.*  
 Ja entam tu terás ido, *thou shalt then have gone or been.*  
 Ja entam elle terá ido, *he shall then have gone or been.*  
*Plur.* { Ja entam nós terémos ido, *we shall then have gone or been.*  
 Ja entam vós teréys ido, *ye shall then have gone or been.*  
 Ja entam elles terám ido, *they shall then have gone or been.*

\* Some conjugate the Pluperfect *fora, foras, fora, foram, fóreys, foram.*

---

Imperative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Has no first Person.*  
*Va tu, go thou.*  
*Va elle, let him go.*
- Plur.* { *Vamos nós, let us go.*  
*íde vós, go ye.*  
*Váyam elles, let them go.*

*Future Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Has no first Person.*  
*Irás tu, thou shalt go.*  
*Írá elle, he shall go.*
- Plur.* { *Irémós nós, we shall go.*  
*Íréys vós, ye shall go.*  
*Írám elles, they shall go.*
- 

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Oxala vaya eu, would to God I may go.*  
*Oxala vayas tu, would to God thou mayst go.*  
*Oxala vaya elle, would to God he may go.*
- Plur.* { *Oxala vayámos nós, would to God we may go.*  
*Oxala vávais vós, would to God ye may go.*  
*Oxala váyam elles, would to God they may go.*

*Imperfect Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Oxala fora & fosse eu, would I might go.*  
*Oxala foras & fosses tu, would thou mightst go.*  
*Oxala fora & fosse elle, would he might go.*
- Plur.* { *Oxala foramos & fóssemos nós, would we might go.*  
*Oxala fóreys & fósseys vós, would ye might go.*  
*Oxala fóram & fóssem elles, would they might go.*

*The Uncertain Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu iria, <i>I might or would go.</i>
	{	Tu irias, <i>thou mightst or wouldst go.</i>
	{	Elle iria, <i>he might or would go.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs iríamos, <i>we might or would go.</i>
	{	Vós iríeis, <i>ye might or would go.</i>
	{	Elles iriam, <i>they might or would go.</i>

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Quéryra Deos que eu tenha ido, <i>God grant that I may have gone or been.</i>
	{	Quéryra Deos que tu tenhas ido, <i>God grant that thou mayst have gone or been.</i>
	{	Quéryra Deos que elle tenha ido, <i>God grant that he may have gone or been.</i>
Plur.	{	Quéryra Deos que nós ténhamos ida, <i>God grant that we may have gone or been.</i>
	{	Quéryra Deos que vós ténhamos ida, <i>God grant that ye may have gone or been.</i>
	{	Quéryra Deos que elles ténham ido, <i>God grant that they may have gone or been.</i>

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Provéra Deos que eu tivéra, ou tivesse ido, <i>would to God I had gone or been.</i>
	{	Provéra Deos que tu tivéras, ou tivesses ido, <i>would to God that thou hadst gone or been.</i>
	{	Provéra Deos que elle tivéra, ou tivesse ido, <i>would to God that he had gone or been.</i>
Plur.	{	Provéra Deos que nós tivéramos, ou tivéssemos ido, <i>would to God that we had gone or been.</i>
	{	Provéra Deos que vós tivéreys, ou tivésseys ido, <i>would to God that ye had gone or been.</i>
	{	Provéra Deos que elles tivéram, ou tivessem, ido, <i>would to God that they had gone or been.</i>



## First Future Tense.

Sing.	Quando ou como eu for, <i>when or as I shall have gone or been.</i>
	Quando ou como tu fóres, <i>when or as thou shalt have gone or been.</i>
	Quando ou como elle for, <i>when or as he shall have gone or been.</i>
Plur.	Quando ou como nós formos, <i>when or as we shall have gone or been.</i>
	Quando ou como vós fordes, <i>when or as ye shall have gone or been.</i>
	Quando ou como elles forem, <i>when or as they shall have gone or been.</i>

## Second Future Tense.

Sing.	Como ou quando eu tiver ido, <i>when or as I shall go or shall have gone or been.</i>
	Como ou quando tu tivéres ido, <i>when or as thou shalt go or shalt have gone or been.</i>
	Como ou quando elle tiver ido, <i>when or as he shall go or shall have gone or been.</i>
Plur.	Como ou quando nós tivérmos ido, <i>when or as we shall go or shall have gone or been.</i>
	Como ou quando vós tiverdes ido, <i>when or as ye shall go or shall have gone or been.</i>
	Como ou quando elles tiverem ido, <i>when or as they shall go or shall have gone or been.</i>

## Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Ir, *to go.*

## Preterperfect Tense.

Tér ido, *to have gone.*

Future

*Future Tense.*

Tér de ir, *to go hereafter (to have, or to be to go.)*

*Gerund.*

hindo, *going.*

*Participle Present.*

O que va, *he (or one) that goes.*

*Participle Preterperfect.*

ido, *gone.*

*Participle Future.*

O que tem de ir, *he (or one) that is to go.*

We said above that there are but three Conjugations and Terminations of Verbs, in *ar*, *er*, and *ir*, which Rule is so far general, that it has but one Exception, to wit, the Verb *ponho*, in the Infinitive *pôr*, with its fourteen Compounds, *anteponho*, *postponho*, *deponho*, *componho*, *disponho*, *exponho*, *imponho*, *interponho*, *opponho*, *preponho*, *reponho*, *supponho*, *tresponho*; but as it is not worth while to make a fourth Conjugation for the Sake of one Verb, we let it pass among the Irregulars, and because it is very frequently used, we here conjugate it at Length.

*Indicative Mood. Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu ponho, <i>I put.</i>
		Tu poens, <i>thou puttest.</i>
		Elle poem, <i>he puts.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs pónhamos, <i>we put.</i>
		Vôs pónheys, <i>ye put.</i>
		Elles poem, <i>they put.</i>

*Imperfect*

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu punha, <i>I did put.</i>
		Tu punhas, <i>thou didst put.</i>
		Elle punha, <i>he did put.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs púnhamos, <i>we did put.</i>
		Vôs púnheys, <i>ye did put.</i>
		Elles púnham, <i>they did put.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu puz, <i>I put.</i>
		Tu puzéste, <i>thou puttest.</i>
		Elle poz, <i>he put.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs puzémos, <i>we put.</i>
		Vôs puzéstes, <i>ye put.</i>
		Elles puzéram, <i>they put.</i>

*Second Preterperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu tenho posto, <i>I have put.</i>
		Tu tens posto, <i>thou hast put.</i>
		Elle tem posto, <i>he hath put.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs temos posto, <i>we have put.</i>
		Vôs tendes posto, <i>ye have put.</i>
		Elles tem posto, <i>they have put.</i>

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu * tinha posto, <i>I had put.</i>
		Tu tinhas posto, <i>thou hadst put.</i>
		Elle tinha posto, <i>he had put.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs tínhamos posto, <i>we had put.</i>
		Vós tínheys posto, <i>ye had put.</i>
		Elles tinham posto, <i>they had put.</i>

*First Future.*

Sing.	{	Eu póréy, <i>I shall or will put.</i>
		Tu porás, <i>thou shalt or wilt put.</i>
		Elle porá, <i>he shall or will put.</i>

\* Some conjugate the Preterpluperfect *puzéra, puzéras, puzéria; puzéramos, puzéreys, puzéram.*

Plur.

Plur. { Nô's porémos, *we shall or will put.*  
 { Vôs poréys, *ye shall or will put.*  
 { Elles porám, *they shall or will put.*

*Second Future.*

Sing. { Eu terey posto, *I shall have put.*  
 { Tu teras posto, *thou shalt have put.*  
 { Elle terá posto, *he shall have put.*  
 Plur. { Nô's terémos posto, *we shall have put.*  
 { Vôs, teréys posto, *ye shall have put.*  
 { Elles terám posto, *they shall have put.*

*Imperative Mood. First Tense.*

Sing. { Has no first Person.  
 { Póem tu, *put thou.*  
 { Pónha elle, *let him put.*  
 Plur. { Ponhámos nô's, *let us put.*  
 { Ponháys vôs, *put ye.*  
 { Pónham elles, *let them put.*

*Second Tense.*

Sing. { Has no first Person.  
 { Porás tu, *thou shalt put.*  
 { Porà elle, *he shall put.*  
 Plur. { Poremos nô's, *we shall put.*  
 { Poreys vôs, *ye shall put.*  
 { Poram elles, *they shall put.*

*Optative and Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.*

Sing. { Oxala pona eu, *would to God that I may put.*  
 { Oxala ponas tu, *would to God that thou mayst*  
     *put.*  
 { Oxala ponha elle, *would to God that he may put.*

- Plur.* { Oxala ponhâmos nôs, *would to God that we may put.*  
 Oxala pônhay's vôs, *would to God that ye may put.*  
 Oxala ponam elles, *would to God that they may put.*

*Imperfect Tense.*

- Sing.* { Oxala puzéra ou puzesse eu, *would to God I did put.*  
 Oxala puzéras ou puzesses tu, *would to God thou didst put.*  
 Oxala puzéra ou puzesse elle, *would to God he did put.*
- Plur.* { Oxala puzéramos ou puzéssêmos nôs, *would to God we did put.*  
 Oxala puzéreis ou puzéssêis vôs, *would to God ye did put.*  
 Oxala puzeram ou puzessêem elles, *would to God they did put.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

- Sing.* { Quéyra Deos que tenha eu posto, *God grant I have or may have put.*  
 Quéyra Deos que tenhas tu posto, *God grant thou hast or mayst have put.*  
 Quéyra Deos que tenha elle posto, *God grant he has or may have put.*
- Plur.* { Quéyra Deos que ténhâmos nôs posto, *God grant we have or may have put.*  
 Quéyra Deos que ténhay's vôs posto, *God grant ye have or may have put.*  
 Quéyra Deos que ténham elles posto, *God grant they have or may have put.*

*Preterpluperfect*



*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivesse eu posto, <i>would to God I had put.</i>
	{	Prouvéra Deos que tiveras ou tivessees tu posto, <i>would to God thou hadst put.</i>
	{	Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivesse elle posto, <i>would to God he had put.</i>
Plur.	{	Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos ou tivéssemos, <i>nôs posto, would to God we had put.</i>
	{	Prouvéra Deos que tivéreys ou tivésseis vós posto, <i>would to God ye had put.</i>
	{	Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tivéssem elles posto, <i>would to God they had put.</i>

*First Future Tense.*

Sing.	{	Quando eu puzer, <i>when I shall put.</i>
	{	Quando tu puzeres, <i>when thou shalt put.</i>
	{	Quando elle puzer, <i>when he shall put.</i>
Plur.	{	Quando nôs puzermos, <i>when we shall put.</i>
	{	Quando vós puzerdes, <i>when ye shall put.</i>
	{	Quando elles puzerem, <i>when they shall put.</i>

*Second Future Tense.*

Sing.	{	Quando eu tivér posto, <i>when I shall have put.</i>
	{	Quando tu tivéres posto, <i>when thou shalt have put.</i>
	{	Quando elle tivér posto, <i>when he shall have put.</i>
Plur.	{	Quando nôs tivérmos posto, <i>when we shall have put.</i>
	{	Quando vós tivérdes posto, <i>when ye shall have put.</i>
	{	Quando elles tivérem posto, <i>when they shall have put.</i>

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*

Pór, *to put.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Ter posto, *to have put.*

*Future Tense.*

Ter de pór, *to (be to put) put hereafter.*

*Gerund.*

Pondo, *in putting.*

*Participle Present.*

O que poem, *one (he) that puts.*

*Participle Preterperfect.*

Posto, *put.*

*Participle Future.*

O que tem de pór, *one (he) that is to put.*

## C H A P. XVI.

### *Of the Reciprocal Verbs.*

**R**eciprocal Verbs are called those that have in all their Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons, join'd to them the Pronouns *me, te, se, nós, vós, fe, me, thee, him or herself, us, you, and themselves*; as *eu me queixo*, I complain; *tu te queixavas*, thou didst complain; *elle se queixou*, he complained; *nós nós tínhamos queixado*, we did complain; *vós vós queixaréis*, you will complain; *elles se quexáram*, they shall or will complain.

Of

Of the same Kind are the Verbs *irarse* and *agastarse*, to grow angry; *deitarse*, to lie down; *desconfiar-se*, to mistrust; *lembrarse*, to remember; *arrepender-se*, to repent; *acentar-se*, to sit down, &c. which are also reciprocal in the *Italian*, *French*, and *Spanish* Languages, except *irarse*, to grow angry, which is in the *Italian* *andar in colera*, and *acentarse*, in *Italian* *sedere*.

The Pronoun stands before these Verbs in the Indicative and Subjunctive Moods, but in the Imperative and Infinitive behind them.

As these Verbs do not differ from the others in their Conjugations, we shall only set down here one Example to shew how they are handled.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu me acento, <i>I sit down.</i>
	{	Tu te acentas, <i>thou sittest down.</i>
	{	Elle se acenta, <i>he sits down.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs nôs acéntamos, <i>we sit down.</i>
	{	Vôs vôs acéntays, <i>ye sit down.</i>
	{	Elles se acéntam, <i>they sit down.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu me acentava, <i>I did sit down.</i>
	{	Tu te acentavas, <i>thou didst sit down.</i>
	{	Elle se acentava, <i>he did sit down.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs nôs acentavamos, <i>we did sit down.</i>
	{	Vôs vôs acentáveys, <i>ye did sit down.</i>
	{	Elles se acentávam, <i>they did sit down.</i>

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

Eu me acentéy, *I sat down.*

*Second Preterperfect Tense.*

Eu me tenho acentado, *I have sat down.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

*Eu me acentára ou tinha acentado, I had sat down.*

*First Future.*

*Eu me acenterey, I will sit down.*

*Second Future.*

*Ja entam eu me terey acentado, I shall then have sat down.*

*Imperative Mood. First Tense.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{	<i>Has no first Person.</i>
		<i>Acéntate, sit thou down.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	<i>Acéntẽ se elle, let him sit down.</i>
		<i>Acentémos nós, let us sit down.</i>
		<i>Acentávõs, sit ye down.</i>
		<i>Acéntem se elles, let them sit down.</i>

*Second Tense.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{	<i>Has no first Person.</i>
		<i>Acentaraste, thou shalt sit down.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	<i>Acentarase elle, he shall sit down.</i>
		<i>Acentarémos nós, we shall sit down.</i>
		<i>Acentaréys vós, ye shall sit down.</i>
		<i>Acentarámse elles, they shall sit down.</i>

*Optative or Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.*

*Oxala eu me acente, would I may sit down.*

*Imperfect Tense.*

*Oxala eu me acentára ou assentasse, would I might sit down.*

*Uncertain Tense.*

*Eu me acentaria, I might or could sit down.*

*Preter-*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Quera Deos eu me tenha acentado, *please God I may have sat down.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

Praça a Deos eu me tivera ou tivesse acentado, *please God or wish to God I had sat down.*

*First Future Tense.*

Como ou quando eu me acentar, *as or when I shall sit down.*

*Second Future Tense.*

Quando eu me tiver acentado, *when I shall have sat down.*

*Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.*

Acentarse, *to sit down.*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

Terse acentado, *to have sat down.*

*Gerund.*

Acentando se, ou em acentar se, *in sitting down.*

*Participle Present.*

O que se acenta, *he (or one) that sits down.*

*Participle Preterperfect.*

Acentado, *sat down.*

*Participle Future.*

O que ha ou tem dácentarse, *one (or he) that is to sit down.*

☞ Observe, that all Verbs Active may be made reciprocal.



As for Example, you may say,

Sing.	{	Eu me amo, <i>I love myself.</i>
		Tu te amas, <i>thou lovest thyself.</i>
		Elle se ama, <i>he loveth himself.</i>
Plur.	{	Nôs nôs amamos, <i>we love ourselves.</i>
		Vôs vós amays, <i>ye love yourselves.</i>
		Elles se amam, <i>they love themselves.</i>

And so in all the other Tenses.

### Of the Impersonal Verbs.

There are three Sorts of Impersonal Verbs that have but the third Person in Singular.

The first are those that are properly impersonal of themselves, and require no Pronoun with 'em; as,

He mester, *it is necessary.*

Chove, *it rains.*

Trovoa, *it thunders.*

Pedrisca, *it hails.*

Neva, *it snows.*

The second come from the Verbs Active, and are accompanied by the Particle *se*, which renders them impersonal, and gives them a Passive Signification, as *se diz*, it is said; *se cré*, it is believed; *se escreve*, it is wrote, which answers to the French Expression, *on dit*, *on croit*, *on écrit*: This Way of expressing themselves is very common to the Portuguese and Spaniards.

The third Sort resemble the Reciprocal Verbs, and are joined with the Pronouns, *me*, *te*, *se*, *lbe*, *nôs*, *vos*, *je*, *vos*. Such are *a mim me succede*, it happens to me; *a mim me basta*, it is enough for me; *a mim me parece*, it seems to me.

*Note*, These are also often used like those of the first Order.

✎ The

☞ The Verb *da*, he or it gives, is also often used as an Impersonal of this Class; for when they would say, I do not fancy this, or this doth not please me, they express it *nam se me da disto*, or he doth not fancy it, *nam se lbe da disto*.

The first is conjugated through all or most of the Tenses and Moods, but only in the third Person, and can never have any Person joined to it; as,

*Indic. Pres.* Trovoa, *it thunders.*  
*Imperfect.* Trovoava, *it did thunder.*  
*Preterperfect.* Trovoau, *it has thundered.*

The Word *he mester*, it is necessary, is conjugated by changing the Verb *ey*, or third Person *be*, through all the Tenses and Moods, the Word *mester* remaining inflexible; as,

*Indic. Pres.* He mester, *it is necessary.*  
*Imperfect.* Avia mester, *it was necessary.*  
*Preterperfect.* Ouve mester, *it has been necessary.*

The second Sort, which are accompanied by the Particle *se*, are also sometimes expressed by the third Person in Plural, without the Pronoun *se*; as *dizem, escrevem, lêem*, they say, they write, they read, which is the same Sense as it is said, it is wrote, it is read; as *se diz que este homem he muito rico*, it is said that this Man is very rich; and *dizem que este homem he muito rico*, they say that this Man is very rich.

The third Sort of the Impersonal Verbs are those which are conjugated with the Pronouns *me, te, se, lbe, nós, vós, se lbes*. Example,

Indicative

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	A mim me parece, <i>it seems to me.</i>
		A ti te parece, <i>it seems to thee.</i>
		A elle lhe parece, <i>it seems to him.</i>
Plur.	{	A nós nós parece, <i>it seems to us.</i>
		A vós vós parece, <i>it seems to you.</i>
		A elles lhes parece, <i>it seems to them.</i>

*Imperfect Tense.*

A mim me parecia, *it did seem to me.*

*First Preterperfect Tense.*

A mim me pareceo, *it seemed to me.*

*Second Preterperfect Tense.*

A mim me ha parecido, *it has seemed to me.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

A mim me avia parecido, *it had seemed to me.*

*First Future.*

A mim me parecerá, *it will seem to me.*

*Second Future.*

A mim me avera parecido, *it will have seemed to me.*

---

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Oxala a mim me pareça, *would it may seem to me.*

*Imperfect Tense.*

Oxala a mim me parecera ou parecesse, *would it might seem to me.*

*Uncertain Tense.*

A mim me pareceria, *it would, could, or might seem to me.*

*Preterperfect*

*Preterperfect Tense.*

*Oxala a mim me aja parecido, would it may have seemed to me.*

*Preterpluperfect Tense.*

*Oxala ou prouvera a Deos a mim me ouvera ou ouvesse parecido, would or please God it had seemed to me.*

*First Future.*

*Quando ou como a mim me parecer, when or as to me it shall seem.*

*Second Future.*

*Como ou quando a mim me ouvêra parecido, as or when to me it shall have seemed.*

*Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.*

*Parecer, to seem.*

*Participle Present.*

*Parecido, seemed, &c.*

Verbs of this Order are also, *a mim me sucede*, it happens to me; *a mim me discontenta*, it displeases me; *a mim me agrada*, and *a mim me contenta*, it pleases me; *a mim me pesa*, I am sorry; and many others, which the Reader, by the Help of the above Observations, will easily discover.

The Verb *ha*, he, she, or it has, in the third Person Singular of the Indicative Present serves likewise often for an impersonal Verb, and is joined with Nouns both in the Singular and Plural Number, in the same Manner as the *French* use their *il y a*; and as they say, *il y a un homme*, and *il y a plusieurs hommes*, so the *Portuguese* say likewise, *ha hum homem*, and *ha muitos homens*, there is

is one Man, and there are many Men; and *avera* *hum* *homem*, & *avera* *múitos* *homens*, there will be one Man, and there will be many Men; which Way of expressing themselves is also usual in the Spanish Language.

☞ Observe, that the Portuguese, both for Elegancy of Sound, and Conciseness of Expression, join to their Verbs the following Particles, *me*, *te*, *se*, *lhe*, me, thee, him; *nós*, *vós*, *lbs*, us, you, them: Also *mó*, *tó*, *lbó*, contracted from *me o*, *te o*, *lhe o*, it to me, it to thee, it to him or her; also *má*, *tá*, *lbá*, her to me, her to thee, her to him; and in Plural *mós*, *tós*, *lbós*, *más*, *tás*, *lbás*, them to me, them to thee, them to them.

Also *nólo*, *vólo*, from *nós o*, *vós o*, it to us, it to you, and *nóla*, *vóla*; *nólos*, *volos*; *nolas*, *volas*, her to us, her to you, them to us, them to you.

The Articles *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, are likewise joined to the End of Verbs, as in the Gerund *sendoo*, *sendoa*, he or it being, she being; and in Plural *sendoos*, *sendoas*, they being; *amandoo*, *amandoa*; *lendoo*, *lendóa*; *amandoos*, *amandoas*; *lendoos*, *lendoas*, &c. But when the Articles *o*, *a*, are joined to a Verb in the Infinitive Present, the *r* is changed into a *ll*; as *amallo*, *amalla*, to love him, it, or her; *dallo*, *dalla*, &c.

The following Example may serve to illustrate these Difficulties.

*A presente e para referir-lhe, que tenho comprado o relógio de prata, por 8 libras Estarlina. Eu vi dous outros d'ouro, bem condicionados, mas não podrey procurarlhos pelo preço que aponta; sem embargo disto offreceo-me por 20 Guineas cada hum, &c.* The Present is to advise you, that I have bought the Silver



Silver Watch for 8*l.* Sterling. I have seen two others of Gold, well conditioned, but I shall not be able to procure them you for the Price you appoint; however, he has offered them to me for 20 Guineas each.

*Elle não quer dárnolo, dárvolo, dárnola, dárvola, dárnoles, dárvolos, dárvolas, por esse dinbeiro, he will not give it us, give it you, give them to us, give them to you, for that Money.*



T H E  
S Y N T A X.

*Some General Remarks.*

**T**HE Word *Syntax* comes from the *Greek* συντάσσειν, I put in order, and therefore whatever Observations or Rules contribute towards a just Use and Disposition of all the Parts of Speech, belong properly under this Head.

The Construction or Composition of Words into Sentences, is divided into Common and Figurative. The Common is that which we use in common Discourse. By conversing with Men who speak a Language correctly, we may learn to speak Grammatically true, and arrive to such a Nicety, that the Ear shall be shocked to hear any one speak against the Rules of Grammar, though we cannot give any Reason for our Dislike : For Example, if one was to say *many People has been*, &c. or *Yesterday will be a fine Day*, there is hardly a Peasant who would not find fault with it, though he were not able to shew the Solécism. The Figurative deviates somewhat from the common Way of expressing one's Thoughts, and is used by Authors for Conciseness or Elegancy.

Three Things are chiefly to be observed in the *Syntax* ; the first, that the Adjective, Pronoun, and Participle are never applied in Speech without a Noun Substantive expressed or understood, with which it must agree in Gender, Number, and Case. Thus when the Noun Substantive is of the Masculine Gender, and in Nominative Singular,

Singular, the Noun Adjective and Pronoun must be joined to it in the same Order, as *este homem he muy caritativo*, this Man is very charitable; and in Plural, *estes homens sam muy caritativos*: Example of the Feminine, *essa moça he fermosa*, that young Woman is handsome; *essas moças sam fermosas*, those young Women are handsome.

The second, that the Verb may be placed in the due Tense, and, always fitted in Person and Number to the Nominative or Person it speaks of; as *estes homens*, these Men, the Pronoun standing in Plural, and being of the third Person, the Verb to be joined with it must also be of the third Person Plural, and therefore you are to say, *estes homens sam*, these Men they are; and not *estes homens soys*, these Men ye are, or *estes homens he*, these Men is.

Thirdly, the Relative ought always to correspond with the Antecedent Noun in Gender and Number, as *o livro, nó qual tenho lido*, the Book in which I have read; and not *o livro ná qual*, &c. *livro* the Noun to which *nó qual* refers being Masculine. As *ciudades as quáys sam destróidas*, the Cities which are destroyed; and not *as cidades os quáys*, nor *ciudades a qual*; *ciudades* being of the Feminine Gender and in Plural Number, with which the Relative *as quáys* ought to agree.

These three are the fundamental Rules of the Syntax, which being well fixed in the Learner's Mind, the rest will seem very easy to him.

## C H A P. I.

### *Of the Genders.*

THE Genders of all Nouns in this Language are reputed only to be two, as Masculine and Feminine, which are known by the Articles *o* & *a*, *dó* & *dá*. There is also a Neuter Gender used

used sometimes in the Article *o*, and the Pronouns *isso* and *aquillo*, as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar; and some Words partaking both of the Masculine and Feminine Gender are said to be of the Common Gender.

The Particles *o* and *ao*, or *as* and *aos* preceding any Noun, it is a certain Sign of its being of the Masculine Gender; and *a*, *á*, & *as* & *ás*, denote the Feminine.

Observe, the Letter *a* is sometimes found before *e* Masculine, as *convem á Pedro*, it behoveth *Peter*; *elle matou a seu irmão*, he has killed his Brother; of which see the Article Indefinite.

The following Rules may serve to distinguish the Genders of the Nouns Substantive by their Signification.

It is a general Rule, though not without Exceptions, that those which end in *o* are of the Masculine, and those in *a* of the Feminine Gender.

All proper Names of Men are of the Masculine Gender; also all Names of Angels, all the Heathen Gods, the Names of the Winds; all Titles, as *Emperador*, *Rey*, *Principe*, &c. the Names of Trades, as *alfayate*, a Taylor; *çapatéyro*, a Shoemaker; *tavernéyro*, a Vintner, or Tavern-keeper; all the Names of the Months. Of the Feminine Gender are all Women's Names, as *Maria*, *Anna*, *Catherina*, &c. all Heathen Goddesses; also the Names of Nymphs, and Names of Dignity, as *Emperatríz*, and whatsoever other Nouns concern the Feminine Sex. All the Names of Islands, Provinces, Cities, Villages, Ships, &c. ending in *a* are of the Feminine Gender; also all Names of Fruits, Trees, and Flowers, terminating in *a*. Those that are not comprehended in these Rules, are best learnt from Observation; too many Rules commonly serving rather to embroil than instruct a Beginner.



Observations how to know the Genders of Nouns  
Substantive by their Terminations.

1. Nouns ending in *a* or *ã* are Feminine, whether Proper or Common, as *Maria*, *Roma*, *França*, &c. *Poesia*, *Villa*, *Musica*, *Romã*, *Maçã*, *Avellã*, *Mary*, *Rome*, *France*, *Poetry*, a *Town*, *Musical*, a *Pomegranate*, an *Apple*, a *Small-nut*. Except such Names as denote a manly Office; as *mariola*, a *Porter*, *mestrescola*, a *School-master*, and *Surnames*, and the Word *dia*, a *Day*; also several Words derived from the *Greek* and *Latin*, as *clima*, *fantasma*, *poema*, *epigramma*, *enigma*, *diadema*, *dilemma*, *estrategema*, *cometa*, *planeta*, which are all of the *Masculine Gender*. The Word *cada*, every, is adapted to both Genders; as *cada homem*, *cada mulher*, every *Man*, every *Woman*.

2. Nouns ending in *é* are *Masculine*, as the Proper, *Dunquerque*, *Albuquerque*; Common, as *barrete*, a *Cap*; *sinete*, a *Seal*; *capote*, a *Cloak*; *vinagre*, *Vinegar*; *azéite*, *Oil*, &c. But this Rule has the following Exceptions; first, all Names of *Virtues*, *Vices*, *Faculties* and *Passions* of the *Mind* are of the *Feminine Gender*, as *virtude*, *santidade*, *bondade*, *fé*, *Virtue*, *Holiness*, *Goodness*, *Faith*; *inimizade*, *ociosidade*, *vaidade*, *menenice*, *morosidade*, *borachisse*, *vontade*, &c. *Enmity*, *Idleness*, *Vanity*, *Childishness*, *Moroseness*, *Drunkenness*, *Will*, &c. Secondly, the following are also of the *Feminine Kind*; as *idade*, *Age*; *velhice*, *old Age*; *rusticidade*, *Rusticity*; *capacidade*, *Capacity*; *felicidade*, *Felicity*; *sorte*, *Fortune*; *morte*, *Death*; *arte*, *Art*; *parte*, *Part*; *árvore*, a *Tree*; *ave*, a *Bird*; *carne*, *Flesh*; *fertilidade*, *Fertility*; *sede*, *Thirst*; *sebe*, a *Hedge*; *cóuve*, *Cabbage*; *erdade*, *Inheritance*; *trindade*, *Trinity*; *chaminé*, *Chimney*; *pareda*, a *Wall*; *saúde*, *Health*; *rede*, a *Net*; *maré*,  
I the



the Tide; *chave*, a Key; *trempe*, a Trivet; *lebre*, a Hare; *febre*, Fever; *serpente*, a Serpent; *galé*, a Galley.

3. All Words ending in *i* are Masculine; as *nebrí*, a Hawk; *biberiquí*, a Gimblet, &c.

4. Words ending in *o* are Masculine; except some few, as *náo*, a Ship; *filbó*, a thin Cake, a Pancake; *gyro*, an Eel; *mó*, a Mill, &c.

5. All Words ending in *u* are Masculine; as *bambú*, *perú*, *mú*, *groú*, a Cane, a Turkey, a Mule, a Crane.

6. All Words ending in *al*, *el*, *il*, *ol*, *ul*, are Masculine.

7. All Words ending in *am* are Masculine; as *pam*, *melam*, *roupam*, *trovam*, &c. except *mam* and *cozam*, and some Words derived from the *Latin*, denoting an Action, viz. *perseyçám*, *exaggeraçám*, *composiçám*, *declaraçám*, *recreaçám*, &c.

8. Words in *em* are Masculine; as *péntem*, *bo-dém*, *armazem*, *homem*, &c. except *órdem*, *ádem*, *virgem*; and Words ending in *agem*, which are Feminine, as *ervagem*, *imagem*, *viagem*, &c.

Note, The Word *Salvagem* is of both Genders; thus you say, *varám salvagem*, and *mulher salvagem*, a wild Man, a wild Woman.

9. All Words ending in *im*, *om*, *um*, are Masculine, as *fin*, *espadím*, *tom*, *soim*, *attúm*, *dobrúm*, &c.

10. Words in *ar*, *er*, *ir*, *or*, *ur*, are Masculine; as *néctar*, *polegár*, *alvanír*, *prazer*, *ophir*, *mártyr*, *açór*, *caçadór*, *catur*; except *colhér*, *mulher*, *flor*, *dor*, *cor*.

11. All Words ending in *as* are Feminine, e. g. *úndas*, a Litter; *cálças*, Breeches; *álças*, a Fee or Advance in Rent; *cócegas*, Tickling, &c. all which Words are writ in the Plural, but have a singular Signification.

12. All

12. All Words in *es, is, os, us*, whether Singular or Plural, are Masculine, *v. g. alfêres, dátiles, gis, calções, óculos*, an Ensign, Dates, Chalk, Breeches, Spectacles, &c.

13. Words in *az, ez, iz, oz, uz*, are Masculine, except *paz, torquez, rez, tez, fez, vez; aboiz, perdiz, codorniz, raiz, matriz; noz, foz, voz; luz, cruz*, which are Feminine; the Word *apprendiz*, an Apprentice, is common to both Genders.

*Note*, Words ending in *i* are more or less as many Masculines as Feminines; as *réy, páy, bóy*, Masculine, and *máy, léy, gréy*, &c. Feminine.

Observe also, that the Epicene Gender, expressing both Sexes at once, is not wanting here; as *pulga, piolho, mosca, mosquito, minboca*, &c.

The Nouns Adjective ending in *o* are of the Masculine, and those in *a* of the Feminine Gender; of the Masculine Gender are also those terminating in *u*; as *cru, crúa*, crude, raw; *nú, núa*, naked; and in *um*, as *hum, huma; comum, comúa*, &c.

Those that terminate in *al, el, il, az, iz, oz, es*, and in *e*, are both of the Masculine and Feminine Gender.

The Pronouns Adjective have three Genders, as we observed above, *viz.* Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter; as *aquelle, aquella*, and *aquillo*, that Man or Woman, and that Thing; so *este, esse, esta, essa, isto, isso*, this, that; where note, the *e* in the Neuter is turned into *i*; as *aquelle, aquillo; este, isto; esse, isso*.

But the Genders of the Pronouns appear plain enough in the Chapter of Pronouns, to which I refer the Reader.

## C H A P. II.

*Of the Definite and Indefinite Articles.*

**T**H E R E are two Sorts of Articles, the Definite and Indefinite. The Definite marks the Gender, Number, and Case of the Noun it goes before; as *o homem, dó homem, ao homem, os homens, dós homens, aos homens; a mulher, dá mulher, à mulher; as mulheres, das mulheres, às mulheres*; the Articles *o, dó, ao, os, dós, aos; a, dá, à, as, das, às*, are here the Definite Articles, because they point out the Masculine or Feminine Gender, and the Singular or Plural Numbers.

The Definite Article has six Cases, *viz. Nominative, Genitive, Dative, Accusative, Vocative, Ablative*, and is declined as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar.

This Article is made use of, 1<sup>st</sup>, to specify a particular Person; as *o Rey manda aos subditos*, the King commands the Subjects.

2. It is applicable to a whole Species; as *os homens são fortes*, Men are strong; *o leão he feroz*, the Lion is fierce.

3. It is always put before God when the Word *Déus* has any Attribute joined to it; as *o Déus de misericórdia*, the God of Mercy.

4. It is joined with a Title to distinguish a Person; as *minha senhora a Princesa de, &c.* my Lady the Princess of, &c.

5. All Nouns Substantive common demand this Article; as *a casa, a terra, a mesa, o livro, o vinho, o leite, o fogo, a lua, o sol, &c.*

6. It is put before the Names of Countries, Rivers, and the Months; as *a França, o Portugal,*

gal, a Inglaterra, a Tamisa, o Tejo, o mes de Março, o mes de Junho, &c.

7. It is put before any Epithet; as *Judas o traidor*, Judas the Traytor.

8. The Superlative Degree of Adjectives requires also this Article; as *o principe Eugenio he o melhor general de todos*, Prince Eugene is the best General of all.

9. The Pronouns Possessive, *meu, teu, seu, nosso* and *vosso*, and the Relatives *hum, outro, qual*, require the Definite Article; as *elle he tu inimigo e o meu tambem*, he is thy Enemy and mine likewise; *o hum he mais sabio dó que o outro*, one is more learned than the other; *meu livro o qual*, my Book which, &c. All the other Pronouns are joined with the Indefinite Article.

✎ Observe here, that the Indefinite Article is also joined with *meu, tu, seu, nosso, vosso*, &c. when they stand between two Nouns Substantive, the latter of which stands in the Genitive Case; as *essa he casa de meu irmão*, that is my Brother's House; *em satisfação de seus pecados*, in Satisfaction of his Sins; *tu não conheces os livros de nosso pay*, thou dost not know the Books of our Father, (our Father's Books).

10. This Article is joined to the Infinitive of a Verb when it is taken in the Sense of a Noun; as *o ler nam he difficuloso*, reading is not difficult.

Observe, no Article is required when a Preposition is joined with the Noun; as *servia com ardór*, to serve with Warmth; *obrar por dinheiro*, to work for Money.

### The Indefinite Articles

Are *de* and *a*; *de* may be placed before the Masculine as well as the Feminine Gender; as



*hum arratel de pam*, a Pound of Bread, and *hum arratel de carne*, a Pound of Flesh.

This Article is also put before the Singular and Plural promiscuously; as *hum arratel de ceréjas*, a Pound of Cherries; *hum numero de mulheres*, a Number of Women.

In the same Manner the Article *a* serves for the Masculine and Feminine Gender, and the Singular and Plural Numbers; as *isto nam se diz á meninos*, that is not said to Children, and *isto se ha de fazer á mulheres*, that must be done to Women.

This Article has but four Cases, *viz.* Genitive, Dative, Accusative, and Ablative, *de, a, a, & de.*

☞ It is necessary here to observe, that the *Portuguese*, as well as the *Spaniards*, join this Article to the Pronouns and Nouns of an indefinite Signification in the Accusative Case, which Beginners are often perplexed at, especially those who know *French* or *Italian*, which two Languages admit of no Article in that Case. In the following Examples you will find it joined with the Accusative Case, *viz.* *o reo com as mãos atadas fez a sua confissão*, the Guilty with his Hands tied made his Confession; *perguntey a estes homens*, I have asked these Men; *perguntey a estas mulheres*, I have asked those Women; *perguntey a Joam que horas são*, I have asked John what a Clock it is; *os Espanboys combatéram a Napolis*, the Spaniards have fought against Napolis. (See Chap. V. of the *Articles*, &c.)

By the Help of these short Rules I hope it will be easy to distinguish which of the two Sorts of Articles should be applied, *viz.* When a particular Person or Thing is spoke of and pointed out, then the Definite Article takes place; but when the Subject spoke of is not pointed out, but left in a  
general



general Sense, then the Article Indefinite obtains; as when you say, *hum arratel de pam*, a Pound of Bread, you do not determine which or whose Bread it is, therefore the Indefinite Article is applied; but when you say *a Pound of my Father's Bread*, then you point out whose Bread it is, and cause the Word Bread to obtain a determined or definite Sense; wherefore the Definite Article must be made use of, and you say *hum arratel dó pam de meu pay*, and not *hum arratel de pam de meu pay*.

To know the Cases by the Particles and Prepositions, we must have Regard to the Variety of Cases which these Articles govern. The Article *a* serves sometimes the Nominative, Dative, and Accusative Case; as when we say *a casa he ferosa*, the House is beautiful, which is the Nominative; and *ir à casa*, to go home, which is the Accusative; and *conven à casa*, it is convenient for the House, which is the Dative Case.

When the Particle *de* is joined with the Pronouns *este, esta, essa, isto, isso*, as *déste, désta, dísto, dísto*, it sometimes stands in the Genitive, sometimes in the Ablative Case; but the Particle *n*, as *néste, nésta, nísto, néste*, &c. always denotes the Ablative. See the *Propositions*.

The Particles *lho* and *lha* are often joined to Verbs to signify the Words *it, him*, and is a Contraction of the Article *o, a*, and the Pronoun *elle*; thus they say, *doulho de graça*, I give it him freely, and *doulha* (i. e. *couça*) *de graça*, I give it (i. e. that Thing) him freely; the Articles *o* and *a* stand here in the Accusative.

The Particles *de* and *da*, and *dó*, sometimes denote the Genitive and sometimes the Ablative Case, e. g. *parte dá casa*, Part of the House, being the Genitive; and *venho de or dá casa de Pedro*, I come from Peter's House, which is the Ablative;

tive; as also *venho do Templo*, I come from the Church, Ablative.

The Particle or Preposition *pera* is sometimes related to the Accusative, and sometimes to the Dative Case, v. g. *vou pera casa*, I go home, Accusative; and *pera minha casa basta isto*, this is sufficient for my House, which is the Dative.

The Particles *em*, *ná*, *nó*, *com*, *sem*, always denote the Ablative Case in both Numbers, v. g. *estou em casa*, or *ná casa de Pedro*, I am in the House of Peter; *estou com casa*, & *com armazem ou sem casa*, *sem armazem de Pedro*, I am with or without the House or Furniture of Peter, Ablative.

The Particle *ao* sometimes serves the Dative, and sometimes the Accusative Case, e. g. Dative, *convem ao Templo estar ornado*, it is convenient that a Church be adorned; Accusative, *vou ao Templo de*, &c. I go to the Church of, &c. *Vid.* the Chapter of the *Prepositions*.

### C H A P. III.

#### *Of the Use and Concordance of Nouns.*

**A**S Nouns are reckoned the first in the Parts of Speech, therefore I shall begin with them, and explain what is necessary to know concerning them.

It is a general Rule, both in the *Portuguese* as well as in the *Latin*, that the Noun Adjective must ever agree with the Substantive in Gender, Number and Case, without Exception; as *bom livro*, a good Book; *bua mulher má*, a bad Wife or Woman; *homens discretos*, discreet Men\*. And here observe, the Noun Adjective is commonly placed after the Noun Substantive.

\* See p. 110, 111.

Remarks on the Comparisons of Adjectives.

The Force of the Comparison lies often in the Particle *que*, as indeed it doth in the *Latin*, and the Languages derived from it; the *Latin* has *quam*, the *Italian* *di*, the *Spanish* *que*, the *Portuguese* *que*, the *French* *que*, the *English* *than*. As for Example, *o vinho he melhor que a cerveja*, Wine is better *than* Beer; *a peste he peór que a sarna*, the Plague is worse *than* the Itch.

You also make Comparisons with the Adverbs *máis* and *ménos*; as *meu cavallo he mais alto que o teu*, my Horse is higher than yours (thine.)

The Superlative is often formed, as in *Latin*, by adding *issimus*; as *excellens*, *excellentissimus*, *Lat.* So the *Portuguese* say *excellentissimo*, *generosissimo*, &c. but it is oftner express'd by putting the Article *o* and *a* before the Sign of the Comparative Degree; as *o Rey d'Inglaterra he hum principe o mais poderoso*, &c. the King of England is the most powerful Prince, &c. *esta Senhora he a mais bella mulher do mundo*, this Lady is the finest Woman in the World. (*vid. p. 29.*)

Observations on the Nouns of Numbers.

All Numbers are distributed into four Classes; the first is what we call Cardinal or Principal; as *hum, dous, tres, quatro, dez, vinte, trinta, quarenta, cincoenta, cem, mil*, &c. one, two, three, four, ten, twenty, thirty, forty, fifty, hundred, a thousand.

Those of the second Order are called Ordinals; as *priméiro, segundo, tercéiro, quarto, quinto, sexto, decimo, vintéino, centesimo, milésimo*, &c. the first, the second, the third, the fourth, the fifth, the sixth, the tenth, the twentieth, the hundredth, the thousandth, &c.

The

The third Class contains the Collectives ; as *buma duzia*, *buma vintéina*, &c. a Dozen, a Score.

The fourth Class are Numbers which mark an Augmentation ; as *o dobro*, the Double, &c.

Though all these Nouns of Numbers are Adjectives in their Nature, yet there are some which don't vary their Termination, that is to say, from one, *bum*, *buma*, and in the Plural *buns*, *bumas*, some ; and *dous*, *douas*, two, to *duzentos*, *duzentas*, two hundred ; *trecentos*, *trecentas*, three hundred, &c. which again have the Feminine Termination ; as *duzentos homens*, & *duzentas mulheres*, two hundred Men and two hundred Women.

## C H A P. IV.

### *Of the Pronouns.*

**T**HE Pronouns having the second Place allotted them in the Parts of Speech in all Grammars, I shall treat of them next after the Noun, and first consider the *Pronoun Personal*, of which there are three Sorts, *viz.* of the first, second, and third Person.

☞ Some Grammarians distinguish the Pronouns into Substantives and Adjectives. The Pronouns Substantive are *eu* I, *tu* thou, and *si* himself, and all the rest they call Adjectives ; but for Method's Sake we shall treat of them in the following Order.

The Pronoun Personal of the first Person *eu* I, has no determined Gender, and is joined to either the Masculine or Feminine, and declined with the indefinite Article, as may be seen in the Declensions. There is but one Pronoun of the first Person,



Person, and it always agrees with the Verb in Number and Person; as *eu sou*, I am; *nós somos*, we are; and it is sometimes suppress'd by Way of Elegancy, and in Imitation of the *Latin*; as *amo a essas raparigas*, I love those Girls; *levo a meus livros*, I read my Books; tho' in *English* it cannot be left out.

The Pronoun *me* me, is joined with the Particles *o* and *a* in the following Manner; *mó* and *má* in the Singular, and *mós* and *más* in the Plural Number are made use of, v. g. *muy caro vendeomó*, i. e. *livro*, he sold it me very dear, i. e. the Book; *muy cara vendeoma*, i. e. *coisa*, he sold it me very dear, i. e. the Thing; *vendeomas muy caros*, i. e. *os livros*, he sold 'em me very dear; i. e. the Books; *vendeomas muy caras*, i. e. *as sedas*, he sold 'em me very dear, i. e. the Silks.

The Rules given for the first Person also serve for the second, without any Exception.

The Pronoun *tu* is also with the Article *o* and *a*, *os* and *as*, contracted into *to*, *ta*, *tós*, *tás*, and joined to the End of Verbs, which makes this Language very concise and expressive; thus they say, *douto de graça*, i. e. *o livro*, I give it thee freely, i. e. the Book; for *doute o*, &c. *douta de graça*, i. e. *a seda*, I give it thee freely, i. e. the Silk; for *doute a*. So in the Plural Masculine, *doutós de graça*, i. e. *os livros*, I give them you freely, i. e. the Books, for *doute os*; and *doutás de graça*, i. e. *as sedas*, I give 'em you freely, i. e. the Silks, for *doute as*.

The Plural *vós*, is also often joined to *o*, *a*, *os*, and *as*, by changing the Letter into an *l*. Example, *eu vóla dou*, I give it you, for *eu vós a dou*; and *eu vólas dou*, I give them you, for *eu vós as dou*. Likewise the Infinitive of Verbs is joined with *o*, *os*, *a* and *as*, by changing the *r* into *l*, as *quero vélo*, I will see him or it, for *quero vero*; and *quero vélos*



*veros*, I will see them, for *quero veros*. See the Chapter of the *Verb*.

The Pronoun of the third Person, *si* or *se* himself, which is the common Gender, both Masculine and Feminine, and has no Plural Number, is declined with the indefinite Article, as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar.

*Elle* is commonly express'd by the Particle *lbe* in the Singular, and *lbes* in the Plural, and the Dative Case is comprehended therein; as *á elle* and *á elles*; as *nam se lbe dá déssô*, and *nam se lbe da a elle d'isso*, he cares not for it. So in the Plural *nam se lbes da d'isso*, or *nam se lbes dá á elles d'isso*, they care not for it, or they value it not. (See p. 33.)

### Pronouns Possessive.

There are three Pronouns Possessive; as *meu*, *teu*, *seu*, mine, thine, his, in Singular; *meus*, *teus*, *seus*, in Plural. They are joined with a Noun Substantive both in Singular and Plural, and have two Genders, viz. Masculine and Feminine; thus *meu* mine, is *minha* in Feminine; *tu*, *tua*, Vid. the Declension of the Pronouns; *meu livro*, my Book; *minha casa*, my House; *meu olho*, my Eye; *minhas palavras*, my Words, &c.

These Pronouns have the Article before them when the Conjunction Copulative comes between, e. g. *teu irmão e o meu*, thy Brother and mine, *minha irmã e a sua*, my Sister and his; *teus cavallos e os meus*, thy Horses and mine; *tuas casas e as minhas*, thy Houses and mine.

### Pronouns Demonstrative.

Such are *elle*, *ella*, *este*, *esse*, *aquelle*; the Words *elle*, *ella*, answer the *English* *he* and *she*; *este* is used when

when we say in *English* *this*; *essa* answers, the *English* *that*; and *aquelle* *that* *there* or *yonder*, which is almost out of Sight, is remote, or not in Sight at all; e. g. *este homem he muy bonrado*, this is a Man of Honour; *essa mulher he fermosa*, that Woman is handsome; and *fuy dez annos em aquella cidade*, I have been ten Years in that City.

### Pronouns Interrogative.

*Que, quem, qual, cujo* and *cuja*. The Pronoun *que* is indeclinable; as *qué homem he este?* what Man is that? *qué mulheres sam essas?* what Women are those? When *que* is an Interrogative it ought to be writ with an Accent, otherwise not.

When you speak of inanimate Things you may use indifferently the Word *qual* or *quem*; as *qual destes retratos he o melhor?* which of these Pictures is the best? or *quem destes retratos*, &c. But when you speak of Things having Life, you must make use of *quem* only, except you put the Article before *qual*, e. g. *quem das duas mulheres he a mais fermosa?* which of the two Women is the handsomest? or *a qual das*, &c. which however is not so polite a Way of Expression as the first.

Pronouns Relative. See the Chapter of *Pronouns*.

### Pronouns Improper.

These Pronouns are divided into two Classes; the first is of Personals, the other Mix'd, which has Regard to both Persons and Things.

The Personal only is *quem*, who and which.

The Mix'd are *nehum, cadabum, outro, cada, certo, mesmo, algum, todo, tal, qualquer, nobody, every*

every one, another, and every, a certain, the same, somebody, every, such, which, or whosoever.

Some of these Pronouns have but one only Termination; as *quem*, *cada*, *qualquer*, *tal*, which are of the Masculine and Feminine Gender both; *quem* and *cada* are indeclinable, but *qual* is in the Plural *quays*, and *tal* *tays*; thus you say *quaysquieres homens*, *ou quaysquieres mulheres*. All the others have a Masculine and Feminine Termination, and are declinable; as *nenhum*, *nenbuma*, *nenhuns*, *nenbunas*, *cadabum*, *cadabuma*, *cadabuns*, *cadabumas*; *outro*, *outra*, *outros*, *outras*; *certo*, *certa*, *certos*, *certas*, &c.

One of them is only negative, as *nenhum*, *nenbuma*; all the rest are Affirmatives.

*Note*, The Pronouns *meu*, *teu*, *seu*, *nosso*, *vosso*, *hum*, *outro*, and *qual*, mine, thine, his, ours, yours, one (or a) another, or which, are declined with the Definitive; but all the rest with the Indefinite Article.

## C H A P. V.

### *Of the Verbs.*

**T**O know how to conjugate the Verbs, and to apply them well, is a very material Thing to speak a Language in Perfection. The Conjugations have been shewn above, and here we shall compile a few Rules how they are to be applied in their proper Moods and Tenses, Numbers and Persons.

All the Tenses of Verbs (except the Infinitive) should have before them a Nominative, either express'd or understood, with which they should agree in Number and Person.

Express'd; as *eu amo*, I love; *tu ouves*, thou hearest; *Pedro canta*, Peter sings.

Under-

Understood ; as *amo*, I love ; *ouvimos*, we hear ; *cantam*, they sing.

☞ The *Portuguese*, as well as *Spaniards*, when they speak to a Person whom they respect, they put the Verb in the third Person Singular ; as *V M tem rezãõ*, you are in the right (your Worship is in the right.) When they speak to one whom they have less Regard for, they say, *Vossê*, (instead of *Vossa mercê*) *tem rezãõ*. When they would express still less Regard, they speak in the second Person Plural, without *V M*, or *Vossê*, and say *tendes rezãõ*, you are in the right, or you have Reason ; and the most familiar Way of all, as from a Father to a Son, or a Master to his Servant, is when they speak in the second Person Singular, *tems rezãõ*, thou hast right (Reason).

The Verb Active governs the Accusative ; as *amo a meu irmãoõ*, I love my Brother ; *digo a verdade*, I say the Truth.

The Verb Passive is preceded by a Nominative, and follow'd by an Ablative Case ; as *os juezes sãõ amados dós Principes*, Judges are loved by Princes ; *os juezes* standing in the Nominative, and *dós principes* in the Ablative Case.

When the Particle *to* follows a Verb, the *Portuguese*, as well as the *English*, put the next following Noun in the Dative Case ; as *dou a minha irmãã*, I give to my Sister ; *dezia ao principe*, he said to the Prince, which has been sufficiently explain'd, p. 15.

The Conjunctions which are between two Verbs oblige the last of the two Verbs to be of the same Number, Person, and Tense with the first : Example, the King wills and commands, *o Rey quer & manda* ; he sings and dances very well, *elle canta*



*canta e dança muito bem* ; we saw and heard, *vimos e ouvimos*, &c.

### Of the Moods.

The Indicative has properly no Conjunction belonging to it, tho' sometimes the following are join'd with it, *viz. que, se, quando, and como*, e. g. *o Senhor A. B. escreve, que téndes seu livro*, Mr. A. B. writes that you have his Book ; *faz isso se me amas*, do that if you love me ; *quando queréys vir*, when will you come ? *como tu amas a elle, elles te amarám*, as thou lovest them they will love thee.

### The Imperative Mood

Requires neither Preposition nor Conjunction, except only in the third Person Singular and Plural, when it is preceded by another Verb, otherwise not ; as *manda que fallem*, order them to speak.

*Note*, It is a Point of Controversy among the Grammarians, whether there is any Difference of Tenses in the Imperative Mood. Some of the *Portuguese* Grammars have two Tenses, *viz.* the Present and Future, whereas in Reality no Command can regard any other than a Future ; for the Action must be subsequent to the Command. The second, which they call the Future, is entirely borrow'd from the Future of the Indicative Mood, only with this Alteration, that no first Person is allowed in the Singular, and the Pronoun is put after the Verb. The *Spaniards* have but one Tense in the Imperative, which they call Future, and corresponds with the first Tense of our Imperative ; and indeed if two Tenses are to be allowed, the only Difference I can perceive is, that what is commanded by the first is to be executed immediately, but the second at a greater, and not a limited, Distance of Time ; for which

Reason



Reason I, not being willing to reject the second entirely, have kept them, and called one the first, and the other the second Tense.

### The Optative and Conjunctive

Require some Particle before each Tense, tho' the Present is sometimes used without any; as *praça a Deos*, please God; *Deos o fassa*, God grant it. When no Certainty of Action is marked, and the Particle *que* is joined with the Verb, it must always be put in the Optative; as *ba mester que tenha eu*, it is necessary I should have. The Conjunctive is very elegantly used on several Occasions, and expressed by the Particle *como*; as *cómo vosso páy vos ama tanto, sente múyto vossa ausência*, as your Father loves you so much, he is much troubled at your Absence; *como vosso páy vos amava, amou, amára tanto*, &c. and in short the Particle *como* prefixed to any of the Tenses of the Indicative expresses the Conjunctive Mood.

The Portuguese also not inelegantly make use of the Gerund to express the Conjunctive Mood, e.g. *nam vós coréys de fazer tays cousas, sendo nobre, for como soys nobre*, do not you blush (colour) to do such Things, being a Person of Quality; *fugíys, fugistes de vosso pay amando vós elle tanto*, did you, have you run away from your Father, he loving you so well?

The Conjunctive also is very elegantly (nay more elegantly than by the Particle *como*, or the Gerund) expressed by the Particles *poys* and *depóys*, v. g. *nam me espanto fallardes tam audasmente, poys soys soldado*, I wonder not that thou talkest so boldly since thou art a Soldier; *morréo ao primeiro de Setembro depóys de ser Réy sete annos, ou avendo sete annos que tinha estado Rey*, he died the Seventh of September, after he had been King

seven Years, or it being seven Years that he had been King.

The Optative is also joined with the Particles *posto que, se, que, quenám, peraque, nám, aindaque, comtantoque*, although, if, that, that not, why, why not, although, whilst or as long as; as, *rogo te que sejas liberal*, I desire thee to be liberal; *peraque sejas liberal*, &c.

All Verbs which signify *Will, Command, Doubt, Desire, Admiration, Supplication, or Pretension*, when followed by the Conjunction *que*, govern the Subjunctive Mood; as *rogoê que venha pera minha casa*, I desire him to come to my House; *desejo muito que prospere em seus negocios*, I desire very much that he may prosper in his Business; *quera Deos (praza a Deos) que seja*, God grant he may be.

The Conjunction *aindaque*, although, always demands the Subjunctive Mood; as, *aindaque seja tempo não quero hir ainda*, although it be Time, I do not care to go yet; *aindaque elle o diga não o creyo*, although he says it, I do not believe it.

### The Infinitive

Has an indeterminate Signification, and can be employed neither absolutely nor determinately, except in Speaking in general, e. g. *podér viver, e saber viver, he a verdadéyra filosofia*, to be able to live, and to know to live is the true Philosophy. Sometimes the Infinitive is elegantly, in Imitation of the *Latin*, made a Substantive, and has the Article *o* prefixed to it; as *o viver e o morrer sam as cousas mais certas que témos*, to live and to die are the most certain Things we have; and in this Manner the Particles or Prepositions *nó* and *dó* are often joined with it; as *nó correr nemhum o excede*, in Running no one exceeds him; *não se falla do ler agora*, we do not speak now of Reading.

They

They also very elegantly make use of this Mood with the Particle *que*, when we place the Words something or nothing before the Infinitive in *English*; as *tenho que fazer*, I have something to do, *não tenho que escrever*, I have nothing to write.

The Pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, are often joined with the Infinitive Mood, v. g. *assanbarse*, to be exasperated; *entreterse*, to entertain one's self.

When two Verbs are put together, the second commonly is in the Infinitive; as *devo amar*, I must love; *quero ver*, I desire to see.

Sometimes the Particles *por*, *sem*, *á*, *de*, *pera*, and *em* precede the Infinitive; as *por ser virtuoso me perseguem os máos*, for being virtuous, or because I am virtuous, the Wicked persecute me; *sem ser letrado dou a minha opinião*, without being a Lawyer, I give my Opinion; *á fallar a verdade*, to speak the Truth, &c. *sey que avéys de ser homem douto*, I know you are to be a learned Man; *prometo de ser fiel, jurava de ser fiel*, I promise to be faithful, he swore to be faithful.

When the Verb is in the Infinitive Mood and Future Tense, then the auxiliary Verb *ey* is added; as *amaturus sum illum*, Latin, *amalo ey*; *laudaturus sum illum*, Latin, *ouví'o ey*, I will love him, I will praise him; *accordarlhe ey*, I will wake him; *agastarse ha*, he will be angry.

When the Particles *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, him, it; her, and them are joined with the Infinitive, the Verb loses the Letter *r*; as *quero louválo, louvála, louvalos, louvalas*, I will praise him, and praise it, praise her, praise them; *quero ouvilo, ouvila*, I will hear him or it, hear her. But when the Particles *lhe* and *lhes* stand instead of the forementioned Diminutives, the Letter *r* remains in its Place; as, *quero agradecerlhe, e agradecerlhes*, I will thank him, her, and thank them; *quero fallarlhe, fallarlhes*, I will speak to him, her, speak to them.



When they use the Infinitive to accompany a third Person in the Plural, it is common with the *Portuguese* to add *em*, and to make use of *ser*, *serem*, *amar*, *amarem*. Thus they say, *fico queixoso da minha desdita de faltarem as occasiões de desembarcar-me*, I remain complaining of my Misfortune to want Opportunities (that Opportunities are wanting) to acquit myself; *não quero os livros por serem elles prohibidos*, I do not care for the Books, because they are prohibited; *não quiz acompanhá-los por amarem elles a beber tanto*, I did not care to accompany them, because they love to drink so much, &c.

### Remarks on the Tenses.

To avoid Repetition, I refer the Reader to what has been said in the Beginning of this Grammar on this Head.

Since the Preterperfects definite and indefinite are often confounded one with the other, we will lay down here some Rules to distinguish them by. The Preterperfect definite, or second, is employed when we speak of a Time perfectly past; and the indefinite, or first, when the Time is not totally, but past in part, and in part present or passing: For Example, in speaking of the last Year, you may not say, *tenho escrito huma carta nó anno passado*, I have wrote a Letter last Year, because the Time or Year is entirely past. But to speak properly, we must say, *escrevi huma carta nó anno passado*, I wrote a Letter last Year, which Difference is also observed in the *English* Tongue; for it would be as improper in *English*, to say *I have wrote a Letter last Year*, for *I wrote a Letter last Year*, as it is shocking to a nice Ear, in the *Portuguese*, to say *tenho escrito*, &c. In speaking of the present Year, which being but in part past, it will not be allowed  
me



me to say *compusey bum livro este anno*, I composed a Book this Year; but I must say *tenbo composto bum livro este anno*, I have composed a Book this Year, which is also more proper in *English*. This Distinction may be acquired by the Ear, but as this is not done but by long Conversation with those who speak the Language in Perfection, I would advise the Beginner not to trust to Practice only in this Article, but to fix well these Remarks in his Mind, since otherwise he may chance to get an ill Habit of confounding these two Tenses, which afterwards is not easily discarded.

The Preterpluperfect and the two Futures are easily distinguished by what we have said in the Beginning of this Grammar.

### Of the Uncertain Tense.

This Tense is by the Ignorant often put for the Preterimperfect of the Optative Mood. Its Termination is in *ria*, and ought not to be used indifferently for the Preterimperfect, but when we speak either conditionally (but then the Condition must follow) or with some Doubt; but it can never take *se*, *if*, and *aindaque*, although, before or after it, if you will speak correctly; and the Preterimperfect must always be preceded by *se*, *if*, and *aindaque*. By the following Examples you will perceive how much the Sense of a Period is altered by the Difference of these Tenses. To begin with the Uncertain, *daria á Vossa merce dez cruzados se fora homem honrado*, I would give you ten Crusadoes were he an honest Man; *fallaria a verdade se nam recedra o castigo*, I would or should speak the Truth did I not fear the Punishment; and it would be false, and contrary to the Idiom of the Language, to say *dasse* or *dara dez dobroens*, and *fallara ou fallasse a verdade*, &c. Example

of the Preterimperfect, *aindaque fallara ou fallasse a verdade, nemhum me créra*, though I should speak the Truth, no Body will believe me. *Note*, When they use the Imperfect instead of the Uncertain Tense, it is the Termination in *ara*, and not that in *asse*.

### Of the Verb Passive.

The Passive Verb or Voice, as we have said at the Conjugations, is made by conjugating the Verbs *ser* and *estar* with the Participle of the past Tense; but the *Portuguese* (as well as the *Spaniards*) commonly express the Passive Voice, by joining the Pronoun *se* with the Verb Active in the following Manner. Example,

*Pelo que o Senhor tem dito se vê o contrario, for he ou está visto o contrario*, by what this Gentleman has said, the contrary sees itself, for the contrary is seen or appears.

*As circumstantias se contam, e se deve fazer pouco caso de muitas dellas pello odio que se tem a esta gente*, Circumstances count themselves, (are counted) and it must make itself little in Case of (and little Regard ought to be had to) many of them, (by the Hatred that holds itself to this People,) or by Reason of their Hatred towards this People; *que se diz de novo?* What News says itself, or is said? *que se escreve de novo de Paris?* What News writes itself from Paris, or is wrote from Paris?

The Passive Voice is also sometimes expressed by the third Person in Plural of the Active Verb. Example, *dizem (se diz) que avera guerra*, they say (it is said) there will be a War; *escrevem (se escreve) de Paris que o Rey está com saude*, they write (it is wrote) from Paris that the King is in Health, &c.

Of the Gerunds.

The Gerunds in this Language end in *do*; as *amando*, *léndo*, &c. in loving, in reading, &c. and govern the same Cases as the Verbs of which they are Part, tho' some compose Gerunds by putting the Particles *em*, *pera* and *de*, with the Infinitive Present; as *em dar*, *pera dar*, *de dar*, in giving, of giving; as *escrevendo essa carta*, in writing that Letter; *fallando á meu pay*, speaking to my Father; by which it appears they govern the same Cases as the Verbs they are derived from; for *carta* stands here in the Accusative, and *a meu pay*, in the Dative.

The Gerunds have neither Tense, Number, or Persons, but agree with all. Example of the Present, *trabalhando bem nam ba que temer*, in working well he need fear no Body; of the Perfect, *foy feito escrevendo elle a carta*, it was done when he wrote the Letter. Example for the Number and Person, *eu o veréy*, *vós o veréys*, *elle os vera passando pollo rua*, I shall see him, you shall see him, he shall see them passing through the Street.

Sometimes two Gerunds are joined together; as *estando escrevendo esta carta recebi a vossa*, whilst I was writing this Letter I received yours; *morréo de repente*, *estando disputando dá morte*, he died suddenly whilst he was disputing about Death.

The Verb and Gerund are also sometimes Companions; as *espiráu avendo quatro annos inteiros que jazia entrevado*, he died (expired) having lain four whole Years bedridden.

## C H A P. VI.

*Of the Participles.*

**T**HE Participles are of three Sorts, *viz.* of the *Past, Present, and Future Tense*; as *amado*, beloved; *amante*, (*o que ama*) loving, or he that loves, and *o que tem de amar*, he that shall or will, or is to love.

When that of the Past Tense is composed with the Verb *ser*, to be, then the Participle ought to agree with the foregoing Noun Substantive in Gender and Number. Example, the Captain is beloved, *o capitam he amado*; Virtue is esteemed, *a virtude he estimado*; the Lazy will be blamed, *os preguiçosos seram culpados*; those Houses will be sold, *essas casas seram vendidas*.

The Participle of the Past Tense, strictly taken, infers a Passive Signification; as *lido*, read; *amado*, loved; *ouvido*, heard; but the *Portuguese* (and *Spaniards*) often use it also in the Active Sense; as *como vós tenho escrita muitas cartas, e não ey recebido nenhuma resposta*, as I have wrote you many Letters, and have not received any Answer.

☞ The *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* very elegantly make use of this Participle with the Ablative absolute, to imitate their Mother Tongue, the *Latin*; thus they say, *acabada a cea se foy á dormir*, Supper being ended, he went to sleep, ( *finita cœna ivit cubitum*); *tirada a causa cessa o effeito*, the Cause being taken away, the Effect ceases (*ablata causa cessat effectus*); *partido vosso pay chegou vossa irmã*, when your Father was departed, your Sister arrived; in this Case the Gerunds *sendo* and *avendo* are understood; as *a cea senda acabada, se foy a dormir, a causa sendo, tirada*



*tirada cessa o effeito ; o vosso pay sendo partido chegou vossa irmã.*

The Participles of the Present Tense, *amante*, loving ; *ouvente*, hearing, &c. are of the common Gender, and are declined like Nouns Adjective, and must agree with the Noun and Pronoun they are joined with in Number and Case ; as, *os ouvintes* (*homens*) & *as ouvintes* (*mulheres*) *isto por certo não dizem, que tendes rezão*, these (Men or Women) who are hearing it, for certain do not say that you have Right ; but the Portuguese commonly express this Participle by the Indicative Present, joined with the Particles *o* or *a*, which they decline, and the Pronoun *que*. Example, *os* (*homens*) & *as* (*mulheres*) *que ouvem isto, por certo, não dizem que tendes rezão*, the (Men and Women) which hear that for certain, do not say that you have Right.

The Participle of the Future Tense is of two Voices, viz. the Active and Passive. That of the Active, *o que tem de amar, ler, ouvir*, he that is to love, read, or hear, is likewise adapted to the Gender and Number of the Noun it is joined with, by declining the Article *o* and *a*, and putting the Verb *tenho* in the Number and Person agreeable thereunto ; as *os homens* & *as mulheres que tem de amar, ler, ouvir*, the Men or Women that are to love.

The Participle of the Future Tense in the Passive Voice is, *o* & *a que ha ou tem de ser amado, amada* ; *os* & *as que ham ou tem de ser amados, amadas*, he or she that is to be loved ; they (both Masculine and Feminine) that are to be loved : Which is also regulated by the Article and Verb in the Masculine Gender or Plural Number, as the Noun demands in it ; Example, *o livro que ha de ser escrito*, the Book that is to be writ ; *as cartas*  
que

*que ham de ser lidas*, the Letters that are to be read.

## C H A P. VII.

### *Of the Adverbs.*

**T**H E Grammarians differ about these Words, *dentro, fora, encima, embaixo, antes*, and *diante*, some putting them in the Rank of Adverbs, and others placing them among the Prepositions; and they are both Adverbs and Prepositions. When they are followed by nothing they are Adverbs; as *esta dentro*, he is within; *vay fora*, he goes out or abroad; *esta encima*, he is on the Top; *esta debaixo*, he is below; *vay antes*, he goes before; *vay diante*, he goes before, because they here maintain the Character of Adverbs, which is, they are joined with Verbs to declare or explain the Manner of their Signification. They are Prepositions when they are followed by some Case of a Noun; as *esta dentro ná casa*, he is in the House; *esta fora da casa*, he is out of the House, &c.

The Adverb is always put before the Adjective and Participle, but follows the Verb; as *esta hómem be muito barbaro*; this Man is very barbarous; *estou bem persuadido*, I am well persuaded.

The Adverbs in the Order are as follow :

<i>Adverbs of Time.</i>	
Agora, now.	Entám, entonces, then.
Ja, already.	Sempre, ever.
Ja entám, then already.	Nunca, never.
Jamáys, never.	Ao presente, at present.
Jagora, just now.	Algumahóra, sometimes.
Tarde, late.	Ainda, yet.
Sedo, soon, early.	Antesque, before.
	Supitamente, suddenly.
	Cada

Cada dia, *daily.*

Hoje, *to-day.*

Amenhã, *to-morrow.*

Depois, *afterwards.*

Ontem, *yesterday.*

Desde, *since then.*

Dáqui adiante, *henceforward.*

Entretanto, *mean while.*

### *Adverbs of Place.*

Aqui, *here.*

Allí, *there.*

Acolá, *in this or that Place.*

Daquí, *hence.*

Pera alli, *hither.*

Atelí, *hitherto.*

Cá, *hither.*

La onde, *there, where.*

Onde, *where.*

Ondequer, *wherever.*

Dentro, *within.*

Fora, *without.*

Alem, *on the other Side.*

Acima, *above.*

Debáixo, *below.*

### *Adverbs of Quantity.*

Múyto, *much.*

Póuco, *little.*

Affas, *bastantemente, enough.*

Demasiado, *too much.*

Abundantemente, *abundantly.*

Muyto máis, *much more.*

Pouco máis, *a little more.*

Pouco mais ou menos, *little more or less.*

### *Adverbs of Quality.*

Prudentemente, *prudently.*

Atrevidamente, *boldly.*

Elegantemente, *elegantly.*

Adrede, *dextrously.*

Suavamente, *sweetly.*

Discretamente, *discreetly.*

Eugenhofamente, *ingeniously.*

Galantemente, *gallantly.*

Legeyramente, *neatly.*

Gentilmente, *genteelly.*

Facilmente, *easily.*

### *Adverbs of Number.*

As vezes, *sometimes.*

Vez, vézes, *Time, Times.*

Muitas vézes, *oftentimes.*

Huma vez, *once.*

Quatro vézes, *four times.*

Cem mil vézes, *hundred thousand times.*

### *Adverbs Negative.*

Nam, *not.*

Ainda nam, *not yet.*

Nomáys, *no more.*

Nãada, *nothing.*

Tam pouco, *neither.*

Nunca, *jamais, never.*

Reparay vos, *look ye.*

*Adverbs*

*Adverbs demonstrating.*

Eis aqui, *behold.*  
 Além d'isto, *moreover,*  
*besides.*  
 Finalmente, *finally.*  
 Em fim, *at last.*  
 Dedesque, *since.*  
 Eylo aqui, *look here.*

*Adverbs of Doubt.*

Por ventura, *perhaps.*  
 A caso, *perchance.*

*Adverbs Interrogatory.*

Como, *how.*  
 Por que rezám, *where-*  
*fore.*  
 A que proposito, *to what*  
*Purpose.*  
 Para que, *why.*  
 Que, *what.*

*Adverbs of Uniting.*

Apar, juntamente, *togeth-*  
*er.*  
 Entreambos, *between*  
*both.*

*Adverbs of Separation.*

Aparte, *singly.*  
 Seperadamente, *sepa-*  
*rately.*  
 Espalhadamente, *scat-*  
*teringly.*  
 Apartadamente, *distinct-*  
*ly.*

*Adverbs of Intention.*

Fortissimamente, *strong-*  
*ly.*  
 Intensissimamente, *most*  
*intensely.*  
 Com grande cuydado,  
*most studiously.*

*Adverbs of Remitting.*

Póuco á póuco, *little by*  
*little.*  
 Passo á passo, *step by step.*  
 Preguisosamente, *idly.*  
 Froxamente, *remisly.*

*Adverbs of Hastening.*

Depressa, *quickly.*  
 Apressadamente, *hastily.*  
 Arrebadamente, *furi-*  
*ously.*  
 Em hum instante, *in-*  
*stantly.*  
 Logo, *presently.*

*Adverbs of Comparison.*

Affim como, *so as.*  
 Quasi, *almost.*  
 Como, *as.*  
 Máys, *more.*  
 Menos, *less.*

*Adverbs of Choice.*

Antes, *rather.*  
 Dóutra manéyra, *other-*  
*wise.*

Debalde,



Debalde, envám, <i>in vain.</i>	A outro propósito, <i>for another End.</i>
Atravéz, <i>transversly.</i>	
Ao contrario, <i>on the contrary.</i>	De corrida, <i>nimbly.</i>
A olhos vistos, <i>openly.</i>	Diariamente, <i>daily.</i>
A longe, <i>afar off.</i>	As escondidas, <i>privately.</i>
De perto, <i>near.</i>	De dia em dia, <i>from day to day.</i>
Ao menos, <i>at least.</i>	
á pe de letra, <i>by prescription.</i>	De gatinhas, <i>creeping.</i>
Ao redor, <i>about.</i>	De galope, <i>leaping.</i>
Ao vivo, <i>to the life.</i>	De giolhos, <i>kneeling.</i>
Aos cóuces, <i>by the heels.</i>	Davello, <i>transversly.</i>
	Debilmente, <i>weakly.</i>

## C H A P. VIII.

### *Of the Conjunctions.*

**T**H E several Sorts of Conjunctions are Copulatives, Disjunctives, Causals, Illatives, of Opposition, Exception, Conditionals of Doubting, of Declaration, of Interrogation, of Comparison, of Augmentation, of Diminution, &c.

The chief Conjunction Copulative is *e*, and, which is used as in all other Languages; *tambem*, *tanto*, *quanto*, *como*, *nem*, and *tampoco*, are of the same Order.

*Tambem*, also, or as well, is always placed at the End of the Phrase; as *vossé o quer, e eu tambem*, you desire it, (will have it) and I also.

*Tanto*, *quanto*, *como*, always speak with a Relation to other Things.

*Nem* disjoins the Parts of the Period as to the Sense, but unites them in the Period; as *não he nem homem nem mulher*, it is neither, Man nor Woman; *tampoco*, neither, is used after the same Manner.

*Ou* is a Disjunctive, and is used in the same Sense as *vel* in *Latin*, and *or* in *English*.

*Porém, entretanto, com todo isso, sem embargo*, but, mean while, for all that, notwithstanding, are of Opposition, and are employed in Discourse as the *English* Words that signify them.

*Senam*, and *amenos que*; if not, and unless that, are of the excepting Kind; *senam* stands sometimes for but; as *não quero senam isso*, I desire but that.

*Se*, if, *posto que*, and *supposto que*, supposing that, are of the conditional Order, and are joined with the Subjunctive Mood; as *se não ouvera lido*, if I had not read; *posto que eu venha, &c.* suppose I come. *Quando*, when, is sometimes used for a Conjunction of this Sort, and in such Case it is always joined with the Subjunctive; as *se or quando fallára bem, entences, &c.* if he would speak well, then, &c.

Declaratives are, *be de saber*, to wit, and *como*, as, which govern neither Mood nor Tense of any Verb.

*Paraque, áque, sebre que, porque*, wherefore, for what, upon what, for why, are Interrogatives; as *não sey porque, nem paraque*, I do not know for what nor wherefore; *por que rezão*, for what Reason; *á que proposito*, to (for) what Purpose.

Augmentatives and Diminutives are, *o demas, aindaque, ao menos*, for the rest, although, at least, &c.

Causal Conjunctions are such as mark the Reason of Things done; they answer the *Latin*, *quia, ergo, enim*. Such as *pois, porque, como, enquanto, logo, á fim que*, then, because, as, inasmuch, presently, to the End that.

The Particle *que* is the most frequent of all Conjunctions, and of the most Importance to be taken Notice of; it is both a Pronoun and a Conjunction, but the latter is what we speak of here.

When

When it is not preceded by any Verb, it is a Kind of Exclamation ; as *que me exponha á fazer isso be impossivel*, that I should expose me to do what is impossible. When *que* is preceded by a Verb, that Verb must be in the Indicative, and the Verb following *que* in Subjunctive, as *duvido que o Réy aja chegado á*, &c. I doubt that the King is not arrived, &c.

☞ Observe here, that the *Portuguese*, as well as the *Spaniards*, *French*, and *Italians*, join no Negative with the Verb *I doubt*, as the *English* do. Thus the *Portuguese* say, *duvido que o Rey aja chegado*, and not *que o Rey não aja chegado*.

But when *que* answers the *Latin* *quam*, how, it governs the Indicative Mood ; as *o que fermosa be esta mulher !* O how handsome is that Woman ! I need say nothing more about this Particle, for if the Student observes these Rules, and is careful in distinguishing when it stands for the Pronoun *what*, or for the Conjunction *that*, and the Adverb *how*, he will find no Difficulty in using it correctly.

## C H A P. IX.

### *Of the Preposition.*

**T**HE Prepositions, as has been said in the Chapter of the Parts of Speech, are indeclinable Particles joined with *Nouns*, *Pronouns*, and *Verbs*, to declare their Signification.

As the *a* is not only a Preposition, but also a Particle used in a very different Manner, I shall, by the following Explanation, shew how you may discern when it is a Preposition and when a Particle.

1. It is indeclinable when it is in Composition, as it often is both with Nouns, Pronouns, Verbs, and Adverbs, and sometimes augments or diminishes the Signification; as *adinbéirado*, to be full of Money, compounded of *a* and *dinbeiro*; it is the Participle of *adinbéirar*, to heap up Money; *ajoelbárse*, to kneel, is a Verb Neuter reciprocal, compounded of *a* and *joelbo*, a Knee; *adiante* is an Adverb, compounded of *a* and *dianta*.

2. It is a Particle when it stands between two Infinitives; as *começar à jurar*, to begin to swear.

3. It is a Particle when it follows a Participle or Adjective, and is followed by an Infinitive Mood; as *estou prompto à obedecer*, I am ready to obey.

4. It is a Particle when it is between two Nouns of Number, or more properly between a Noun of Number and its Repetition; as *ir dous à dous*, to go two and two; *quatro à quatro*, four and four; *vieram duzia à duzia*, they came by Dozens.

5. When it marks a Distance of Time or Place, it is a Particle; as *vive vinte milhas de Londres*, he lives twenty Miles from London.

6. The *a* is a Preposition marking the Dative Case in the Declension of a Noun proper, whether Masculine or Feminine; as *escrever a Pedro*, to write to Peter; *á João, á Maria, &c.* I say it marks the Dative in Nouns proper; for in the declining of Substantives of the common Order it takes to itself an *o*; as *escrever ao Rey*, to write to the King; but when the Noun is of the Feminine Gender, the Particle cannot be distinguished from the Article, except that some who are nice in their Orthography put the Accent Grave upon the *à* when a Particle, and an Acute (*á*) when a Preposition.

7. The *a* marks the Accusative after a Verb Active; as *amar a Deos*, to love God; *imitar aos Santos*, to follow the Example of Saints.



It may be objected, that there is no Difference between *escrever á Pedro*, to write to *Peter*, and *amar a Deos*, to love God; for if the *a* before *Pedro* signifies the Dative, it ought also to do the same before *Deos*; to which I answer, that to make the Distinction you must observe, that when it comes after a Verb Neuter it marks a Dative, and after a Verb Active an Accusative Case, and besides, that it is the Sign of the Dative Case to Nouns proper only. These Rules, I doubt not, with some Application, will soon render the Learner Master of this nice Distinction.

*De* sometimes signifies a Preposition, and sometimes a Particle; when it marks the Quality, Cause, or Manner of doing a Thing, or answers to the Sign of the Genitive in *English*, it is no Preposition, but a Particle; as *he hum homem de máa vida*, he is a Man of an ill Life.

When *de* answers the *English* *from*, or *out of*, it is a Preposition; as *não tirye isso de mim*, you shall not take that from me.

*De* is also a Preposition when it stands before Adverbs of Place or Time; as *de aqui nó diante*, from henceforward; also when found before Verbs in the Infinitive Mood; as *be tempo de partir*, it is Time to depart.

*Em*, in, whence, *nó* and *ná*, in, and *dentro*, within, are also Prepositions; and to apply them justly, you are to observe, that when you speak of the Time past, the Preposition *em* is required; and for the Time to come you are to use the Word *dentro*, and not *em*, *nó*, or *ná*; as *li as obras de Tasso em quinze dias*, and not *dentro de quinze dias*, I have read the Works of Tasso in a Fortnight; *chegárey a Londres dentro de tres dias*, I will be at London within (in) three Days; *nó* and *ná*, and *nós* and *nas* are a Contraction of *em o* and *em a*, *em os*, *em as*; they are put before the Nouns

to signify the Preposition *em*, and the Article belonging to the Word at the same Time; as *não ha nó mundo*, there is not in the World, for *não ha em o mundo*; and *não ha ná casa*, for *não ha em a casa*; thus *de o* and *de a* are contracted into *dó* and *dá*, and *de os*, *de as*, into *dós*, *dás*; which has been observed above.

*Antes* signifies a Priority in Time; as *Deos creó á Adam antes dó diluvio*, God created *Adam* before the Flood.

*Diante* is a Preposition both of Place and Order, and often answers to the *Latin coram*, before; as *tenho minha casa diante o paço*, my House is before the Palace; *póem essa camisa diante dó fogo*, put this Shirt before the Fire; *estávamos diante dó Réy*, we were before the King; *vossê va diante de mim*, you go before me.

*Ante* sometimes signifies Priority, and sometimes it has the Force of the *Latin coram*; as *ante todas cousas he meyster lér*, before all Things it is necessary to read, &c. *ante nós secretarios*, before us Secretaries, which however is better express'd by *diantes*.

*Perto*, about, marks a Nearness of Time, Things, and Place, and requires the Genitive Case of Nouns, and the Infinitive of Verbs, with the Particle *de*; as *perto dá huma*, *perto dás tres*, about One, about Three a-Clock; *está perto de percer*, he is near perishing.

*Depois*, since or after, is both of Time and Place; when 'tis of Time it answers the *English since*; as *depois dó diluvio*, since the Deluge; and *depois de aver escrito esta carta*, after I had writ this Letter. When it denotes a Place, it answers the *English after*, and will in that Sense also have the Genitive; *vossê deve ir depois de Pedro*, you ought to go after *Peter*.

*Detraz* is also of Place, and answers the *English behind*.

*Con* is the same with; and is used exactly like the *English with*; for like that it marks Union, the Instrument and the Manner; as *con migo*, with me.

*Entre* is both of Place and Time, and answers to the *English between* and *betwixt*; as *entre a criação do mundo e o diluvio*, between the Creation of the World and the Deluge; *entre o dia do nascimento e a Pascoa sam micytos dias*, between Christmas Day and Passover are many Days. In these Examples 'tis plain that Preposition signifies Time; but in the following it denotes Place, as *o ar está entre o céu e a terra*, the Air is betwixt Heaven and Earth; *entre Londres e Lisboa*, betwixt London and Lisbon.

*Fora* answers to the *English out*, except when it is used for an Exceptive; *está fora da casa*, he is out of the House; *fora do reyno*, out of the Kingdom. It is Exceptive in the following Examples, *eu consento, fora do ir á Roma*, I consent, except of the going to Rome; *todos se foram fora menos tres ou quatro*, all went away except three or four. The Words *salvo* and *senão*, except, are often with more Elegance apply'd than *fora*, particularly when it happens to fall in with a Word which resembles it in Sound, as here it doth with *fóram*, where the Jingle takes off the Smoothness of the Sound; therefore you say more elegantly *todos se fóram salvo tres ou quatro*.

The Preposition *para* is put before an Infinitive Mood, or between two Infinitives; as *para morrer bem*, for to die well; *o que dizes he fallar para fallar*, what thou say'st is talking for talking Sake.

This Preposition marks the Motive, Cause, Reason, or End of Things being done; it shews why and for what; as *Deos criou todo o mundo para seu serviço*, God created all the World for his Service; *eu fiz huma casa para os pobres*, I have made a House for the Poor; *este homem he bom*



*para hum secretario*, this Man is good for a Secretary: It denotes also a Conveniency; as *esta casa he muy pequena para mim*, this House is very little for me.

It is also a Preposition of Time, tho' in the Future only; for when we speak in the Present or Perfect Tense, we must use *por*, and not *para*, as we shall observe in speaking of that Preposition; as *agora e para sempre seja o nómen de Deos louvado*, now and for ever let the Name of God be praised.

The Preposition *por* denotes the Cause efficient of a Thing, or the Motive of doing or ordering that Thing. The efficient Cause, as *Deos criou todo por sua omnipotencia*, God created all by his Omnipotence. It marks the Motive of some Action; as *todo o que faz he por vingança*, all what he doth is for (out of) Vengeance; *he feito isto por effóuto*, I have done this for the other.

*Por* answers to the *Latin pro*, v. g. *eu vos tenho por amigo*, I hold you for a Friend; *a cidade está por o Rey*, the City is for the King; *trocáyme este cavallo por hum ótro*, change me this Horse for another. Sometimes *por* stands for the *Latin propter*, by reason of, v. g. *por aver grande tempestade*, by reason of a great Tempest; and in this Sense the Words *amor*, or *causa*, are sometimes join'd with it; as *por amor das neves*, and *por causa das neves não passo os Alpes*, by reason of the Snow I don't pass the Alps.

When *por* is join'd to the Article *o* and *a*, the *r* is changed into *l*; as *pólo amor de Deos*, for God's Sake; *póla honra*, &c.

*Per* is apply'd when they design to shew the Medium by which we proceed in any Action; as *eu cós mostraréy per rezóens evidentes*, I will shew you by evident Reasons; *este livro foy composto per Virgilio*, this Book was composed by Virgil.



When *per* is join'd to the Articles *o* and *a*, it makes *pelo* and *pela*; as *pelo caminho*, by the way; *pela terra*, through the Earth.

*Contra*, against, denotes Opposition and Place, and in both it is apply'd exactly like the *English*; as *elle váy contra maré e vento*, he goes against Tide and Wind; *contra minha vontade*, against my Will; *contra toda razão*, against all Reason: It marks a Place in the following Example, *o cam-meijó contra parede*, the Dog piss'd against the Wall.

*Além*, besides, when join'd with the Infinitive, requires the Particle *de*; as *alem de comer quiz beber*, besides eating he wanted to drink; but when put with the finite Moods, it requires *de que* or *dó que*; as *alem dó que tinha feito queria*, &c. besides what he had done he wanted, &c.

*Desde* and *até*, from and until, denote both Time and Place; as *desde aquella tempo até agora*, from that Time to this Time, (till now,) *desde aquella casa, até esta casa*, from that House to (till) this House.

*Sem*, without, answers the *Latin absque* and *sine*, and goes before the Noun and Verb, and governs the Accusative Case; *he homem sem honra*, he is a Man without Honour; *leyo sem applicação*, I read without Application.

*Sobre* answers in every Thing to the *English upon* and *over*, and therefore 'tis not necessary to say any Thing about it.

*Debaixo* is a Preposition both of Time and Place; it marks a Time when it marks the Reign of any Prince; as *debáixo dó Império de Leopoldo*, under or in the Reign of Leopold. It denotes a Place; as *méus capáto está debaixo dá cama*, my Shoes stand under the Bed. It signifies a Subordination; as *os soldados estão debaixo dá autoridade dó general*, the Soldiers are under the Authority

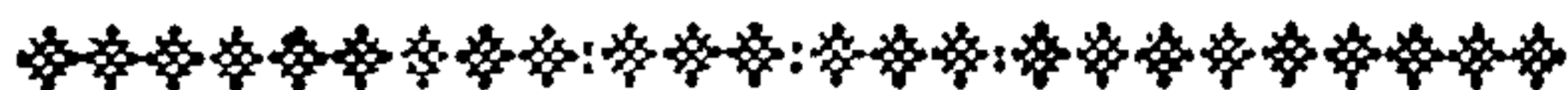
of the General; and also in the metaphorical Sense it answers to the *English* *under* and *below*; as *engana seu próximo debaixo da capa de devoção*, he cheats his Neighbour under the Cloak of Devotion.

*Em cima*, above or upon, answers the *English* Sense without Exception; thus you say, *em cima da mesa*, upon the Table; *se ba posto em cima de todo o mundo*, he has put (set) himself above all the World.

## C H A P. X.

### *Of the Interjections.*

**T**HE Interjections we have already observ'd, serve to express the Passions and different Emotions of the Mind, *viz.* Joy, Grief, Desire, Fear, Aversion, and Admiration, and often one and the same Word has different Significations, according to the Tone it is pronounced with; *oh se*, oh if! *oxala*, would to God! *hay me*, ah me! *heu*, alas, for pity! *mosino de mim*, oh miserable me! *animo amigos*, Courage my Friends, &c. But as they are very easy, and correspond with the *English* Idiom, and as also they can cause no Difficulty when you meet them in Authors, they sufficiently declaring themselves, these Examples may suffice.



### *Of the ORTHOGRAPHY of the Portuguese Language.*

**F**IRST, all proper Names and Surnames, or Relatives derived from Appellatives, are written with a great Character in the Beginning, *viz.* *Joam, Pedro, Maria, Costa.* As also all proper

per Names of Kingdoms, Provinces, Cities, Towns, Mountains, Arms, Rivers, Fountains, Months of the Year, Names of Gods and Goddesses, Nymphs, Furies, &c. as *Portugal, Andalusia, Lisboa, Madrid, Olympo, Téjo, Arethusa, Janeyro, Júpiter, Venus, &c.* So also of Adjectives; as, *Romano, Portuguêz, Ingrêz, Francêz*, a Roman, a Portuguese, an Englishman, a Frenchman, and Appellatives of any great Dignity; as of an Emperor, King, Prince, Duke, Lord, Bishop, &c. and the Beginning of every Chapter or Section, and after every final Period, which Rules are also observed in other Languages.

2. Abbreviations common in the Portuguese Tongue are, *V. Mag. Vossa Magestade; V. A. Vossa Alteza; V. E. Vossa Excellentia; V. S. Vossa Senhoria; V. M. Vossa Mercê; O R. N. S. O Rey Nosso Senhor*; all which are written with great Characters; of which see the Letters.

3. No Portuguese Word either begins or ends with a double Consonant; as *rr* or *ss*; thus it would be superfluous to write *quall* with two *ll*, because the Sound of the last Consonant is entirely lost.

4. The Letter *m* is always written before *b, m, p*; as *embravecer, immovel, impar*. The Letter *n* is always written before *c, d, f, g, l, n, r, s, t*; e. g. *trônco, pondo, confissão, angústia, enleado, anno, enregelado, insinuado, entessado*; except the Compounds of the Adverbs *bem* and *circum*, as *bemestreado, bemquisto, circumferentia, circumflexo, &c.*

5. The Pauses in Writing or Reading are express'd first by a Comma (,) which is used for a Distinction of what we write, and in Discourse to give a little Ease for Respiration. The chief Use of it is after a Verb, with its Cases, at the End of every little Clause, v. g. *quem ama a Deos, ama o proximo*, he that loves God, loves his Neighbour.



bour. It is also placed after a Conjunction before a Relative, viz. *aquelle he verdadeyramente prudente, e sabio; que com todo, &c.* he (or that Man) is truly prudent and wise, who with all, &c. It has also its Place before Adjectives, when many occur in the same Case, v. g. *quem quizer, ser, nobre, bom, prudente, liberal, &c.* he that desires to be noble, good, prudent, liberal, &c. Also before Substantives, as, *as virtudes morays sam quatro, prudencia, justicia, temperantia, forteleza,* the moral Virtues are four, Prudence, Justice, Temperance, and Fortitude. It is also used after simple Verbs, without any Case; as *pequy, fallando, obrando, &c.* I have sinned in speaking, working, &c.

But it is difficult to explain the Difference there is betwixt a Colon (:) and a Semicolon (;). The Colon is a compleat Sentence, but the Sense of the Period is not quite finished. A Semicolon is a Sentence, but something is wanting to make it perfect; and as the Colon is a Division of the Period; so the Semicolon is a Subdivision of a Colon. This last Period may serve for an Example; but this nice Distinction must chiefly be learnt by Practice. The Colon is used when we quote the Words of any Author, e g. *dizia Salamao: nenbuna cosa he de todo perfeita,* Solomon said: nothing is perfect in every Part. In the same Manner, when we promise to say something, as *diray ao que maldiccar: huyva como lobo, mas nam me mordes como cam,* I shall say to him that shall speak ill of me: howl like a Wolf: but bite me not like a Dog.

A single Point is used when the Sense of a Sentence is compleatly consummated; of which Observation will easily inform you.

The Interrogative Sign is made thus (?) and is used upon all Questions, v. g. *porque a timesmo nam conheces?* Why dost thou not know thyself?

*porque*



*porque nam conservas o teu?* Why dost thou not preserve thy own? After the Sign of Interrogation the next following Word should begin with a great Letter.

The Sign of an Interjection is (!) which likewise requires a great Character after it.

A Parenthesis is known by two Half-Moons or Half-Circles, which inclose some Words, and exempt them from the rest of the Sentence, *v. g. o peccador (se se nam emendár) sem dúvida sera punido*, the Sinner (if he doth not mend) without Doubt will be punish'd. So likewise when an Author is quoted; as *bem aventurada sera a Republica (dizia Platan) ná qual os filósofos réynem*, happy will be the Republick (said Plato) in which Philosophers govern.

The &c. is an Abbreviation of the *Latin* Words *et cætera*, and the rest, and is made use of to express that the Sentence is not perfectly finish'd, and that something which is not very material, or obvious to every one, is left for the Reader (or Hearer) to imagine.

The *v. g. verbi gratia*, in *English* to say, and *e. g. exempli gratia*, for Example, are apply'd when something is to be alledg'd to illustrate what has been said before.

The Asterisk and other Signs we omit for Brevity's Sake, as being what Custom in Reading and Writing will introduce of course.

\*\*\*\*\*

### *The ETYMOLOGY. Observations on the Nature of the Language itself.*

THE Spaniards pretend the Portuguese is a Bastard of their Language, and endeavour to prove it from History, and the Idiom of the Lan-

Language itself, and many Words which appear to be a Contraction of the *Spanish* in some Measure, seem to confirm it; as *pó, só, cor, dino, leóa, ucár, ter, pór, soar, cear, suar, ler, &c.* in *Spanish*, *patvo, solo, color, digno, leona, volar, tener, poner, sonar, cenar, judar, Dust, alone, Colour, worthy, a Lions, to fly, to hold, to put, to sound, to sup, to sweat, &c.* But as these Words all proceed from the *Latin*, the *Portuguese* have perhaps as good a Right to say the *Spaniards* have borrow'd them from them, and made them longer, as that they should have had them from the *Spaniards*, and made them shorter. 'Tis true, the *Spaniards* were Masters of *Portugal* for a considerable Time, and probably introduced many of their Words into that Nation, as the *French* have done likewise; but, as upon Account of a Settlement the *Romans* had in *Portugal* as well as in *Spain*, it is more than probable they had their Language immediately from the *Latin*; I don't therefore see, how the *Spaniards* should be allow'd the Honour of fathering this Language, although it owes perhaps some Words to them.

The *Portuguese* then derives its Original from the *Latin*, and that it retains a greater Affinity to it than any other Language, is what they much contend for. They can produce whole Sentences which are both good *Latin* and *Portuguese*, and in both Languages express the same Sense; as *durante isto vento tam contrario, tu toleras duras & injustas misérias*, during that so contrary Wind, thou sufferest hard and unjust Miseries; *supplico vos, o Principes, amantes causas publicas!* I intreat you, O Princes, loving publick Causes! If I had not been scrupulous in these Examples, even to a Letter, and if I had thought the Reader would allow a small Alteration, as from *us* to *o*, or from *n* to *m*, or some such trifling Changes,

I could have inserted considerable Passages of *Portuguese* all *Latin* Words. And for this Reason, the *Portuguese* seem to have retained a greater Affinity to the *Latin* than any other of its Descendants: Besides, that their Construction is very like the *Latin*, and that they endeavour to pronounce as they write, and write as they pronounce, are doubtless also reasonable Arguments for the Purity of their Language. But as we have said somewhat already in the Preface on this Head, we forbear saying any more here, to avoid needless Repetitions, and proceed to make our Observations on the Nature of the Language itself.

Such Words as are naturally and originally *Latin*, ought to be written and express'd in the same Characters; as *terra*, *massa*, *syllaba*, except such Words which in their Pronunciation alter their Sound, v. g. the Word *choro* in *Latin* is written with an *h*, and signifies a Choir and Concert of Musick; but in the *Portuguese* with an *b* signifies Lamentation, and *coro* signifies a Concert and Choir. In the same Manner we are not to write *parocho*, but *paroco*; and *caridade*, not *charidade*; *monarca*, not *monarcha*, and the like, because by the *b* the Syllables obtain a quite different Sound.

When the *Latin* Letter is doubled, the *Portuguese* commonly follow their Example; as *aggravar*, *aggravo*; *exaggerar*, *exaggeraçam*.

The *Latin* *ti* is commonly changed into *ç*, *ci* or *s*; as in *graça*, *presença*, *doença*, *paciência*, *clemência*, *violência*.

The *c* in *Latin* Words adapted to this Language, is often changed into *u* or *y*; as *doutor*, *reytor*, *perfeito*, *effeito*, from *doctor*, *rector*, *perfectus*, *effectus*, &c.

As for Words where there is any Doubt, whether the Letter *s* or *z* is to be used, having both the same Sound, they generally follow the *Latin*;  
as



as they write *uso*, and not *uzo*; *applauso*, not *ap-plauzo*; *causa*, not *cauza*, and the like.

They generally change the Letters *pb* into *f*; as in *filósofo*, *ortographia*, *Felippe*, &c.

The Words the *Latins* write with a Diphthong the *Portuguese* express with a single Vowel; as *Ethiopia*, *Æthiopia*; *edifício*, *ædificium*; *estio*, *æstas*; *herdeiro*, *hæres*; *pena*, *pæna*; *feno*, *fanum*.

No *Portuguese* Words end in the following Consonants, *viz.* *b, c, d, f, g, n, p, q, t, x*; but only in *l, m, r, s, z*.

Vowels in general are not doubled if they are of the same kind, and belong to the same Word; I say of the same kind, because in the Word *mentis* *i* and *y* are Vowels of a different kind; and I say belonging to the same Word, because when we say *venda* and *amavaa*, for *a vendo* and *a amava*, the two last Vowels are not duplicate, but one Vowel is joined to the other, which is an Article; and in *irmãã*, *maçãã*, &c, the *aa* is not to be considered as two distinct Vowels, because they soften themselves into one Syllable.

As for Consonants, it is certain that the Letters *x* and *z* can never be duplicate. The doubling of *r* and *s*, the Ear is the best Judge to distinguish it; for single and double they have two different Sounds; the one soft and weak, as in *amara*; the other harsher and stronger, as in *amarrã*, a Cable. The same may be observed of the Letter *s*; as in the Words *caso* and *casso*, a Fork or Flesh-Hook; but as to these, the distinguishing Ear and Practice of Conversation will give the best Rules. In the Word *accento* we easily perceive a double Consonant, and 'tis not difficult at all to be distinguished from the Word *acento*; yet there are some Words, in which Use, rather than the Ear, teach us whether the Consonants are duplicate or no; as for Example, in the Words *af-*  
*forár*



*forár, affinár, affogár*, to pay Tribute, to refine, to strangle. And it ought to be observed (as above) that in all Words derived from the *Latin*, the *Portuguese* love to imitate them in doubling of Consonants, as in the Words *affinidáde, aggravár, comunicár*; so *elle, amasse, lesse, ouvísse, fosse*.

The *f* and *c*, before *e* and *i*, have the same Sound in *Portuguese*, and to distinguish them in Writing, there is no other Rule than that the Words deriving from the *Latin* ought to be written with the same Letters; as *cebóla, cidáde, senádo, &c.* and not *sebóla, sidade, cenado*. The same should be observed also about the Letters *f* and *z*, that though they have the same Sound, they ought not to be used promiscuously; as *mensa* in *Latin* is in *Portuguese mesa*, and not *meza* with a *z*; so they write *casa*, not *caza*.

The *Latin* Words ending in *x* change the *x* for a *z* in the *Portuguese* Language; thus *pax, per-dix, vox, lux*, are in *Portuguese, paz, perdiz, voz, luz, &c.*

The *ç*, or *c* with its *Plica* at bottom, is often used for a double *f*; but when the Word is derived from the *Latin*, it is justly deemed a Mistake if you should write *ç* for *ff*; thus you are to write, *passo, massa, professor*, not *paço, maça, prof-seçar*.



### *Of the PROSODIE, or Accentuation of the Syllables.*

THE Quantity of Syllables is either short or long, though some pretend to introduce a Sort of a middle Pronunciation between short and long; which however, to avoid Confusion, we shall take no Notice of.

And

And for the Sake of observing a regular Method, we shall begin with those that have the Penultima in *a*.

The Words ending in *aba, abo, aca, aco, acha, acbo, açã, aço, ada, ado, afa, afo, aga, agem, agre, agro, alba, alho, ala*, and *alo*, have the Penultima's long, except *levado, cãgado, estômago, âmago, scândalo, bigamo, píramo*, &c. and some other Words derived from the *Latin*, which are short. Also the Penultima's in *apo, apa, aque, ara, aro, arra, arro, ata, ato, ava, avo, axa, axo, eza*, and *azo*, are long, though not without Exception; as *cântaro, púcaro, lúparo, tártaro*, &c. and *côncavo* and *bísavo*, which are short.

#### The Penultima in *e*.

The Penultima's in *eba, ebo, eda, edo, efa, efo*, are marked with an Accent, but are not pronounced quite so long as those terminating in *echa, echo, eca* and *eco*. The Penultima's in *eça, eço, ega* and *ego*, are also long, though not without some few Exceptions; as *córrego, cónego, sóffrego, pécego, sóllego, bátega, cócego*, which are short. Those in *ela*, and *elo, ema, emo, eva, eno, epa, epe, epo, eque, era, ero, esa, eso, eta, ete, eto, eva, eve*, and *evo*, are long, except *próspero* and *áspero*, which are short.

#### The Penultima in *i*.

The Words ending in *iba, ibe, ibo, icha, iche, icho, ica, ico, iça, ice, iço, ida, ide, ido, ifa, ife, ifo, ãga, igo, ija, ijo, ilba, ilbo, ila, ile, ilo, ima, imo, inba, inbo, ina, ino, ipa, ipe, ipo, iqua, ique, iquo, ira, ire, iro, isa, ise, iso, iza, izo, ita, ito, iva, ivo, ixa*, and *ixo*, are long; except *mecánico, agárico, crítico*, and the like, from the *Latin* or *Greek*, and *húmido, pálido, tórrido, hórrido, pródigo, ínfimo, anónimo, íntimo, máximo, péssimo, púlpito, vômito, decrépito, espírito*, which are short.

The

The Penultima in *o*.

The Words ending in *oba, obe, obo, obra, obre, obro, ocha, ocho, oca, oco, oça, oço, oda, ode, odo, ofa, ofe, ofo, ofra, ofre, ofro, oga, ogue, ogo, oja, ojo, ola, ole, olo, oma, ome, omo, ona, ono, onba, onbo, opa, ope, opo, oplo, oprá, opre, opro, ora, ore, oro, orra, orro, oſa, oſe, oſo, oza, ozo, ota, ote, oto, ova, ove, ovo, oxa, oxo*, are long, except *súccobo,íncobo, pírola*, and *frívolo*, which are short.

Words having their Penultima's in *u*.

Those Words ending in *uba, ubo, ubra, ubro, ucha, ucho, uça, uço, uca, uco, uda, ude, udo, uſa, uſe, uſo, uga, uge, ugo, uja, ujo, ulba, ulbe, ulbo, ula, ule, ulo, una, une, umo, unba, unbe, unbo, una, une, uno, upa, upe, upo, uque, ura, ure, uro, uſa, uſe, uſo, uza, uze, uzo, uta, ute, uto, utre, uxa, uxe, uxo, uva, uvo*, are long, except *súccubo,íncubo, vocábulo, vestibulo, ángulo, régulo, ámbula, trémula*, and *cómputo*, and some others derived from the *Latin*.

Observations of Penultima's before Vowels.

*a* before *e* is long, as *ſáe, cae*; before *i* short, as *ſaír, caír*; before *o*, and *ya, yo*, it is long, except when to the third Person Singular of the Indicative Mood the Particle *o* is added, as *cómao, bébao*.

*e* before other Vowels.

*e* before *a* is long, except in *gátea, bóreas*, and in the third Person of the Imperative, when the Particle is annexed, as *mátea*; before *o* it sounds long, except *páteo*, and in the said Persons when the Letter *o* is subjoined, as *máteo*, and in *fêmea, ſêmeas, eſcórea*, and other Words derived from the *Latin*; but it is long before the *u*, when the two Vowels melt into a Diphthong, giving a distinct Sound of each, as in *coriféu, ſandéu*.

*i* be.

*i* before other Vowels.

*i* before *a*, *e*, and *o* is long, excepting *espécia*, *féria*, *comédia*, *sciencia*, and other Words from the *Latin*.

*o* before other Vowels.

*o* before *a*, *e*, and *u* is long; but before *i* it is hardly perceived as to its Sound, and reputed to be short, as in the Words *roim*, *poir*.

*u* before other Vowels.

*u* before *a* is long, except in *cápua*, *pápua*, *ínfeca*; before *e*, *i*, and *o* it is long, except in some few Words of the *Latin* produce.

The Accent or Tone of the last Syllables.

First those ending with a Vowel; and to begin with a regular Method, those ending in *a* are short, excepting *tafetá*, *bosetá*, *maná*, *cá*, *lá*, *acolá*, *exalá*, *pá*, *pará*, and in the third Persons Singular of the future Tense of the Indicative Mood, v. g. *amará*, *lerá*, *cuvirá*, *rirá*, &c.

Words ending in *e*

Make the last Syllable short, except *galé*, *polé*, *poté*, *maré*, *chaminé*, *loulé*, *pontapé*, *relé*, &c.

Words ending in *i*

Make their last Syllable long; but those that terminate with the Diphthong *ay*, *ey*, *oy*, and *uy*, have their Penultima's long.

Words ending in *o*

Have their last Syllable regularly short, except *avó*, *enxó*, *icbó*, *silbó*, *teyró*, and the third Persons Singular of the Preterperfect Tense Indicative Mood.

Words ending in *u*

Are generally long in the last Syllable, excepting such as have a Vowel precedent to it; for then by forming a Diphthong the Sound is different in the Pronunciation, and the Penultima grows long, as in *amóu*, *levóu*, &c.

Words



Words terminating in *l, m, r, s, z.*

All Words ending in *al* are long, except only one, *Setúval*, a Sea-Port Town of that Name in *Portugal*.

Those that end in *el* are long in the last Syllable, except *agradável, visível, amável, &c.*

Words terminating in *il* are long, except *dócil, fácil, hábil*, and the like, derived from the *Latin*.

All Words ending in *ol* are long, without Exception.

Likewise those in *ul*, except *cónsul*, a Consul.

Words terminating in *m.*

The Nouns that end in *am* are long; but the Verbs in the third Person Plural of the Indicative Present are short; and the third Person Plural of the Future Indicative are long, as *amarám, lerám, ouvirám, &c.*

Those that end in *em* are short, except some Nouns, *bedém, parabém*; also the Verb *tem*, with its Compounds, as *mantém, detém, retém, contém*, with the Words *aquém, além, porém*, which are long. The Words in *im* are all long. Those in *om* and *um* are also long.

Words terminating in *r.*

Those that terminate in *ar*, are long, except *açúcar, néctar, aljófar, âmbar, &c.*

Those in *er* are likewise long, without Exception. In *ir* are long; such are the Infinitives of the Verbs of the second Conjugation; and here the Verb *mártir* is only excepted.

In *or* are long.

Very few *Portuguese* Words end in *ur*; but those that do, sound long.

Words terminating in *s.*

All Words terminating in *as* being Nouns, in their Pronunciation in the Plural Number imitate the Singular; if short in Singular, they are so in the Plural; as *cása, cásas; cúsa, cúsas*; and if

long in the Singular, they are the same in the Plural; as *tafetá, tafetás; bofetá, bofetás*. The same Rule is also applicable to all Verbs, in what Tense soever; for whatever Letter the first Person ends in, if that be short or long, the second person will be the same; as *ámo, ámas, amáva, amáva, amávas, amaréy, amáras*.

All Words ending in *es* in the Plural Number, which in the singular have an *e* short, are likewise short in the Plural; as *tígre, tígres; pádre, pádres*; but those that have an *e* long in the Singular, have a long Termination in the Plural; as *maré, marés; chaminé, chaminés*. The Syllable *es* in the second Person of the Indicative Present in the second and third Conjugation is short; as *escrêves, ouvres, môves, tósses*.

Words ending in *is* or *iz* are long, except some Words that end in *ays, eys, oys, uys*; as *cáys, arráys, réys, léys, caracóys, róys, pánsy, azúys*, and the Verbs *amáys, ensináys, diréys, faréys*.

Words ending in *os*, when they derive from a Singular short, the Plurals are short also; when the Singular is long, the Plural is so too. All the first Persons Plural of all Verbs are short in their last Syllables; as *amámos, amávamos, amémos, lémos, líamos, ouvímos*.

The Nouns ending in *us* are long, except those that have another Vowel before the *u*, and make a Diphthong, as *sandéu, sandéus*.

Words terminating in *z*,

Whether in *az, ez, iz, oz*, and *xz*, are long except *appêndiz*.

This may suffice to instruct the Reader in the general Rules how and in what Manner to place the Accents or Tones upon Words. We might have said much more upon this Subject, but the rest will soon be learned by Reading or Conversation.

---

A  
VOCABULARY  
I N

*English and Portuguese.*

---

C H A P. I.

*Nouns Substantive.*

Of Things, *De cousas.*

**A** *Thing*, a cóusa,  
*Nature*, a natu-  
réza.

*a Beginning*, o principio.

*an End*, o fim.

*an Order*, a ordem.

*Time*, o tempo.

*a Number*, o número.

*a Place*, o lugar.

*a Space*, o espaço.

*a Name*, o nome.

*a Sign*, o sinal.

*a Mode or Manner*, o  
modo a maneira.

*a Mark*, a marca.

*a Kind*, a sorte, o género.

*a Part*, a parte.

*a Member*, o membro.

*a broken Piece*, o pedaço.

*a cut Piece*, o fatia.

*a little Piece*, o peda-  
cinho.

*Nothing*, nada.

*Matter*, a matéria.

*Form*, a forma.

*a Figure*, a figura.

*a Body*, o corpo.

---

Of the World and the  
Elements, *dó mundo*  
*e dós elementos.*

*the World*, o mundo.

*the Sky*, o firmamento.

*the Sun*, o sol.

*the Moon*, a lua.

164 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

*a Star*, a estrella.

*a Planet*, o Planeta.

*a Comet*, a cometa.

*Light*, a luz.

*a Sun-beam*, o rão dó fol.

*Darkness*, a obscuridade.

*a Shadow*, a sombra.

*an Eclipse*, a eclipse.

*the New Moon*, a lúa nova.

*the Full Moon*, a lúa chéya.

*the Wane of the Moon*, o mingóante dá lúa.

*the increasing Moon*, a lúa crescente.

*an Element*, o elemento.

*Fire*, o fogo.

*Air*, o ár.

*Water*, a água.

*Earth*, a terra.

*a Flame*, a flama.

*a Spark*, a faísca.

*Smoke*, o fumo.

*Scot*, a ferrúgem.

*a Fire, when a House is on Fire*, o incêndio.

*a Firebrand*, o tiffam acêfo.

*a live or hot Coal*, o carvám acêfo.

*a Coal*, o carvám.

*Sea-coal*, o carvám de pedra.

*Embers, or hot Ashes*, a cinza quente, o borralho.

*a Cloud*, a núvem.

*a Fog or Mist*, a névoa:

*a Vapour*, o vapor.

*a Wind*, o vento.

*a gentle Wind*, o Zéfiro, o vento gentíl.

*a Whirlwind*, o pé de vento.

*a Tempest*, a tempestade, a trabuzána.

*serene Weather*, tempo sereno.

*good Weather*, bom tempo.

*bad Weather*, tempo, ruim.

*foggy or dark Weather*, tempo nevoádo.

*rainy Weather*, tempo chuvófo.

*a little Wind*, o ventinho.

*the East Wind*, o vento d'Este.

*East North-East Wind*, o vento d'Este Nor d'Este.

*North-East Wind*, o vento Nor d'Este.

*North North-East*, Nor Nor d'Este.

*North Wind*, o vento de Norte.

*North North-West Wind*, o vento Nor Nor d'Oéste.

*North West*, Nor Oéste.

*West North-West*, Oéste Nor-Oéste.

*West*, Oéste.

*West*,



*A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 165

<i>West South-West</i> , Oéste	<i>the Ebb</i> , o vazante dá
Sud Oéste.	maré.
<i>South-West</i> , Sud Oéste.	<i>a Shore</i> , o bordo.
<i>South South-West</i> , Sul	<i>a Haven or Port</i> , o porto.
Sud Oéste.	<i>a Gulf or Bay</i> , o golfo,
<i>South-Wind</i> , o vento de	a bahía.
Sul.	<i>an Island</i> , a ilha.
<i>South South-East</i> , Sul	<i>a Peninsula</i> , a península.
Sud éste.	<i>a Bank</i> , a ribancéira.
<i>South-East</i> , Sud este.	<i>a Channel</i> , o canál.
<i>East South-East</i> , Este	<i>a Ford</i> , o vâm.
Sud éste.	<i>a Well</i> , o poço.
<i>a Rainbow</i> , o arco ce-	<i>a Ditch</i> , o fosso.
leste.	<i>a Pool or Pond</i> , a lagóa.
<i>Thunder</i> , o trovâm.	<i>a Marsh or Fen, or fenny</i>
<i>Lightening</i> , o relâmpago.	<i>Ground</i> , terra alagada.
<i>Rain</i> , a chuva.	<i>a Lake</i> , o lago.
<i>a Shower</i> , a chuva de	<i>a Bog</i> , o atoléyro.
trovâm.	<i>a Slough</i> , a lamaçal.
<i>Snow</i> , a neve.	<i>a Fish-pond</i> , o viveyro
<i>Hail</i> , o pedrisco.	de péixes.
<i>Dew</i> , o orvalho, rosío.	<i>a Drop of Water</i> , a gotta
<i>hoar or white Frost</i> , o	d'agua.
gelo.	<i>a Bubble</i> , a ampolla d'a-
<i>a great Shower</i> , a bor-	gua.
rafca.	<i>Froth</i> , a escuma.
<i>a Spring or Fountain</i> , a	<i>Ice</i> , a geáda.
fonte.	<i>Cold</i> , frio.
<i>a River</i> , a ribéira.	<i>Heat</i> , o calór.
<i>a great River</i> , o río.	<i>the Continent or main</i>
<i>a Brook</i> , o torrente.	<i>Land</i> , o continente, a
<i>a Stream</i> , o corrente.	terra firme.
<i>the Sea</i> , o mar.	<i>a Mountain</i> , o monte.
<i>the Ocean</i> , o océano.	<i>a Hill</i> , ou outéiro.
<i>a Wave</i> , a onda.	<i>a Rock</i> , a rocha, a penha.
<i>the Tide</i> , a maré.	<i>a plain Field</i> , o campo.
<i>the Flowing</i> , o crecente	<i>a Valley</i> , o valle.
dá maré,	<i>Mud</i> , o limo, o lodo.
	<i>Dirt</i> ,

# 166 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

*Dirt*, o esterco.

*Dust*, o pô.

*a Clod of Earth*, o torrão.

*a Turf*, torram comerva.

*Clay*, o barro.

*Red-oker*, o almagre.

*Marl, or white Earth*, barro branco.

*Chalk*, a greda, o giz.

*Fullers Earth*, greda barro.

*Heaven*, o céu.

*Hell*, o inferno.

*Purgatory*, o purgatório.

*God*, o Déos.

*an Angel*, o anjo.

*Paradise*, o paraíso.

*a Soul*, a alma.

*a Devil*, o Diabo.

---

## Of Time and the Seasons, *de tempo e sezões.*

*Time*, o tempo.

*a Day*, o día.

*a Night*, a nóite.

*Noon*, o méyo dia.

*Midnight*, méya nóite.

*Morning*, a manhã.

*Evening*, a tarde.

*a Sun-dial*, o relógio de sol.

*a Clock*, o relógio.

*an Hour-glass*, o relógio de areia.

*a Watch*, o relógio de algibêira.

*a Watchman*, o vigidor.

*an Hour*, a hora.

*Half an Hour*, a méya hora.

*a Quarter of an Hour*, o quarto de hora.

*three Quarters of an Hour*, tres quartos de hora.

*To-day*, oje.

*Yesterday*, óntem.

*To-morrow*, a menhã.

*before Yesterday*, antón-tem.

*this Evening*, esta tarda.

*this Morning*, esta menhã.

*after Dinner*, depóis dô jantar.

*after Supper*, depóis dô ceár.

*a Week*, a semana.

*a Fortnight*, quinze dias.

*a Month*, o mez.

*a Year*, o anno.

*a Minute*, o minuto.

*a Moment*, o momento.

*the Spring*, o verão.

*the Summer*, o estío.

*Autumn*, o outono.

*the Winter*, o inverno.

*Day-break*, a madrugada.

*Sun-set*, o solpoito.

*Sun-rise*, o nacemento do sol.

*Dusk of the Evening*, o lusco fusco.

*Monday*, a secunda féyra.

*Tuesday*, a terça féyra.

*Wednesday*, a quarta féyra

*Thursday*,

# *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 167*

<i>Thursday</i> , a quinta féyra.	<i>the East-Indies</i> , as Indias Orientaes.
<i>Friday</i> , a festa féyra.	<i>the West Indies</i> , as Indias Occidentaes.
<i>Saturday</i> , o Sábado.	<i>Great Britain</i> , a Grande Bretanha.
<i>Sunday</i> , o Domingo.	<i>England</i> , a Ingalaterra
<i>a Holy-day</i> , o dia féstivo.	<i>Scotland</i> , a Escocia.
<i>a Work-day</i> , o dia do trabalho.	<i>Ireland</i> , a Irlanda.
<i>New-year's-day</i> , o anno novo.	<i>Denmark</i> , a Dinamarca.
<i>Easter-day</i> , o Páscoa.	<i>Norway</i> , a Norvega.
<i>Whitsunday</i> , a Pentecoste.	<i>Sweden</i> , a Suecia.
<i>St. John's-day</i> , o Sam Joám.	<i>Muscovy or Russia</i> , a Moscóvia a Russia.
<i>Michaelmas-day</i> , o Sam Miguel.	<i>Germany</i> , a Alemanha.
<i>Christmas-day</i> , o natal.	<i>France</i> , a França.
<i>January</i> , o Janéiro.	<i>Holland</i> , a Ollanda.
<i>February</i> , o Fevréiro.	<i>the United Provinces</i> , as Provincias Unidas.
<i>March</i> , o Março.	<i>Flanders</i> , a Flandes.
<i>April</i> , o Abril.	<i>Switzerland</i> , a Suiffa.
<i>May</i> , o Máyo.	<i>Spain</i> , a Espanha.
<i>June</i> , o Junho.	<i>Portugal</i> , o Portugal.
<i>July</i> , o Julho.	<i>Poland</i> , a Polónia.
<i>August</i> , o Agosto.	<i>Italy</i> , a Italia.
<i>September</i> , o Setembro.	<i>Hungary</i> , a Ungaria.
<i>October</i> , o Outúbro.	<i>Turkey</i> , a Turquía.
<i>November</i> , o Novembro.	<i>a capital City</i> , a villa capital.
<i>December</i> , Dezembro.	<i>London</i> , Londres.
<hr/>	
Of Countries and Cities, <i>de terras e cidades.</i>	<i>Edenburg</i> , Edimburgo.
<i>Europe</i> , a Európa.	<i>Dublin</i> , Dublin.
<i>Asia</i> , a Asia.	<i>Copenhagen</i> , Copenaga.
<i>Africa</i> , a Africa.	<i>Drontheim</i> , Drontheim.
<i>America</i> , a América.	<i>Stockholm</i> , Estocolmo.
	<i>Moscow</i> , Mosco.
	<i>Vienna</i> , Viena.
	<i>Paris</i> , Paris.

*Amsterdam*, Amsterdám.

*Brussels*, Brusselas.

*Basil*, Basila.

*Madrid*, Madrid.

*Lisbon*, Lisboa.

*Cracow*, Cracóvia.

*Rome*, Roma.

*Venice*, Veneza.

*Belgrade*, Belgrada.

*Constantinople*, Constantinopola.

---

Of Minerals and precious Stones, *De mineras e pedras preciosas.*

*a Mine*, a mina.

*a Mineral*, o mineral.

*a Metal*, o metál.

*Gold*, o óura.

*Silver*, a prata.

*Brass*, o latám.

*Copper*, o cobre.

*Iron*, o ferro.

*Steel*, o aço.

*Lead*, o chumbo.

*Tin*, o estanho.

*Quicksilver*, o azógue.

*White Lead*, o alvayáde.

*Vermilion, or red Lead*, o vermelhám.

*Verdigrease*, o ferrógem do cobre.

*Rust*, a ferrúgem.

*Salt*, o sal.

*Alum*, o alume.

*Brimstone*, o enxófre.

*Amber*, o ambar.

*Salt Petre*, o salitre.

*a Stone*, a pedra.

*a Flint-Stone*, a pedra de fogo.

*a Whetstone*, a pedra de sevár.

*a Touchstone*, a pedra de toque.

*Plaster*, o gesso.

*Lime*, a cal.

*Sand*, a aréa.

*Gravel*, o cascalho.

*Marble*, o mármore.

*a precious Stone*, a pedra preciosa.

*a Jewel*, a jóya.

*a Diamond*, a diamante.

*a Brilliant*, o brilhante.

*a Rose*, a rosa.

*a Sapphire*, a zafira.

*a Chrysolite*, a crisolita.

*an Emerald*, a emeralda.

*a jasper*, o jaspe.

*an Agate*, a agatha.

*an Amethyst*, a matista.

*a Ruby*, o rubím.

*a Turkeise*, a turquesa.

*a Cornelian*, a Cornelina.

*a Glass*, o vidro.

*a Crystal*, o cristál.

*a Pearl*, o pérola.

*a Coral*, o corál.

---

Of Herbs and Flowers,  
*De ervas e flores,*

*an Herb*, a erva.

*a Flower*, a flor.

*Grass*, a erva.

*Flax*,



<i>Flax</i> , o linho.	<i>Endive</i> , a fcaróla.
<i>Hemp</i> , a cânhamo.	<i>Fennel</i> , o fenolho.
<i>a Stalk</i> , o talo.	<i>Hop</i> , o pé de gallo, lúpulos.
<i>a Plant</i> , a planta.	<i>Hyssop</i> , o isopo.
<i>an Architoke</i> , a alcachofra.	<i>Jessamin</i> , o jasmin.
<i>Bean</i> , a fava.	<i>Lavender</i> , a lavéndo.
<i>French-Beans</i> , os féy-joins.	<i>a Lilly</i> , o lirio.
<i>a Carrot</i> , a cenóyra.	<i>Marjoram</i> , a manjorona.
<i>a Cucumber</i> , o pepino.	<i>Mint</i> , a ortelãã.
<i>a Cabbage</i> , a cóuve.	<i>a Nettle</i> , a ortiga.
<i>a Colliflower</i> , á cóuve de flor.	<i>a Poppy</i> , a dormadeira.
<i>eatable Herbs</i> , as ortalifas.	<i>Rosemary</i> , o alecrim.
<i>Garlick</i> , o alho.	<i>Rue</i> , a ruda.
<i>a Gourd</i> , a calabauça.	<i>a Rose</i> , a rosa.
<i>Lettice</i> , a alface.	<i>Saffron</i> , o asafram.
<i>a Leek</i> , o porro.	<i>Sage</i> , a falva.
<i>a Melon</i> , o melám.	<i>Sorrel</i> , a azeda.
<i>Mustard</i> , a Mostarda.	<i>Spinage</i> , as espinafres.
<i>a Mushbroom</i> , o cugúme-lo, o fungo.	<i>a Thistle</i> , o cardo.
<i>an Onion</i> , a cebola.	<i>Thyme</i> , o tumilho.
<i>a Radish</i> , o rabo.	<i>Trefoil</i> , o trefolho.
<i>Horse-radish</i> , a Mar-réca.	<i>a Tulip</i> , a túlipa.
<i>Turnip</i> , o nabo.	<i>Tobacco</i> , o tabaco.
<i>Anis</i> , a erva doce.	<i>a Violet</i> , a viola.
<i>Baulm</i> , a erva cidéira.	<i>Wormwood</i> , a lozna.
<i>Basil</i> , a basilica.	<i>Corn</i> , o gram.
<i>Borrage</i> , as borragens.	<i>Barley</i> , a cevada.
<i>Burnet</i> , a pimpinela.	<i>Millet</i> , o milho.
<i>Camomile</i> , a camomila.	<i>Rey</i> , o sentéyo.
<i>Caraways</i> , a caravéa.	<i>Oat</i> , a avéa.
<i>Chicory</i> , chicoréa.	<i>Rice</i> , o arroz.
<i>Cresses</i> , o mastruço.	<i>Wheat</i> , o trigo.
	<i>Meal or Flower</i> , a farinha.
	<i>Bran</i> , o farelho.
	<i>Pulse</i> , o legumen.
	<i>a Lentil</i> , a lentilha.
	<i>a Pea</i> ,

# 170 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

*a Pea*, a ervilha.

*a Beard (of corn)* a a-  
resta.

*an Ear*, a espiga.

*a Grain or single Corn*,  
hum gram.

*Straw*, a palha.

*Seed*, a semente.

*Of Trees, Shrubs, and  
Fruits. De árvores,  
matas e frúitos.*

*a Bramble*, a mata.

*a Rose-bush*, a rosêira.

*a Vineyard*, a vinha.

*a Vine*, a vide.

*a Bunch of Grapes*, o ca-  
cho de uvas.

*a Grape*, a uva.

*a Tree*, a árvore.

*a Bough*, o ramo.

*a Leaf*, a folha.

*the Stick of a Tree*, o  
Tronco.

*the Bark*, a cortiça.

*a Twig*, a verga.

*the Root*, a raiz.

*the Juice*, o çumo.

*Fruit*, o frúito.

*an Apple-tree*, a macêira.

*an Apple*, a maçã.

*a Pear-tree*, a perêira.

*a Pear*, a pera.

*a Cherry-tree*, a cerejéyra.

*a Cherry*, a cereja.

*a Plumb-tree*, a ameixêira

*a Plumb*, a ameêixa.

*a Fig-tree*, a figuéyra.

*a Fig*, o figo.

*an Olave-tree*, a olivéyra.

*an Olive*, a azeitóna.

*an Ash-tree*, o fréixo.

*a Beech-tree*, a fáya.

*a Poplar-tree*, o alemo.

*an Elm*, o olmo.

*an Oak*, o carvalho.

*a Fir-tree*, o pinhéiro.

*a Willow*, o fálguéiro.

*a Nut-shell*, a casca dá  
noz.

*a Kernel*, o miolo.

*a Wall-nut*, a noz.

*a Small-nut*, a velãã.

*a Chesnut*, a canstanha.

*a Medlar*, a nespéra.

*an Almond-tree*, a amen-  
doêira.

*an Almond*, a amêndoa.

*a Berry*, a baga.

*a Date*, a támara.

*a Quince*, o marmélo.

*an Orange*, a laranja.

*a Citron*, a cidra.

*a Lemon*, o limám.

*an Apricot*, o damasco.

*a Peach*, o péssigo.

*a Strawberry*, o morán-  
gam.

*a Blackberry*, a amora  
bráva.

*a Mulberry*, o amora.

*Currants*, as passas de  
coryntha.

*a Pomgranate*, a romãã.

*a Nectarin*, o durázio.

*a Raf-*

*A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 171

*a Raspberry*, a amóra do mato.

*Wood*, o pão.

*a Faggot*, a fé ze.

*a Wood*, o bosque.

*a Forest*, a brenha.

*a Grove*, o arvoredor.

*Spice*, as espécias.

*Cinnamon*, a canela.

*Cloves*, os cravos da Índia.

*Ginger*, o gengibre.

*Mace*, a macia.

*a Nutmeg*, a noz moscada.

*Pepper*, a pimenta.

*Vinegar*, a vinagre.

*Frankincense*, o ensenso.

*Myrrh*, a mirra.

*Musk*, o almiscár.

*Resin*, a resina.

*Turpentine*, a termentina.

*Pitch*, o pez.

*Gum*, a gomma.

---

Of Animals in general.

*Dos animays em géral.*

*a Creature*, a criatura.

*an Animal*, o animal.

*Life*, a vida.

*Sense*, o sentido.

*Sex*, o sexo.

*the Sight*, a vista.

*the Hearing*, ouvido.

*the Smell*, o cheirar.

*the Taste*, o gosto.

*the Feeling*, o tacto.

*a Colour*, a cor.

*a Sound*, o som.

*a Smell*, o cheiro.

*a Voice*, a voz.

*a Taste*, o sabor.

*common Sense*, o sensu comum.

*the Fancy*, a fantesia.

*the Memory*, a memoria.

*Imagination*, a imaginação.

*a Male*, o macho.

*a Female*, a fêmea.

*an Insect*, o insecto.

*a Bird*, o pássaro.

*a Fish*, a peixe.

*a Beast or Brute*, a besta, o bruto.

*a Man*, o homem.

---

Of Insects. *De insectos.*

*a Worm*, o bicho.

*an Ant*, a formiga.

*a Flea*, a pulga.

*a Louse*, o piolho.

*a Moth*, a traça.

*a Silk-worm*, o bicho de seda.

*a Snail*, o caracol.

*a Spider*, a aranha.

*a Bug*, o perfovejo.

*a Fly*, a mosca.

*a Bee*, a abelha.

*a Butterfly*, a barboleta.

*a Gnat*, o mosquito.

*a Grass-hopper*, a lagosta.

*a Wasp*, o bespão.

*a Viper*

## 172 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

*a Viper*, a víbora.  
*an Asp*, o aspid.  
*a Snake*, a cobra.  
*a Serpent*, o serpente.  
*a Lizard*, o lagarto.  
*a Frog*, a ram.  
*a Toad*, o sapo.  
*a Scorpion*, o escorpião.  
*a Bee-bive*, a colméa.  
*Honey*, o mel.  
*a Honey-comb*, o favo.  
*Wax*, a cera.  
*a Swarm of Bees*, o enxame de abelhas.  
*a Sting*, o agulhão.

---

### Of Birds, *de pássaros.*

*a Bird's Bill*, o bico da ave.  
*a Wing*, a asa.  
*a Feather*, a pena.  
*Down*, a penúgem.  
*a Spur*, a espora.  
*a Claw*, a unha.  
*a Nest*, o ninho.  
*a Cage*, a gaiola.  
*an Egg*, o ovo.  
*a Shell*, a casca.  
*a Fowler*, o caçador de aves.  
*Birdlime*, o visco.  
*a Bat*, o morcego.  
*a Blackbird*, a melroa.  
*a Capon*, o capão.  
*a Cock*, o gallo.  
*a Chicken*, o pintão.  
*a Crane*, o grão.

*a Crow*, a gralha.  
*a Cuckow*, o cuco.  
*a Diver*, o mergulhão.  
*a Pigeon*, a pomba.  
*a Turtle-dove*, a rola.  
*a Ring-dove*, o pombo torcas.  
*a Pigeon-house*, o pomboal.  
*a Duck*, a adormida.  
*an Eagle*, a águia.  
*a Falcon*, o falcão.  
*a Goldfinch*, o pintasilgo.  
*a Goose*, o pato.  
*a Gull*, a gaivota.  
*an Hawk*, o açor.  
*a Hen*, a galinha.  
*a Heron*, a garça.  
*a Jackdaw*, a gralhinda.  
*a King's-fisher*, a pica-péize.  
*a Kite*, o minhoto.  
*a Lark*, a cotovia.  
*a Nightingale*, o rouxinol.  
*an Owl*, o coruja.  
*a Screech-owl*, o búfo.  
*an Ostrich*, o avestruz.  
*a Parrot*, o papagaio.  
*a Partridge*, a perdiz.  
*a Peacock*, o pavão.  
*a Pelican*, o pelicano.  
*a Pheasant*, o faisão.  
*a Pye*, a pega.  
*a Quail*, o codorniz.  
*a Raven*, o corvo.  
*a Snipe*, o narcejo, francolim.  
*a Sparrow*, o perdão.

*a Star*



## *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 173*

*a Starling*, o estorminho.  
*a Stork*, a cegonha.  
*a Swallow*, a andorinha.  
*a Swan*, o cirne, cisne.  
*a Teal*, o marreco.  
*a Thrush*, o tordo.  
*a Turkey*, o peru.  
*a Turkey-ben*, a perua.  
*a Vulture*, o abutre.  
*a Wagtail*, a pezpita.  
*a Wood-cock*, a galinhola.

---

### *Of Fishes, de peixes.*

*a Fish*, a peixe.  
*the Gills*, as guelras da peixe.  
*the Fins*, as barbatanas.  
*the Scale*, a escama.  
*a Shell-fish*, o marisco de concha.  
*a Shell*, a concha.  
*a Fisherman*, o pescador.  
*a Net*, a rede.  
*an Angle-rod*, a cana de pescar.  
*a Line*, a fedela.  
*a Hook*, o anzol.  
*a Bait*, a isca.  
*a Plummet*, o prumo.  
*a Fishmonger*, o pescadéiro.  
*Salt-fish*, o badejo.  
*a Barbel*, o barbo.  
*a Cockle*, a amêijoia.  
*a Cod-fish*, a pescada.  
*a Crevice*, o caranguêjo.  
*a Dolphin*, o golfinho.

*an Eel*, a enguia, o eyro.  
*a Gudgeon*, o cadoz.  
*a Herring*, o arenque.  
*a Lamprey*, a lamprêa.  
*a Mackrel*, a sarda.  
*a Mullet*, a téinha.  
*Muscles*, os meixilhões.  
*an Otter*, a lontra.  
*an Oyster*, a ostra.  
*a Salmon*, o falmám.  
*a Shrimp*, o camaram.  
*a Sole*, a folha.  
*a Sturgeon*, a peixe folho.  
*a Thornback*, a raya.  
*a Tortoise*, a tartaruga, o cágado.  
*a Trout*, a truíta.  
*a Whale*, a baléa.  
*a Whiting*, o fanéco.

---

### *Of Beasts, de feras ou bestas.*

*a Beast*, a fera, besta.  
*a labouring Beast*, o jumento.  
*Cattle*, o gado.  
*an Herd*, a manada de gado.  
*a Hide*, o couro.  
*a Horn*, o corno.  
*a Hoof*, a unha.  
*a Mane*, a coma.  
*a Bristle*, a feda de porco.  
*a Tail*, o rabo, a cauda.  
*an Ape*, o bugio.

# 174 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>an Ass</i> , o asno.	<i>a Hare</i> , o lebre.
<i>a Badger</i> , o texúgo.	<i>a Hedgehog</i> , o ouriço cachéiro.
<i>a Bear</i> , o urso.	<i>a Hog</i> , o porco.
<i>a Beaver</i> , o castór.	<i>a Hogs-sty</i> , o chiquéiro de porcos.
<i>a Bull</i> , o touro.	<i>Hogs Dung</i> , o esterco de porcos.
<i>a Camel</i> , o camélo.	<i>Hog-berd</i> , o porquéiro.
<i>a Calf</i> , a vitela.	<i>a wild Bear</i> , o porco montez.
<i>a Cat</i> , o gato.	<i>a tame Boar</i> , o porco marrám.
<i>a Coney</i> , o coélho.	<i>a Sow</i> , a porca.
<i>a Cow</i> , a vaca.	<i>a Pig</i> , o leitám.
<i>a Crocodile</i> , o crocodilo.	<i>a Horse</i> , o cavallo.
<i>a Dear</i> , o corço, a corça.	<i>a Mare</i> , a egoa.
<i>a Fawn</i> , o filho de corça.	<i>a Gelding</i> , o cavallo capado.
<i>a Hart or Stag</i> , o cervo.	<i>a Race-horse</i> , o cavallo de carreira.
<i>a Heifer</i> , a novilha.	<i>a Nag</i> , a faca.
<i>a Hind</i> , a cerva.	<i>an ambling Nag</i> , o quartám.
<i>a Dog</i> , o cão.	<i>a Hackney-horse</i> , o cavallo de alluguér.
<i>a Bitch</i> , a cadella.	<i>a Pack-horse</i> , o cavallo de bagagem.
<i>a Whelp</i> , o cachorro.	<i>a Groom</i> , o estribéiro.
<i>a Mastiff</i> , o raquéiro.	<i>a Halter</i> , o cabresto.
<i>a Spaniel</i> , o cão de caça das aves.	<i>a Lion</i> , o leão.
<i>a Mungrel</i> , o cão melleço.	<i>a Liness</i> , a leoa.
<i>a Dog's Collar</i> , o colar do cão.	<i>a Monkey</i> , o bugio.
<i>a Muzzle</i> , o cabresto.	<i>a Mouse</i> , o ratinho.
<i>a Dragon</i> , o dragão.	<i>a Mouse-trap</i> , a ratoeira.
<i>a Dromedary</i> , o dromedario.	<i>a Mule</i> , o mú.
<i>an Elephant</i> , o elefante.	<i>an Ox</i> , o boi.
<i>a Ferret</i> , o forão.	<i>a Panther</i> , a onça.
<i>a Fox</i> , a raposa.	<i>a Rat</i> ,
<i>a He-goat</i> , o cabrão bode.	
<i>a She-goat</i> , a cabra.	
<i>a Goat-berd</i> , o cabreiro.	
<i>a Kid or Lamb</i> , o cabrito.	

# *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese, 175*

<i>a Rat, o rato.</i>	<i>a Bachelor or single Per- son, hum (homem) foltéyro.</i>
<i>a Sheep, a ovelha.</i>	
<i>a Ram, o carnéyro.</i>	<i>a Maid or single Woman, huma (mulher) fol- téyra.</i>
<i>a Weather, o carnéyro capado.</i>	<i>a Man, o homem, va- rám.</i>
<i>a Lamb, o cordéyro.</i>	<i>a Woman, a mulher.</i>
<i>a Sheepfold, o curral de ovelhas.</i>	<i>an old Man, o velho.</i>
<i>a Shepherd, o pastor.</i>	<i>an old Woman, a velha.</i>
<i>a Sheep-hook, o cajado.</i>	<i>a Lover, o amante, en- amorado, amigo.</i>
<i>a Flock, a manada, o rebânho.</i>	<i>a Mistress, a amiga.</i>
<i>Wool, a lám.</i>	<i>a Bridegroom, o nóyvo.</i>
<i>a Fleece, o vela de lam.</i>	<i>a Bride, a nóyva.</i>
<i>a Squirrel, o ciúro.</i>	<i>a Husband, o marido.</i>
<i>a Tiger, a tire.</i>	<i>a Wife, a mulher.</i>
<i>a Unicorn, o alicorno.</i>	<i>a Marriage or Wedding, o casamento.</i>
<i>a Weefel, a doninda.</i>	<i>a Kin or Kinsman, o pa- rente, aliado.</i>
<i>a Wolf, o lobo.</i>	<i>the Ancestors, os ante- cessores.</i>
<hr/>	
<i>Of Man respecting his Age and Kindred, do bómem, ao respéito de sua ydade e parentesco.</i>	<i>Posterity, os successores.</i>
<i>Age, a ydade.</i>	<i>a Genealogy or Pedigree, a geneozia.</i>
<i>an Infant, a Babe, or Child, o menino, a menina.</i>	<i>a Grandfather, o avó.</i>
<i>a little Boy, a little Girl, a criança.</i>	<i>a Grandmother, a ovó.</i>
<i>a Boy or Lad, o rapaz.</i>	<i>a Father, o páy.</i>
<i>a Girl, a rapariga.</i>	<i>a Mother, a máy, máem.</i>
<i>a young Man, o moço.</i>	<i>a great Grandson, o bis- netto.</i>
<i>a young Woman, a moça donzella.</i>	<i>a Grandson, o netto.</i>
<i>a Virgin or Maid, a vir- gem.</i>	<i>a great Grand-daughter, a bisnetta.</i>
	<i>a Grand-daughter, a netta.</i>
	<i>a Son, o filho.</i>
	<i>a Daughter,</i>

# 176 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

*a Daughter*, a filha.

*a Brother*, o irmão.

*a Sister*, a irmã.

*a Father-in-law*, o sogro.

*a Mother-in-law*, a sogra.

*a Son-in-law*, o genro.

*a Daughter-in-law*, a nora.

*a Brother-in-law*, o cunhado.

*a Sister-in-law*, a cunhada.

*a Step-father*, o padrasto.

*a Step-mother*, a madrastra.

*a Step-son*, o enteado.

*a Step-daughter*, a enteada.

*an Uncle*, o tio.

*an Aunt*, a tia.

*a Nephew*, o sobrinho.

*a Niece*, a sobrinha.

*a Cousin-german, or first Cousin*, o primo, a prima irmão.

*a second Cousin*, o primo segundo, a prima.

*a Widower*, o viuvo.

*a Widow*, a viuva.

*an Heir*, o heredeiro.

*an Heiress*, a heredeira.

*an Orphan*, o orfão.

*a God-father*, o padrinho.

*a God-mother*, a comadre.

*a God-son*, o afilhado.

*a God-daughter*, a afilhada.

*a Bastard*, o bastardo, a bastarda.

*Twins*, os gémeos.

*a Giant*, o gigante.

*a Dwarf*, o pigmeo.

*an Acquaintance a Friend*, o conhecido, o amigo, a conhecida, a amiga.

*a Woman in Childbed*, a Mulher parida.

*a Midwife*, a partéyra.

*a Nurse*, a ama de leite, a ama.

*a Delivery or Birth*, o parto.

*a Miscarriage*, o mau parto.

*an Estate*, o estado, a fazenda.

*the last Will*, o testamento.

Of the Parts of a Man's Body, *dás partes do corpo de hum homem.*

*the Head*, a cabeça.

*the Trunk*, o tronco.

*a Limb*, o membro.

*the Hair*, o cabelo.

*the Ear*, a orelha.

*the Temples*, as fontes da cabeça.

*the Face or Countenance*, o rosto, a cara.

*the Forehead*, a testa, a fronta.

*a Wrinkle*, a arrugua.

*the Eye*, o olho.

*the*



*A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 177

<i>the Eyelid,</i> a capella dó olho.	<i>the Right Hand,</i> a mam deréyta.
<i>the Eyebrow,</i> a sobran- celha.	<i>the Left Hand,</i> a mam esquerda.
<i>a Nose,</i> o nariz.	<i>a Nail,</i> a unha.
<i>a Mouth,</i> a boca.	<i>the Hip,</i> a coxa.
<i>a Chin,</i> a barba.	<i>the Thigh,</i> a coxa da perna.
<i>the Nostrils,</i> as ventas dó nariz.	<i>the Knee,</i> o joelho.
<i>a Lip,</i> o béyço.	<i>the Leg,</i> a perna.
<i>a Cheek,</i> o queyxáda.	<i>the Ankle,</i> o artelho.
<i>the Tongue,</i> a língua.	<i>the Heel,</i> calcanhar.
<i>the Palate,</i> o paladár.	<i>the Foot,</i> o pé.
<i>the Throat,</i> o garganta.	<i>the Sole of the Foot,</i> a planta do pé.
<i>the Neck,</i> o peicoço.	<i>a Toe,</i> o dedo do pé.
<i>the Breast or Chest,</i> o péito.	<i>Flesh,</i> a carne.
<i>the Bosom,</i> o céyo.	<i>the Skin,</i> a pelle.
<i>a Breast,</i> a mama, a tet- ta, o péito.	<i>Fat,</i> a gordura.
<i>the Nipple,</i> o bico do péito.	<i>a Bone,</i> o osso.
<i>the back,</i> as costas.	<i>Marrow,</i> o tutano.
<i>a Shoulder,</i> o hombro.	<i>a Gristle,</i> a cartilagem.
<i>the Side,</i> o lado.	<i>the Brain,</i> o cérebro.
<i>the Body,</i> o corpo.	<i>a Nerve,</i> o nervo.
<i>the Belly,</i> a barriga.	<i>the Bowels,</i> as entranhas.
<i>the Navel,</i> o embigo.	<i>the Heart,</i> o coração.
<i>the Groin,</i> a verilha.	<i>the Lungs,</i> os bofes.
<i>a Loin,</i> o lombo.	<i>Breath,</i> a respiraçam, o alento.
<i>the Breech,</i> o cú.	<i>the Stomach,</i> o estómago.
<i>the Buttocks,</i> as nalgas.	<i>the Guts,</i> as tripas.
<i>an Arm,</i> o braço.	<i>the Liver,</i> o fígado.
<i>the Elbow,</i> o cotovélo.	<i>the kidney,</i> o rim.
<i>a Hand,</i> a mão.	<i>the Bladder,</i> a Bexiga.
<i>the Fist,</i> o punho.	<i>a Tooth,</i> o dente.
<i>the Palm of the Hand,</i> a palma du mam.	<i>the Ribs,</i> as costellas.
<i>the Thumb,</i> o polegar.	<i>Blood,</i> o sangue.
<i>a Finger,</i> o dedo.	<i>Choler,</i> a cóllera.

# 178 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

*Gall*, o fel.

*Milk*, o leite.

*Spittle*, a Saliva.

*Sweat*, o suor.

*a Tear*, a lágrima.

*Piss or Urine*, a ourina.

*Excrements*, os escrementos.

*the King's Evil*, as alporcas.

*a Fever*, a febre.

*the falling Sicknefs*, a gota coral.

*a Fit*, o acesso.

*the French-pox*, as boubas.

*the Gout*, a gota.

*a Hoarseness*, a ronquetyra.

*a Hiccup*, o saluço.

*the Itch*, a farna.

*an Imposthume*, a postuma.

*a Lethargy*, o letargo.

*a Looseness*, as câmaras.

*Madness*, ou doudice.

*the Measles*, o sarampo.

*the Plague*, a peste.

*the Palsy*, a parlezia.

*the Pleurisy*, a pleuris.

*a Rupture*, a potra.

*the Scurvy*, o scorbutu.

*the Stone*, a pedra.

*the Small-pox*, as bexigas.

*an Asthma*, a asma.

*a Wart*, a verruga.

*a Medicine*, o medicamento.

*a Remedy*, o remédio.

*a Poison*, o veneno.

*an Ointment*, o inguento.

*a Plaster*, o empraço.

*Blood-letting*, a sangria.

*Health*, a faude.

*Strength*, a força.

*Vigour*, o vigor.

## Of Diseases and Remedies, *de doenças e remédios.*

• *Disease*, a doença.

• *Physician*, o médico.

*Physick*, a mezinha.

• *Surgeon*, çurgiãõ.

• *an Apothecary*, o boticário.

• *Wound*, a ferida, chaga.

*A Scar*, a cecatriz.

*Smart or Pain*, o dor.

• *Blow or Stroke*, o açoute.

*Death*, a morte.

• *an Ague*, a terçaim.

• *quartan Ague*, a quartam.

• *Bunch or Hump-back*, a córcova.

*the Consumption*, a tifica.

• *Cough*, a tosse.

*the Cholick*, a cólica.

*the Cramp*, a caymbra.

*the Dropsy*, a hydropezia.

• *Cold*, o catarro, resfriado.

*A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 179

Of the Affections of the Mind, and the Actions and Qualifications of Man, *dás afeições dá mente, e das auçoens e qualidades do homem.*

*a Mind,* a mente.

*an Idea,* a ydea.

*Memory,* a memoria.

*Understanding,* o entendimento.

*Reason,* a razám.

*Judgment,* o juizo.

*a Will,* a vontade.

*a Fantasy,* a fantasía.

*an Opinion,* a opiniám.

*Knowledge,* a sciencia.

*Prudence,* a prudencia.

*an Error,* o erro.

*a Virtue,* a virtude.

*Patience,* a paciência.

*Constancy,* a constância.

*Charity,* a caridade.

*Humility,* a humildade.

*Civility,* a cortesía.

*Temperance,* a temperança.

*Chastity,* a castidade.

*Modesty,* a modéstia.

*Compassion,* a compaixám.

*Friendship,* a amizade.

*Thankfulness,* a gratidám.

*Generosity,* a generosidade.

*a Vice,* o vicio.

*Covetousness,* a cobiça.

*Pride,* a foperba, a vaidade.

*Deceit,* o engano.

*Craft,* a futiliza.

*Laziness,* a preguiça.

*Malice,* a malicia.

*Lewdness,* a lascivia.

*Impudence,* a desvergonha.

*Cruelty,* a crueldade.

*Ingratitude,* a ingrati-  
dám.

*a Passion,* a paixám.

*Love,* o amor.

*Hatred,* o odio.

*Anger,* a cólera.

*Envy,* a emveja.

*Pleasure,* o gosto.

*Joy,* a alegria.

*Grief,* a dór.

*Sadness,* a tristeza.

*Affliction,* a afflicçám.

*Faith,* a fé.

*Hope,* a esperança.

*Fear,* o temor.

*Jealousy,* os ciumes.

*Dread,* o medo.

*Despair,* a desesperaçám.

*Courage,* o animo.

*Cowardice,* a covardia.

*Shame,* a vergonha.

*Power,* o poder.

*Help,* o socorro, a ajuda.

*a Work,* a obra, o trabalho.

*Business,* o negócio.

*a Charge,* o cargo.

# 180 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

*an office*, o officio.  
*a Counsel*, o conselho.  
*an Art*, a arte.  
*Care*, o cuidado.  
*Study*, o estudo.  
*Application*, a applica-  
 ção.  
*Delay*, a detenza.  
*Haste*, a pressa.  
*an Action*, a acção.  
*Fortune*, a fortuna.  
*Prosperity*, a prosperi-  
 dade.  
*Happiness*, a felicidade.  
*Misfortune*, a desgraça.  
*Honour*, a honra.  
*Infamy*, a infâmia.  
*Chance*, a sorte.  
*Riches*, a riqueza.  
*Poverty*, a pobreza.  
*Want*, a necessidade.  
*Abundance*, a abundan-  
 cia.  
*Loss*, a perda.  
*Gain*, o ganho, o pro-  
 véito.  
*Weariness*, a fadiga.  
*Rest*, o descanso.  
*Hunger*, a fome.  
*Thirst*, a sede.  
*Sleep*, o sono.  
*a Dream*, o sonho.  
*Loathing*, o desgosto, a  
 averção.

*Of Meat and Drink*,  
*de manjares e de beber.*  
*Meat*, a comida,  
*Viſuals*, o alimento.  
*Drink*, a bebida.  
*Proviſion*, a proviſam  
*Bread*, o pão.  
*the Crust*, a codia.  
*the Crum*, o miolo.  
*Butter*, a manteiga.  
*Cheese*, o queijo.  
*Milk*, o leite.  
*Cream*, a nata.  
*Flesh-meat*, a carne.  
*Bacon*, o toucinho.  
*a Ham*, o presunto.  
*Broth*, o caldo.  
*Soup*, a sopa.  
*a Cake*, o bolo.  
*Sauce*, a salsa.  
*Minced meat*, o picado.  
*Roast-meat*, o assado.  
*Sweet-meats*, as confei-  
 turas.  
*a Sallet*, a salada.  
*the Desert*, a sobremesa.  
*a Tart*, a tortilha.  
*a Paſty or Pye*, o pastel.  
*Boiled-meat*, a carne co-  
 zida.  
*a Sausage*, o salchicho.  
*Beef or Ox-flesh*, vaca, a  
 carne de vaca.  
*Mutton or Sheep's-flesh*,  
 cordeiro, ou carne de  
 cordeiro.

*Pork*



*A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 181

<i>Pork or Hog's-flesh,</i> porco, ou carne de porco.	<i>Of Cloathing,</i> <i>de vestido.</i>
<i>Veal, or Calf's-flesh,</i> vitela, ou carne de vitela.	<i>Cloth,</i> o pano.
<i>Venison,</i> carne de veado.	<i>Silk,</i> a seda.
<i>a Cook,</i> o cozinheiro.	<i>Cotton,</i> a algodão.
<i>Oil,</i> o azeite.	<i>Velvet,</i> o veludo.
<i>Vinegar,</i> o vinagre.	<i>Wool,</i> a lã.
<i>a Breakfast,</i> o almoço.	<i>Linen,</i> o lenço.
<i>a Dinner,</i> o jantar.	<i>Lace,</i> a renda.
<i>a Supper,</i> a ceia.	<i>a Garment,</i> o vestido.
<i>Beer,</i> a cerveja.	<i>Mourning Cloaths,</i> o vestido de luto.
<i>Wine,</i> o vinho.	<i>a Hat,</i> o chapéo.
<i>Cyder,</i> a cidra, o vinho de maçãs.	<i>a Cap,</i> o bonéte.
<i>a Feast,</i> o banquete.	<i>a Peruke,</i> a peruca.
<i>a Guest,</i> o convidado.	<i>a Shirt,</i> a camisa.
<i>a Table,</i> a mesa.	<i>a Waistcoat,</i> a vestia.
<i>a Table-cloth,</i> a toalha da mesa.	<i>a Pair of Breeches,</i> os calções.
<i>a Napkin,</i> a guardanapo.	<i>a Morning-gown,</i> a roupa de chambre.
<i>a Trencher,</i> a trincha.	<i>Stockings,</i> as meias.
<i>a Salt-seller,</i> o salteiro.	<i>a Garter,</i> a jareteira, a faixa.
<i>Salt,</i> o sal.	<i>a Close-coat,</i> a casaca.
<i>a Knife,</i> a faca.	<i>an Upper-coat,</i> o gabardão.
<i>a Fork,</i> o garfo.	<i>a Riding-coat,</i> o capote.
<i>a Dish,</i> o prato.	<i>a Cloak,</i> a capa.
<i>a Pottinger,</i> a tigela.	<i>a Cravat,</i> a gravata.
<i>a Plate,</i> o pratinho.	<i>a Pocket,</i> a algibeira.
<i>a Spoon,</i> a colher.	<i>a Button,</i> o botão.
<i>a Basin,</i> a bacia.	<i>a Sleeve,</i> a manga.
<i>a Towel,</i> a toalha.	<i>a Button-hole,</i> as casas de botões.
<i>a Cup,</i> o copo.	<i>a Shoe,</i> o sapato.
<i>a Flaggon,</i> o frasco.	<i>a Slipper,</i> a chinela.
<i>a Jug,</i> o púcaro.	<i>a Boot,</i> a bota.
<i>a Bottle,</i> a garrafa, botelha.	

*a Spur*, a esporá.  
*a Girdle or Belt*, o cingidouro.  
*an Apron*, o avental.  
*a Bracelet*, as manilhas.  
*Ear-rings*, as arrecadas.  
*a Fan*, o leque, abano.  
*a Glove*, a luva.  
*a Handkerchief*, o lenço.  
*a Mantleau*, o manto, capelo.  
*a Necklace*, o colar.  
*a Mask*, a máscara.  
*a Neck-handkerchief*, o lenço do peitico.  
*a Petticoat*, a faya.  
*a Woman's Gown*, o vestido de mulher.  
*a Buckle*, a fivella.  
*a Ring*, o annel.  
*a Hood*, a touca.  
*a Chain*, a cadeia.

---

*Of Buildings, de edificios.*

*a Building*, o edificio.  
*a House*, a casa.  
*a Cottage*, a choupana.  
*a Palace*, o palacio.  
*a Castle*, o castelo.  
*a Bath*, a banho.  
*a Bridge*, a ponte.  
*Common-sewer*, o cano do despejo.  
*a Wall*, a parede.  
*a Corner*, o canto.  
*a Gate*, a porta.  
*a Door*, a porta.

*the Entry*, a entrada.  
*a Hall*, a falla.  
*a Ceiling*, céu do aposento.  
*a Closet*, o gabinete.  
*a Kitchen*, a cozinha.  
*a Floor*, o chão.  
*the Stairs*, a escada.  
*a Chamber*, o aposento.  
*a Chimney*, o chimené.  
*a Hearth*, a fogueira.  
*a Window*, a janela.  
*the Roof of the House*, o tecto.  
*a Pillar*, o pilar.  
*a Vault*, a boveda.  
*a Post*, o postigo.  
*a Lock*, a fechadura.  
*a Key*, a chave.  
*a Cellar*, a adega.  
*the Stable*, a estrebaria.  
*Oven*, o forno.  
*a Wall*, o poço.  
*a Pump*, a bomba.  
*a City*, a cidade.  
*a Town*, a villa.  
*a Suburb*, o arrebalde.  
*a Street*, a rua.  
*a Fortification*, a fortaleza.  
*a Market*, a praça.  
*An Inn*, a pousada.  
*a Workman*, o obréiro.  
*a Hatchet*, o machado.  
*a Hammer*, o martello.  
*a Saw*, a serra.  
*a File*, a lima.  
*a Wedge*, a cunha.  
*a Ruler*,

# *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 183*

*a Ruler, a regra.*

*Glue, a grude.*

*a Nail, o cravo.*

*a Brick, o ladrilho.*

*Timber, a madeira.*

*a Board, a taboinha.*

*a Tile, o tijolo.*

*a Pair of Tongs, as tenázas.*

*a Fireshovel, a pãa.*

*a Lamp, a lâmpada.*

*a Candlestick, o candiêyro.*

*a Candle, a candéya.*

*a Wax-taper, o cirio.*

*a Box, a caixa.*

*a Coffin or Chest, a arca, o cofre.*

*a Basket, o cesto.*

*a Tun, o tonnêl.*

*a Pitcher, o jarro.*

*a Vessel, o vaso.*

*a Hogshhead, o quarto,*

*a Pipe, a pipa.*

*a Barrel, o barril.*

*a Tap, o espicho.*

*a Cork, o sobro.*

*a Kettle, o caldeirâm.*

*a Spit, o espeto.*

*a Ladle, o golherâm.*

*a Sponge, a esponja.*

*a Pair of Bellows, o fóle.*

*a Chamber-pot, o ourinól.*

*a Privy, a privada.*

*a Wheel, a roda.*

*a Comb, o péntem.*

*a Needle, a agulha.*

*a Pin, a alfinete.*

*a Razor, a navalha.*

*a Pair of Spectacles, os óculos.*

*a Brush, a escova, basfóura.*

## *Of Household-stuff or Furniture, de alfáyas.*

*a Chair, a cadéyra.*

*a Stool, a trepeffa.*

*a Bench, o banco.*

*an Armed-Chair, a cadéyra de mams.*

*a Couch, a cama de repóuso.*

*a Cradle, o berço.*

*a Bed, a cama.*

*Curtains, as cortinas.*

*a Blanket, o cobertor.*

*Sheets, os lançóes.*

*a Carpet, a tapete.*

*a Picture, a pintura.*

*a Picture or Resemblance of any Person, o retrato.*

*a Statue, a státua.*

*a Looking-glass, o espelho.*

*a Broom, a escóva.*

*a Grate, as grelhas.*

*a Sieve, a panéyra.*

*a Mortar, o almirez.*

*a Pestle, o almofariz.*

184 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese,*

Of the Country, *da*  
*Campanka.*

*a Village,* a aldeia.  
*a Country-house,* a quinta.  
*a Barn,* o celeiro.  
*a Court-yard,* o pátio.  
*a Field,* o campo.  
*a Meadow,* o prado.  
*a Garden,* o jardim.  
*an Orchard,* o pomar.  
*a Hedge,* a sebe.  
*a Gardener,* o jardineiro.  
*a Farmer,* o quinteiro.  
*a Countryman,* o villão.  
*a Plough,* o harado.  
*Dung,* o esterco.  
*a Fork,* a forca.  
*a Sickle or scythe,* a foice.  
*a Flail,* o mangual de  
debulhar.  
*a Spade,* a enxada.  
*a Wheel-barrow,* o car-  
reto.  
*a Cart,* a charreta.  
*a Waggon,* o carro.  
*a Highway,* a estrada  
real.  
*a Way,* o caminho.  
*a Journey,* a jornada.  
*a Voyage,* o viagem.  
*a Coach,* o coche.  
*a Coachman,* o cocheiro.  
*a Carter,* o carreiro.  
*an Axle-tree,* o eixo.  
*a Pole,* o títam.  
*a Wheel,* a roda.  
*a Bridle,* o freio.

*a Halter,* o cabresto.  
*the Reins,* as rédeas.  
*a Yoke,* o jugo.  
*a Whip,* o açoit.  
*a Spur,* a espóia.  
*a Saddle,* a sella.  
*a Stirrup,* o estribo.

Of Societies, Dignities,  
Handicraftsmen, Mu-  
sick, and Games, *das*  
*sociedades, dignidades,*  
*dos artifices, da musica*  
*e dos jogos.*

*a Family,* a familia.  
*a Republick,* a republica.  
*a Kingdom,* o réyno.  
*an Empire,* o império.  
*a Master,* o amo, o sen-  
hóra.  
*a Mistress,* a ama, a sen-  
hóra.  
*a Man-servant,* o criado  
o servo, o lacávo.  
*a Maid-servant,* a criada.  
*a Citizen,* o cidadão.  
*a Magistrate,* o mages-  
trado.  
*an Emperor,* o empera-  
dor.  
*an Empress,* a empera-  
triz.  
*a King,* o réy.  
*a Queen,* a raynha.  
*a Prince,* o principe.  
*a Princess,* a princeffa.  
*a Duke,*



# *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 185*

<i>a Duke</i> , o duque.	<i>the Lord Treasurer</i> , o tesouréyro mór.
<i>a Dutcheſs</i> , a duqueza.	<i>a Privy Counſellor</i> , o conſelheiro do conſelho privado.
<i>a Marquis</i> , o marquéz.	<i>a Secretary of State</i> , o Secretario de eſtado.
<i>a Marchioneſs</i> , a marquieſa.	<i>a Courtier</i> , o corteſám.
<i>a Count or Earl</i> , o conde.	<i>a Trade</i> , o officio.
<i>a Counteſs</i> , a condeza.	<i>a Handicraftſman</i> , o artífices.
<i>a Viſcount</i> , o viſconde.	<i>an Armourer</i> , o eſpingardeiro.
<i>a Viſcounteſs</i> , a viſcondedeſa.	<i>a Barber</i> , o barbéyro.
<i>a Baron</i> , o barám.	<i>a Bookſeller</i> , o livréyro.
<i>a Baroneſs</i> , a baroneſa.	<i>a Blackſmith</i> , o ferréyro.
<i>a Nobleman</i> , o nobre.	<i>a Maſon or Bricklayer</i> , o pedréyro.
<i>a Knight</i> , o cavalhéyro.	<i>a Butcher</i> , o carnicéyro.
<i>a Gentleman</i> , o fidalgo.	<i>a Cabinet-maker</i> , o caixinhéyro.
<i>the People</i> , o povo.	<i>a Carpenter</i> , o carpintéyro.
<i>a Stranger</i> , o forasteíro.	<i>a Chandler</i> , o candiéyro.
<i>the Mob or Rabble</i> , o vulgo.	<i>a Cobler</i> , o remendám.
<i>a Crowd</i> , a multidám.	<i>a Collier</i> , o carvoéyro.
<i>a Nation</i> , a naçám.	<i>a Confectioner</i> , o confeiteíro.
<i>a Crown</i> , a coróa.	<i>a Cooper</i> , o toneléyro.
<i>a Scepter</i> , o cetro.	<i>a Cutler</i> , o faquéyro.
<i>a Throne</i> , o trono.	<i>a Dyer</i> , o tinturéyro.
<i>a Court</i> , a corte.	<i>a Farrier</i> , o ferradór.
<i>a Vice-roy</i> , o vice réy.	<i>a Fruiterer</i> , o fruitéiro.
<i>an Ambaſſador</i> , o embaixador.	<i>a Girdler</i> , o cinturéyro.
<i>an Envoy</i> , o enviado.	<i>a Glaſier</i> , o vidracéyro.
<i>a Governor</i> , o governador.	<i>a Goldſmith</i> , o prateíro.
<i>a Reſident</i> , o reſidente.	<i>a Grocer</i> , eſpecéiro.
<i>the Lord Chancellor</i> , o chancelor mór.	<i>a Hatter</i> , o chapeléyro.
<i>the Lord Chamberlain</i> , o camaréiro mór.	<i>a Hoſier</i> ,
<i>the Lord Steeward</i> , o mordomo mayor.	

*a Hefter*, o meéyro.  
*a Joiner*, o mercenéyro.  
*a Mountebank*, o charlatám.  
*a Landress*, a lavandéiro.  
*a Merchant*, o mercador.  
*a Miller*, o moléiro.  
*a Mercer*, o merciéyro.  
*a Painter*, o pintor.  
*a Peckry-cock*, o pasteléro.  
*a Packer*, o embalador.  
*a Perfumer*, o perfumador.  
*a Plumber*, o chumbéira.  
*a Porter*, o marriola.  
*a Potter*, o olléro.  
*a Poultner*, o galinhéiro.  
*a Printer*, o imprimidor.  
*a Rope-maker*, o cordéro.  
*a Taylor*, o alfayate.  
*a Shoe-maker*, o çapatéro.  
*a Stage-player*, o comediante.  
*a Stone-cutter*, o scultor de pedras.  
*a Sword-cutter*, o espadéro.  
*a Vintner*, o tavernéiro.  
*a Weaver*, o tessedor.  
*a Workman*, o obréro.  
*an Apprentice*, o aprendiz.  
*a Musician*, o músico.

*an Instrument of Musick*, o instrumento músico.  
*the Harpsicord*, o crávo.  
*the Harp*, a harpa.  
*the Lute*, o aláude.  
*a Flute*, a flauta.  
*a Violin*, a rebeca, o violim.  
*a Bass-Viol*, o rebecám.  
*a String*, a corda.  
*a Bow*, o arco.  
*the Bridge*, o ponte.  
*a Tone or Sound*, o som.  
*a Diversion*, a diversám.  
*a Play or Game*, o jogo.  
*a Dye*, o dado.  
*a Game of Draughts*, o jogo de tablas.  
*the Game of Chess*, o jogo de enxadres.  
*a Game of Charts*, o jogo de cartas.  
*a Ball*, a pela.  
*a Racket*, a raqueta.

---

*Of a School and Learning*, dá escola, e do aprender.

*a Master, or Teacher*, o méltre.

*a Scholar*, o discipulo.

*Reading*, a lectura, o ler.

*Writing*, a scritura.

*a Discourse*, o discurfo.

*a Language*, a língua.

*an Oration*, a oraçam.

*a Ser-*

*A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 187*

*a Sermon*, o sermão.  
*a Letter*, a letra.  
*a Sentence*, a sentença.  
*a Syllable*, a sílaba.  
*a Word*, a palavra.  
*a Letter*, a carta.  
*a Book*, o livro.  
*a Treatise*, o tratado.  
*a News-paper*, as novas,  
a gazeta.  
*an Author*, o autor.  
*a Title*, o título.  
*a Leaf*, a folha.  
*a Page*, a página.  
*a Pen*, a pena.  
*Ink*, a tinta.  
*an Inkborn*, o tinteiro.  
*Paper*, o papel.  
*a Quire of Paper*, a mam  
de papel.  
*a Sheet of Paper*, a folha  
de papel.  
*a Parchment*, o perga-  
minho.  
*a Penknife*, o canivete.  
*a Line*, a linha.  
*a Rule*, a regra.  
*a Rod*, a vara.  
*a Study*, o estudo.  
*a Science*, a ciência.

---

*Of Ecclesiastical Affairs,*  
*das cousas ecclesiasticas.*

*a Church*, a igreja.  
*a Chapel*, a capella.  
*a Cathedral Church*, a  
igreja catedral.

*an Archbishop*, o arço-  
bispo.  
*a Bishop*, o bispo.  
*a Priest, or Minister*, o  
sacerdote, ministro.  
*a Curate*, o cura.  
*a Deacon*, o decano.  
*a Reader*, o leitor.  
*a Clerk*, o clérigo.  
*an Elder*, o ancião.  
*a Sexton*, o sacristão.  
*a Chaplain*, o capelão.  
*Religion*, a religião.  
*an Altar*, o altar.  
*a baptising Font*, a pia  
de baptismo.  
*an Organ*, o órgão.  
*a Pulpit*, o púlpito.  
*a Pew*, o banco.  
*the Bible*, a biblia.  
*the Testament*, o testam-  
mento.  
*the Gospel*, o evangelho.  
*the Steeple*, o campana-  
rio.  
*a Bell*, o sino.  
*a Church-yard*, o adro.  
*a Grave*, o sepulcro.  
*a Funeral*, o enteramento.  
*a Monument*, o moy-  
mento.

---

*Of Judicial Affairs, das*  
*cousas judiciarys.*

*a Government*, o governo.  
*a Court of Justice*, a corte  
de justiça.

*a Law,*

*a Law*, a ley.  
*an Example*, o exemplo.  
*a Mayor*, o alcaide.  
*a Judge*, o juiz.  
*an Advocate*, o letrodo,  
 advogado.  
*a Witness*, a testemunha.  
*a Clerk or Secretary*, o  
 escrivão.  
*a Bailiff*, o agualil.  
*a Common Crier*, o pre-  
 goeiro.  
*Right*, o direito.  
*Justice*, a justiça.  
*Punishment*, o castigo.  
*a Sentence*, a sentença.  
*a Hangman or Executioner*,  
 o algoz.  
*a Crime*, o crimem.  
*Deceit*, o engano.  
*a Fault*, a culpa.  
*Fraud*, a fraude.  
*Theft*, o furto.  
*Treason*, a traição.  
*Villany*, a maldade.  
*an Adulterer*, o adúltero.  
*a Cut-throat*, o assassino.  
*a Thief*, o ladrão.  
*a Whore*, a puta.  
*Banishment*, o desterro.  
*Death*, a morte.  
*Infamy*, a infâmia.  
*a Fine*, a penalidade, a  
 multa.  
*a Prison or Goal*, a pri-  
 zão.  
*Pardon*, o perdão.

*Favour*, a graça, a fa-  
 vór.  
*a Gift or Present*, a dá-  
 vida, o dom.  
*Reputation*, a reputa-  
 ção.  
*Authority*, a autoridade.  
*Honour*, a honra.  
*Money*, o dinheiro.  
*Price*, o preço.  
*Pay*, a paga.  
*Praise*, o louvôr.  
*Wages*, o salário.  
*a Recompense*, a recom-  
 pensa.

*Of War and Peace*, da  
 guerra e paz.

*a Friend*, o amigo.  
*Friendship*, amizade.  
*an Alliance*, a confede-  
 ração.  
*Leisure*, ociosidade.  
*Safety*, a segurança.  
*Quiet*, o deícanço.  
*Disagreement*, a discor-  
 dia.  
*Danger*, o perigo.  
*an Enemy*, o inimigo.  
*a Tumult*, o tumulto.  
*a Battle*, a batalha.  
*a Combat*, a peleja.  
*Ruin*, a ruína.  
*a Siege*, o cerco.  
*a Victory*, a vitória.  
*a Flight*, a fuga.

*a Con*



*A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 189

<i>a Conqueror</i> , o vencedor.	<i>Fire-arms</i> , armas de fogo.
<i>a General</i> , o general.	<i>a Cannon</i> , a peça de artilheria, canám.
<i>an Admiral</i> , a almirante.	<i>a Gun</i> , a espingarda.
<i>a Colonel</i> , o coronel.	<i>a Pistol</i> , a pistolete.
<i>a Major</i> , o targentomór.	<i>Gunpowder</i> , a pólvora.
<i>a Captain</i> , o capitám.	<i>Shot</i> , pelóuros miudos.
<i>a Lieutenant</i> , o tenente.	<i>a Bullet</i> , a balla.
<i>an Ensign</i> , o alfarés.	<i>a Cannon-ball</i> , a balla de canám.
<i>a Sarjeant</i> , o sargento.	<i>a Helmet</i> , o capacete.
<i>a Corporal</i> , o cabo da esquadra.	<i>a Buckler or Shield</i> , o escudo.
<i>a Trumpeter</i> , o trombe-téiro.	<i>a Trumpet</i> , a trombeta.
<i>a Soldier</i> , o soldado.	<i>a Drum</i> , o tambor.
<i>a Horseman</i> , o cavalhéiro.	<i>a Kettle-drum</i> , o atabáale.
<i>a Dragoon</i> , o dragám.	
<i>a Centinel</i> , a sentinela.	
<i>a Guard</i> , a guarda.	
<i>a Foot-soldier</i> , o soldado infante.	
<i>a Company</i> , a companhia.	
<i>a Regiment</i> , o regimento.	
<i>an Army</i> , o exercito.	
<i>a Camp</i> , o arrayál.	
<i>a Tent</i> , a tenda.	
<i>a Flag or Colours</i> , a bandeira.	
<i>Arms or Weapons</i> , as armas.	
<i>a Club</i> , a maça.	
<i>a Sword</i> , a espada.	
<i>a Sling</i> , a funda.	
<i>a Bow</i> , o arco.	
<i>an Arrow</i> , a setta.	

---

Of Ships, their Loadings and mercantile Affairs, *de navios, sus cargaçoens, &c.*

<i>a Man of War</i> , o não de guerra.
<i>a Merchant-man</i> , o navio de carga.
<i>a Sloop</i> , a balandra.
<i>a Fisher-boat</i> , a barca de pescador.
<i>a Galley</i> , a galé.
<i>a Ferry-boat</i> , o barco de passagem.
<i>a Boat</i> , o batel.
<i>a Cock-boat</i> , a barqueta.
<i>an Oar</i> , o remo.

*a Wa-*

190 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>a Waterman or Rower,</i>	<i>a Shipwreck,</i> o naufrá- gio.
o reméyro.	<i>Provision,</i> o bastimento.
<i>a Fleet,</i> a frota.	<i>Loading,</i> a cargaçam.
<i>the Fore-deck,</i> a próa.	<i>Unloading,</i> a descarga.
<i>the Stern,</i> a popo.	<i>a Contract,</i> o contracto.
<i>the Keel,</i> a quilha.	<i>Freight,</i> o frete.
<i>the Deck,</i> as cubertas.	<i>a Bill of Lading,</i> o con- hecimento.
<i>a Captain,</i> o capitam.	<i>a Bill of Exchange,</i> a le- tra de cambio.
<i>a Cabin,</i> a camarote.	<i>a Policy, or writing of</i> <i>Insurance,</i> a poliça ou escriptura de seguro.
<i>the Helm,</i> o leme.	<i>a Correspondent,</i> o cor- respondente.
<i>the Stem,</i> o espóram.	<i>a Valuer,</i> o valor.
<i>a Mast,</i> o masto.	<i>a Partner,</i> o compan- héiro.
<i>the Main-yard,</i> a verga.	<i>a Company,</i> companhia.
<i>on board,</i> a bordo.	<i>Custom or Duty,</i> o de- réito.
<i>between Deck,</i> o conves.	<i>Entry,</i> a entrada.
<i>a Sail,</i> a vela.	<i>the Custom-house,</i> a alfân- geda.
<i>the Main-sail,</i> a vela grande.	<i>Goods,</i> as fazendas, gé- neros.
<i>a Pulley,</i> o carrilho.	<i>Merchandizes,</i> mercado- rias
<i>a Rope,</i> a corda.	<i>Average,</i> a avaria.
<i>a Cable,</i> a amarra.	<i>Money,</i> o dinheiro.
<i>a Jack,</i> os galhardetes.	<i>Ready Money,</i> dinheiro de cantado.
<i>the Streamer,</i> a bandeira.	<i>Current Money,</i> dinheiro corrente.
<i>an anchor,</i> a âncora.	<i>a Bank-Note,</i> huma no- ta de banco.
<i>the Lantern,</i> a linterna.	<i>Money or Coin,</i> a moeda.
<i>a Pole,</i> a vara.	<i>Golden</i>
<i>the Pump,</i> a bomba.	
<i>the Sounding-line,</i> o prú- mo.	
<i>the Ballast,</i> o lastro.	
<i>the Compass,</i> o compasso de marear.	
<i>the Pilot,</i> o piloto.	
<i>the Master,</i> o mestre.	
<i>a Mariner,</i> o marinheiro.	
<i>a Passenger,</i> o passageiro.	
<i>a Shipwright,</i> o architec- to de navios.	

# *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 191

<i>Golden Coin</i> , moeda d'ouro.	<i>the Post</i> , o corêo.
<i>Silver Coin</i> , moeda de prata.	<i>Advice</i> , o aviso.
<i>Copper Coin</i> , moeda de cobre.	<i>Order</i> , a ordem.
<i>Credit</i> , o crédito.	<i>a Letter</i> , a carta.
<i>a Debt</i> , a dívida.	<i>an Answer</i> , a resposta.
<i>a Debtor</i> , o devedor.	<i>a Bale</i> , a bala.
<i>a Creditor</i> , o creditor.	<i>a Packet</i> , o paquete.
<i>a Cash</i> , a caixa.	<i>Effects</i> , effeitos.
<i>a Cashier</i> , o caixeiro.	<i>an Agent</i> , o agente.
<i>a Bankrupt</i> , o quebrado.	<i>a Warehouse</i> , o almazem.
<i>a Banker</i> , o cambiador.	<i>a Pattern</i> , a mostra.
<i>the Exchange</i> , o cambio.	<i>Commission</i> , a commissão.
<i>the Bank</i> , o banco.	<i>a Broker</i> , o corredor.
<i>a Counting-house</i> , o contador.	<i>Brokerage</i> , o corretagem.
<i>a Book-keeper</i> , o caixeiro.	<i>a Factor</i> , o negociador.
<i>a Man of Business</i> , homem de negotio.	<i>Interest</i> , o interese.
<i>a Merchant</i> , o mercador.	<i>A Letter of Attorney</i> , hum instrumento de procuração.
<i>a Desk</i> , o almario.	<i>A Charter party of a Freightment</i> , carta ou instrumento de fretamento.
<i>the Cash-book</i> , o livro de caixa.	<i>a Letter of Recommendation</i> , huma letra de recommendação.
<i>the Clod-book</i> , o borrador.	<i>a Letter of Credit</i> , a letra de credito.
<i>the Journal</i> , o jornal.	<i>Letters Patent</i> , alvaras do Rey.
<i>the Ledger</i> , o livro grande.	<i>a Letter-carrier</i> , o mensageiro.
<i>an Account - curreant</i> , a conta-corrente.	
<i>an Account-sale</i> , a conta de venda.	

## C H A P. II.

### *Nouns Adjective.*

☞ The Words mark'd with *c.* are of the common Gender, both Masculine and Feminine.

<b>A</b> <i>B L E</i> , <i>skilful</i> , <i>capáz</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>couragious</i> , <i>animóso</i> , <i>fa.</i>
<i>agreeable</i> , <i>agradável</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>covetous</i> , <i>cobiçosa</i> , <i>fa.</i>
<i>all</i> , <i>todo</i> , <i>da.</i>	<i>crafty</i> , <i>cunning</i> , <i>astuto</i> , <i>ta.</i>
<i>alone</i> , <i>so</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>fotil</i> , <i>c.</i>
<i>alive</i> , <i>vivo</i> , <i>va.</i>	<i>contented</i> , <i>contento</i> , <i>ta.</i>
<i>antient</i> , <i>antíquo</i> , <i>qua.</i>	<i>crooked</i> , <i>curvo</i> , <i>va.</i>
<i>another</i> , <i>óutro</i> , <i>tra.</i>	<i>convenient</i> , <i>conveniente</i> , <i>c.</i>
<i>any</i> , <i>qualquer</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>cruel</i> , <i>cruel</i> , <i>c.</i>
<i>bad</i> , <i>m'co</i> , <i>mãã.</i>	<i>courteous</i> , <i>cortes</i> , <i>civil</i> , <i>c.</i>
<i>barbarous</i> , <i>bárbaro</i> , <i>ra.</i>	<i>dainty</i> , <i>delicado</i> , <i>da.</i>
<i>barren</i> , <i>esteril</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>deaf</i> , <i>surdo</i> , <i>da.</i>
<i>base</i> , <i>low</i> , <i>baixo</i> , <i>xa.</i>	<i>dead</i> , <i>morto</i> , <i>ta.</i>
<i>beautiful</i> , <i>bello</i> , <i>la.</i>	<i>dear</i> , <i>caro</i> , <i>ra.</i>
<i>big with Child</i> , <i>prenhe</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>deep</i> , <i>profundo</i> , <i>da.</i>
<i>bitter</i> , <i>amargo</i> , <i>ga.</i>	<i>delightful</i> , <i>deleitóso</i> , <i>gustoso</i> , <i>fa.</i>
<i>blind</i> , <i>cego</i> , <i>ga.</i>	<i>dextrous</i> , <i>destro</i> , <i>tra.</i>
<i>both</i> , <i>ambos</i> , <i>bas.</i>	<i>different</i> , <i>differente</i> , <i>c.</i>
<i>brisk</i> , <i>active</i> , <i>vivaz</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>difficult</i> , <i>difficultoso</i> , <i>fa.</i>
<i>broad</i> , <i>largo</i> , <i>ga.</i>	<i>diligent</i> , <i>diligente</i> , <i>c.</i>
<i>captize</i> , <i>captivo</i> , <i>va.</i>	<i>diverse</i> , <i>diverso</i> , <i>fa.</i>
<i>certain</i> , <i>certo</i> , <i>ta.</i>	<i>doubtful</i> , <i>duvidoso</i> , <i>fa.</i>
<i>chaste</i> , <i>casto</i> , <i>ta.</i>	<i>drunk</i> , <i>bêbado</i> , <i>da.</i>
<i>cheerful</i> , <i>gay</i> , <i>alegre</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>dry</i> , <i>feco</i> , <i>ca.</i>
<i>charitable</i> , <i>caritativo</i> , <i>va.</i>	<i>dirty</i> , <i>sujo</i> , <i>ja.</i>
<i>cheap</i> , <i>baráto</i> , <i>ta.</i>	<i>each</i> , <i>cada hum</i> , <i>cada hũa.</i>
<i>chief</i> , <i>principal</i> , <i>c.</i>	<i>easy</i> , <i>facil</i> , <i>c.</i>
<i>clean</i> , <i>limpo</i> , <i>pa.</i>	<i>elegant</i> , <i>elegante</i> , <i>c.</i>
<i>cold</i> , <i>frio</i> , <i>a.</i>	<i>empty</i> ,
<i>common</i> , <i>comum</i> , <i>mũa.</i>	



# *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 193

<i>empty</i> , vazio, zia.	<i>honest</i> , honesto, ta.
<i>equal</i> , igual, c.	<i>honourable</i> , honorado, da.
<i>every one</i> , qualquer, c.	<i>how many</i> , quantos?
<i>faint</i> , feeble, fraco, ca.	<i>how great</i> , quanto? quam grande?
<i>fair</i> , branco, ca, rúivo, va.	<i>jealous</i> , cióso, fa.
<i>false</i> , falso, fa.	<i>imperfect</i> , imperfêito, ta.
<i>faithful</i> , fiel, c.	<i>industrious</i> , industrioso, fa.
<i>famous</i> , famoso, fa.	<i>intire</i> , intêiro, ra.
<i>fat</i> , gordo, da.	<i>joyful</i> , jocundo, da.
<i>few</i> , pouco, ca.	<i>just</i> , justo, ta.
<i>firm</i> , firme, c.	<i>kind</i> , favorável, c.
<i>fit</i> , apto, ta.	<i>knowing</i> , sabido, da.
<i>foclish</i> , parvo, va. tonto, ta.	<i>lame</i> , coxo, xa.
<i>former</i> , precedente, c.	<i>large</i> , largo, ga.
<i>fortunate</i> , fortunado, da.	<i>lazy</i> , preguiçoso, fa.
<i>free</i> , libre, c.	<i>lean</i> , magro, gra, fraco, ca.
<i>frequent</i> , frequente, c.	<i>learned</i> , docto, ta.
<i>fresh</i> , fresco, ca.	<i>left-handed</i> , esquerdo, da.
<i>full</i> , chéyo, yá.	<i>liberal</i> , liberal, c.
<i>generous</i> , generoso, fa.	<i>like</i> , semelhante, c.
<i>genteel</i> , gentil, c.	<i>little</i> , piqueno, na.
<i>glad</i> , alegre, c.	<i>little or few</i> , pouco, ca.
<i>godly</i> , pious, devout, piado, fa, devoto, ta.	<i>lonely</i> , sô zinho, ha.
<i>good</i> , bom, boa.	<i>long</i> , longo, ga.
<i>great</i> , grande, c.	<i>low</i> , baixo, xa.
<i>greedy</i> , avarente, c.	<i>maimed</i> , mocho, cha, aleijado, da.
<i>guilty</i> , culpado, da.	<i>manifest</i> , manifesto, ta.
<i>half</i> , méyo, ya.	<i>evidente</i> , c.
<i>handsome</i> , fermoso, fa.	<i>many</i> , muito, ta.
<i>happy</i> , ditoso, fa, feliz, c.	<i>mean</i> , baixo, xa.
<i>hard</i> , duró, ra.	<i>merciful</i> , misericordioso, fa.
<i>hard</i> , difficult, difícilto, fa.	<i>merry</i> , alegre, c.
<i>high</i> , alto, ta.	<i>middle</i> , méyo, ya.
<i>hollow</i> , cóncavo, va.	<i>miserable</i> , miserável, c.
<i>holy</i> , santo, ta.	<i>modest</i> ,

# 194 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>modest</i> , modesto, ta.	<i>ready</i> , prompto, ta.
<i>moderate</i> , moderado, da.	<i>resolute</i> , determinado, da.
<i>more</i> , mais, c.	<i>rich</i> , rico, ca.
<i>too much</i> , demasiado.	<i>right</i> , direito, ta.
<i>naked</i> , nú, nua.	<i>right</i> , maduro, ra.
<i>narrow</i> , estreito, ta.	<i>roasted</i> , assado, da.
<i>neat</i> , pretty, lindo, da.	<i>rough</i> , áspero, ra.
<i>necessary</i> , necessário, ria.	<i>round</i> , redondo, da.
<i>neither</i> , nenhum nem outro.	<i>rude</i> , uncivil, rustico, ca. descortez, c.
<i>new</i> , novo, va.	<i>sacred</i> , sagrado, da.
<i>noble</i> , nobre, c.	<i>sad</i> , triste, c.
<i>none</i> , nenhum, hua.	<i>safe</i> , salvo, va.
<i>old</i> , velho, ha.	<i>salted</i> , salgado, da.
<i>odious</i> , tiresome, odioso, enfadoso, fa.	<i>same</i> , mesmo, ma.
<i>pale</i> , palido, da.	<i>savage</i> , bravo, va.
<i>pleasant</i> , agradável, c.	<i>secret</i> , secreto, ta.
<i>plentiful</i> , copioso, fa.	<i>secure</i> , seguro, ra.
<i>powerful</i> , poderoso, fa.	<i>severe</i> , severo, ra.
<i>poor</i> , pobre, c.	<i>short</i> , brief, curto, ta, breve, c.
<i>present</i> , presente, c.	<i>sick</i> , enfermo, ma, do- ente, c.
<i>pretty</i> , lindo, da.	<i>slow</i> , vagaroso, fa.
<i>private</i> , occulto, ta.	<i>smooth</i> , lizo, za.
<i>prodigal</i> , prodigo, ga.	<i>sober</i> , sóbrio, bria.
<i>profane</i> , profano, na.	<i>soft</i> , brando, da, mole, c.
<i>profitable</i> , proveitave, c.	<i>sound</i> , são, sãa.
<i>proper</i> ( <i>one's own</i> ) pró- prio, pria.	<i>sour</i> , azedo, da, agro, gra.
<i>prosperous</i> , próspero, ra.	<i>spreading</i> , extended, es- tendido, da.
<i>proud</i> , soberbo, ba.	<i>still</i> , quiet, assossegado, da.
<i>publick</i> , público, ca.	<i>stinking</i> , fedorento, ta.
<i>pure</i> , puro, ra.	<i>straight</i> , estreito, ta.
<i>quick or swift</i> , prompto, ta. acelerado, da.	<i>stranger</i> , estrangeiro, ra.
<i>rare</i> , raro, ra.	<i>strong</i> , forte, c.
<i>rash</i> , temerário, ria.	<i>subtle</i> , crafty, sutil, fa- gaz, c. astuto, ta.
<i>raw</i> , cru, crua.	<i>such</i> ,

# *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.* 195

<i>such</i> , tal, c.	<i>wanton</i> , lascivious, lascivo, va.
<i>sure</i> , seguro, ra.	<i>weak</i> , fraco, ca, debíl, c.
<i>sweet</i> , doce, c.	<i>weary</i> , tired, fatigado, cansado, da.
<i>swift</i> , ligeiro, ra.	<i>wet</i> , húmido, molhado, da.
<i>tall</i> , alto, ta.	<i>what manner</i> , que maneyra?
<i>tender</i> , tenro, ra.	<i>what number</i> , que número?
<i>terrible</i> , cruel, terríbel, cruel, c.	<i>which</i> , qual, c.
<i>thankful</i> , agradecido, da.	<i>whole</i> , all, inteiro, ra, todo, da.
<i>thick</i> , grosso, fa.	<i>whosoever</i> , qualquer, c. quemquer, c.
<i>thin</i> , delgado, da.	<i>wicked</i> , malvado, da.
<i>tired</i> , cansado, da.	<i>wild</i> , bravo, va.
<i>torn</i> , rasgado, da.	<i>wise</i> , prudente, c. sábio, bia.
<i>troublesome</i> , emfadofo, fa.	<i>witty</i> , facetious, ingenhofo, fa.
<i>true</i> , verdadeíro, ra.	<i>wonderful</i> , milagrosa, fa.
<i>vain</i> , vam, vãã.	<i>worse</i> , peiór, c.
<i>valiant</i> , strong, magnánimo, ma, forte, c.	<i>worthy</i> , dino, na.
<i>ugly</i> , féyo, ya.	<i>wounded</i> , chagado, da.
<i>unable</i> , incapaz, c.	<i>young</i> , moço, ça.
<i>unmarried</i> , single, soltéyro, ra.	<i>zealous</i> , zeloso, fa.
<i>uncivil</i> , descortes, c.	
<i>unfavoury</i> , insipid, deffaborófo, fa, infavido, da.	
<i>utmost</i> , extremo, ma.	
<i>wandering</i> , vagabundo, da.	

## C H A P. III.

### Of Numbers, *dós números.*

<b>O</b> NE, hum, húa.	<i>five</i> , cinco, c.
<i>two</i> , dóus, duas.	<i>six</i> , féys, c.
<i>three</i> , tres, c.	<i>seven</i> , sete, c.
<i>four</i> , quatro, c.	<i>eight</i> , óuto, c.

O 2

*nine*,

# 196 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

*nine, nove.*

*ten, dez.*

*eleven, onze.*

*twelve, doze.*

*thirteen, treze.*

*fourteen, catorze.*

*fifteen, quinze.*

*sixteen, des e séys.*

*seventeen, dez e sete.*

*eighteen, dez e óuto.*

*nineteen, dez e nove.*

*twenty, vinte.*

*twenty-one, vinte e hum.*

*twenty-two, vinte e dous.*

*twenty-three, vinte e tres.*

*twenty-four, vinte e quatro.*

*twenty-five, vinte e cinco.*

*thirty, trinta.*

*forty, quarenta.*

*fifty, cincoenta.*

*sixty, secenta.*

*seventy, setenta.*

*eighty, oitenta.*

*ninety, noventa.*

*hundred, cem, cento.*

*two hundred, duzentos, tas.*

*three hundred, trecentos, tas.*

*four hundred, quatrocentos, tas.*

*five hundred, quinhentos, tas.*

*a thousand, mil.*

*a hundred thousand, cem mil.*

*a million, milhãõ.*

*Of Ordinal Numbers,*

*dós números de ordem.*

*the first, priméyro, priméyra.*

*the second, segundo, da.*

*the third, tercêiro, ra.*

*the fourth, quarto, ta.*

*the fifth, quinto, ta.*

*the sixth, sexto, ta.*

*the seventh, septimo, ma.*

*the eighth, outavo, va.*

*the ninth, nono, na.*

*the tenth, décimo, ma.*

*the eleventh, onzeno, na.*

*the twelfth, dozeno, na.*

*the thirteenth, trezeno, na.*

*the fourteenth, catorzeno, na.*

*the fifteenth, quinzeno, na.*

*the sixteenth, décimo sexto, ta.*

*the seventeenth, décimo septimo, ma.*

*the twentieth, vinteino, na.*

*the twenty-first, o vinte hum, a vinte húa.*

*the twenty-second, o vinte dous.*

*the thirtieth, trintéino, na.*

*the hundredth, contésimo, ma.*

*the thousandth, millésimo, ma.*

*the middlemost, méyo, ya.*

*the last, último, má.*

CHAP.



C H A P. IV.

Of Colours, *dás cores.*

**S**hining, o, a lucente.  
*clear*, claro, ra.  
*pale*, pálido, da.  
*white*, branco, ca.  
*grey*, pardo, da.  
*pearl grey*, cor de perla.  
*dark grey*, pardo escuro.  
*Ash Colour*, cor de cinza.  
*dark*, escuro, ra.  
*black*, negro, gra.  
*brown*, moreno, na, fuf-  
 go, ga.  
*Chestnut Colour*, cor de  
 castanha.  
*yellow*, amarello, la.  
*Citron, or Lemon Colour*,  
 cor de cidram, lemam.  
*Orange Colour*, cor de  
 laranja.  
*blue*, azul, c.

*Sky-blue*, azul celeste.  
*Violet Colour*, morado,  
 da, violeto, ta.  
*purple*, púrpura.  
*green*, verde, c.  
*light-green*, verde claro.  
*Olive-Colour*, cor de a-  
 zeytona.  
*dark-green*, verde escuro.  
*red*, corado, vermelho.  
*Carnation, Flesh-Colour*,  
 encarnado.  
*Fire-Colour*, cor de fogo.  
*scarlet*, escarlata, grana.  
*Rose-Colour*, cor de rosa.  
*Cherry-Colour*, cor de ce-  
 reija.  
*crimson*, carnesí.  
*Brick-Colour*, vermelho  
 bucarado.

C H A P. V.

A Collection of the most necessary and com-  
 mon Verbs, *Huma abreviação dos verbos mais  
 necessarios e comuns.*

**T**O study, estudar.  
 to learn, aprender.  
 to read, ler.  
 to write, escrever.  
 to correct, corrigir.  
 to begin, começar.

to continue, continuár.  
 to end, acabar.  
 to do, fazer.  
 to know, conhecer.  
 to be able, poder.  
 to desire or will, querer.

## 198 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

Of Speaking, *dó fallar.* To dress one's self, *de vestirse.*

*to speak, fallar.*

*to say, dizer.*

*to pronounce, pronunciar.*

*to converse, conversar.*

*to be silent, callarse.*

*to call, chamar.*

*to answer, responder.*

*to ask, perguntar.*

---

To eat and drink, *de comer e beber.*

*to eat, comer.*

*to drink, beber.*

*to chew, mastigar.*

*to swallow, engulir.*

*to cut, cortar.*

*to taste, gostar.*

*to fast, jejunar.*

*to breakfast, almoçar.*

*to dine, jantar.*

*to sup, ceiar.*

*to be hungry, ter fome.*

*to be thirsty, ter sede.*

---

To go to Bed, *de ir a cama.*

*to lie down, deitar-se.*

*to go to Bed, ir a cama.*

*to sleep, dormir.*

*to watch, velar, vigiar.*

*to dream, sonhar.*

*to wake, espertar, acordar do sono.*

*to rise, levantar-se.*

*to dress, vestir-se.*

*to undress, quitar, deitar os vestidos.*

*to put on the hat, pôr o chapéo.*

*to cover one's self, cubrir-se.*

*to put on the shoes, pôr os çapatos.*

*to put on the Stockings, pôr as méyás.*

*to wash one's self, lavar-se.*

---

The Actions of Man,  
*as acções do homem.*

*to laugh, rir.*

*to cry, chorar.*

*to sigh, suspirar.*

*to sneeze, espirar.*

*to blow, assoprar.*

*to whistle, assoviar.*

*to sing, cantar.*

*to command, ordenar.*

*to obey, obedecer.*

*to hear, ouvir.*

*to smell, cheirar.*

*to spit, cuspir.*

*to see, ver.*

*to sweat, suar.*

*to feel, tocar.*

*to tremble, tremir.*

*to cough, tossir.*

*to look, olhar.*

## *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 169*

to pinch, beliscar.  
to scratch, arranhar.  
to strike, feter.  
to wound, chagar.  
to give, dar.  
to take, tomar.  
to kill, matar.  
to pay, pagar.  
to owe, dever.  
to swear, jurar.

### *Actions of Love, acções de amor.*

to love, amar.  
to caress, acariciar.  
to flatter, lisongear.  
to embrace, abraçar.  
to kiss, beijar.  
to salute, saudar.  
to teach, ensinar.  
to nourish, nutrir.  
to correct, corrigir.  
to punish, punir.  
to chastise, castigar.  
to touch, tocar.  
to whip, açoitar.  
to deny, negar.  
to defend, defender.  
to beat, bater.  
to hate, aborrecer.  
to pardon, perdoar.  
to dispute, disputar.  
to quarrel, brigar, litigar.  
to protect, emparar.  
to abandon, desamparar.

to bless, bendizer.  
to curse, maldizer.  
to grant, conceder.

### *For the Sick, pólos doentes.*

to dress, afeitar.  
to cure, sarar, curar.  
to be better, se achar melhor.  
to bleed, sangrar.  
to take Physick, tomar mezinha.  
to purge, purgar.  
to cut, cortar.  
to prick, picar.  
to examine, examinar.  
to break, quebrar.  
to heal, sarar.

### *To buy, por comprar.*

to buy, comprar.  
to sell, vender.  
to cheapen, regatear.  
to value, avaliar, estimar.  
to measure, medir.  
to pay, pagar.  
to offer, oferecer.  
to lend, emprestar.  
to borrow, pedir prestado.  
to engage, empenhar.  
to cheat, enganar.  
to gain, ganhar.  
to lose, perder.

## 200 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

For the Church, *póla igreja.*

*to pray, rezar.*  
*to preach, pregar.*  
*to baptise, bautizar.*  
*to ring the bells, repicar os sinos.*

Actions of Motion, *acções de mover.*

*to go, ir.*  
*to walk, paccar.*  
*to come, vir.*  
*to return, tornar.*  
*to stop, parar.*  
*to march, marchar.*  
*to run, correr.*  
*to follow, seguir.*  
*to flee, fugir.*  
*to escape, escapar.*  
*to depart, partir.*  
*to advance, adiantar.*  
*to retire, retirar-se.*  
*to approach, chegar.*  
*to turn, voltar.*  
*to fall, cair.*  
*to slide, escorregar.*  
*to hurt, fazer mal.*  
*to arrive, chegar.*  
*to enter, entrar.*  
*to go out, sair.*  
*to mount, subir.*  
*to descend, decer, ir para baixo.*  
*to sit down, acentar-se.*

Manual Actions, *acções de mãos.*

*to work, trabalhar.*  
*to touch, tocar.*  
*to handle, apalpar.*  
*to bind, atar.*  
*to loosen, soltar.*  
*to take away, tirar.*  
*to take, tomar.*  
*to rob, roubar.*  
*to gather, colher.*  
*to tear or rend, rasgar.*  
*to present, apresentar.*  
*to receive, receber.*  
*to hold, ter.*  
*to break, quebrar, romper.*  
*to hide, esconder.*  
*to cover, cubrir.*  
*to discover, descobrir.*  
*to dirty, sujar.*  
*to clean, limpar.*  
*to rub, esfregar.*  
*to shew, mostrar.*  
*to tickle, cocegar.*  
*to scratch, arranhar.*

Of Memory and Imagination, *dá memoria e imaginação.*

*to remember, lembrar-se.*  
*to forget, esquecer.*  
*to think, cuidar.*  
*to believe, crer.*  
*to doubt, duvidar.*  
*to suspect, sospeitar.*



# *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 201*

<i>to observe,</i> observar.	<i>to unload,</i> descarregar.
<i>to take care,</i> tomar cuidado.	<i>to risk,</i> aventurar.
<i>to imagine,</i> imaginar.	<i>to sink,</i> margulhar-se.
<i>to wish,</i> dezejar.	<i>to drown,</i> afogar.
<i>to hope,</i> esperar.	<i>to recover,</i> recobrar.
<i>to fear,</i> recear.	<i>to escape,</i> escapar.
<i>to assure,</i> assegurar.	<i>to agree,</i> estar d'acordo.
<i>to judge,</i> julgar.	<i>to promise,</i> prometer.
<i>to conclude,</i> concluir.	<i>to oblige one's self,</i> obrigarse.
<i>to resolve,</i> resolver.	<i>to declare,</i> declarar.
<i>to feign,</i> dissimular.	<i>to confess,</i> confessar.
<i>to grow angry,</i> agastar-se.	<i>to sign,</i> assinar.
<i>to finish,</i> acabar, finir.	<i>to correspond,</i> corresponder.

## *Of Arts and Tradesmen, das artes e artífices.*

<i>to paint,</i> pintar.	<i>to stay,</i> ficar.
<i>to engrave,</i> esculpir.	<i>to contract,</i> contratar.
<i>to draw,</i> tirar.	<i>to charge to Account,</i> cargar a conta.
<i>to draw (as Painters do)</i> traçar, debuxar.	<i>to credit,</i> a bonar.
<i>to embroider,</i> brostar.	<i>to pack or store,</i> arrumar.
<i>to enamel,</i> esmaltar.	<i>to anchor,</i> ancorar.
<i>to gild,</i> dourar.	<i>to certify,</i> certificar.
<i>to print,</i> imprimir.	<i>to assign,</i> assinar.
<i>to work,</i> trabalhar, obrar.	<i>to seal,</i> sellar.
	<i>to confirm,</i> confirmar.
	<i>to recover,</i> cobrar.
	<i>to accept,</i> aceitar.
	<i>to indorse,</i> endossar.
	<i>to draw,</i> tirar.
	<i>to remit,</i> remeter.
	<i>to demand,</i> demandar.
	<i>to advise,</i> avisar.
	<i>to order,</i> ordenar.
	<i>to consign,</i> consignar.
	<i>to obligate one's self,</i> empenhar-se.
	<i>to pack,</i> embellar.

## *Of Shipping and mercantile Affairs, do navegar e negocios de mercadores.*

<i>to embark,</i> embarcar.	
<i>to load,</i> carregar.	
<i>to insure,</i> assegurar.	
<i>to freight,</i> fretar.	
<i>to sail,</i> navegar, dar a vela.	

---

F A M I L I A R

# D I A L O G U E S

I N

## *English and Portuguese.*

---

*Dialogue I.*

*Some Compliments.*

**G** O O D *Morrow,*  
(*Day*) *Sir; how*  
*do you do?*

*Very well, God be*  
*thanked, at your Ser-*  
*vice.*

*Not very well.*

*I thank you, Sir, (a*  
*thousand Years to you) I*  
*am your Servant.*

*How doth the Gentle-*  
*man your Brother do?*

*He is in Health; he*  
*is well; but my Sister*  
*is ill of a Fever and A-*  
*gue.*

*I am glad to hear it.*  
*I am sorry for it.*

*Pratica I.*

*Alguns cumprimentos.*

**B** O N S dias, Senhor;  
como está V. M?  
(*Vossa Mercê*)

Múy bem, graças  
á Deos, para servir á  
V. M.

Não muy bom.

Agradeço, a V. M.  
mil ánnos, fôu seu cria-

do.  
Como está o Senhor  
seu irmão?

Está com faude;  
está bom; porem min-  
ha irmãã está doente  
de huma febre e maléi-  
tas.

Folgo de ouvi-lo. A  
mim me pesa muito.

*Sit*

*Sit down, Sir : Boy, give a Chair to the Gentleman.*

*It is not necessary ; for I must go to make a Visit to Mr. N.*

*Is he arrived in Safety, (in Health?)*

*Yes, Sir. It is Time for me to go.*

*You are in a great Haste, Sir ; stay a while ; for I want to see him too, and we will go together.*

*I will come back ; I cannot stay now ; good bye, I kiss your Hands.*

*Acente se V. M. Rapáz, da ca huma cadeira ao Senhor.*

*Não he necessário ; porque ey de fazer hum visita ao Senhor N.*

*Chegou ja em salvamento (com faude?)*

*Si Senhor. He tempo que eu me va.*

*V. M. está muy apressado ; espere hum pouco ; que eu quero tambem vélo, e hiremos junctos.*

*Eu tornarey outra vez ; agora não posso aguardar ; a Deos, beijo as mãos de V. M.*

Dialogue II.

*Of rising from Bed, and Dressing.*

**W**HO knocks at the Door ? Who is there ?

*A Friend. Open the Door.*

*I ask Pardon, Sir ; is it you ? I did not know who it was.*

*Walk in, Sir ; you come very early ; is there any body else ?*

*No, Sir ? But why are you so late in Bed ?*

Pratica II.

*De alevantar e vestirse.*

**Q**UEM bate á porta ? quem esta ali ?

*Amigo. Abre a porta.*

*Perdó a Senhor, V. M. he ? não sabia quem era.*

*Entre Senhor, V. M. vêm bem cedo ; está cá alguem mais ?*

*Não Senhor ; mas porque esta V. M. tam tarde na cama.*

*Because*

*Because I am very tired with my Journey; what a-Clock is it?*

*The Clock has struck Ten.*

*Is it so late? I was mistaken in my Reckoning.*

*You are lazy, Sir; make haste, and rise quickly.*

*Let me alone; I must sleep yet longer, I have not slept well last Night, and my Head aches.*

*Don't you remember, Sir, that you have Business to do upon Change?*

*'Tis true, and for that Reason I must rise. Boy, give me my Shoes and Stockings.*

*Where are they? I cannot find 'em.*

*Go to look for them; I believe they are under the Bed.*

*They are not there; I don't see them.*

*Put on your Breeches and Coat, and put on your Shoes.*

*Take out of the Chest a Cravat and Ruffles, and forget not to comb my Peruke.*

*Porque fico muy cansado de minha jornada; que horas sam?*

*O relogio deu dez horas.*

*Tam tarde he? fiquei enganado ná minha conta.*

*V. M. He Muy preguiçoso; avie, e levante-se de pressa.*

*Déixame; ey de dormir ainda mais, não dormi bem ésta nóite; e me dóc a cabeça.*

*Não se lembra V. M. que tem negocios que fazer ná bolsa?*

*He verdade; e por ésta rezão he mester que me alevante. Rapaz, da cá as méias e os çapatos.*

*Aónde estão? - não os posso achar.*

*Vay buscallos; creyo que estão em baixo dá cama.*

*Alí nam estão; eu não os véjo.*

*Veste os calçóens e a casaca; e cal ca os çapatos.*

*Tira dá caixa a gravata com punhos e nam esqueça de pentear a minha cabeléira.*

*Sir,*



*Sir, where is the Comb? I see none, neither of Horn or Box.*

Senhor, onde está o pentem; não acho nenhum nem de ponta nem de buxo.

*You'll find it on the Table behind the Looking-glass. Give me some clean Water to wash my Hands, and a Towel.*

O acharas ná mesa detrás dó espelho. Da cá agoa limpa para lavar as mãos, com huma toalha.

*Here are your Cloaths, Sir; but won't you put on a clean Shirt, To-day?*

Eis aqui tem V. M. seus vestidos; mas nam quer pôr hoje huma camisa limpa?

*Yes, I did not think on it, this is very dirty.*

Si, não penséy nisto; esta está muito suja.

*I don't wonder at it; for it is now three Days since you put it on clean.*

Nam me espanto disso; pois há agora tres dias que V. M. pôz a limpa.

*Whose Fault is it?*

Quem tem a culpa?

*Not mine, Sir, because the Laundress is not come with your Linen as she ought.*

Não a tenho eu, por que a lavendéyra não tem vindo com a roupa como devía.

*Go to her To-day, and bid her come and speak with me To-morrow Morning early.*

Vá ter com ella oje, e diz lhe, que venha fallar comigo cedo pella manhã.

*Sir, I don't see your Handkerchief.*

Senhor não vejo o seu lenço.

*May be they stole it out of my Coat Pocket last Night in the Street; then take Money to buy me another.*

Pode ser que mó roubaram dá algibeira da casaca ontem a nóite ná Rua; pois toma dinheiro para comprar outro.

*What will it cost?*

Quanto hade custar?

*Here*

*Here is a Crown, and return me the rest.*

*What Sort must it be; of Silk, Cotton, or Linen?*

*Let it be of a fine Silk, because the coarse ones are not strong; but before you go, give me my Hat, Sword, Cane, and Gloves; for I go out with this Gentleman to breakfast at my Uncle's (in my Uncle's House.)*

*Now I think you are dress'd; and, if you please, we will go to Change, to see what News there is, or if any Post is arrived.*

*'Tis well, I'll go with you; but, with your Leave, we must breakfast first.*

*Then let us go to a Coffee-house, to drink a Dish of Coffee or Chocolate, and at the same Time we may read the News-papers.*

*I must call, en passant, at my Uncle's, who, I am persuaded will be very glad to see you.*

Eis aqui hum cruza-do, e torname a dar a-demasía.

Deque forte ha de fer, de seda, algodão, o pano de linho?

Que feija de seda fina (delgada) porque os de seda grossa não são fortes; más antes que vas dacá o chapéo, a espada, com a cana e luvas, porque eu vóu com este Senhor almoçar em casa de meu tio.

Agora a mim me parece, está V. M. vestido de todo, e se quer hiremos pella bolsa para ver que novas ha, ou sa tem chegado algum coreo.

Esta bem, hirey com-vosco, mas priméiro com licença de V. M. temos de almoçar.

Pois vámonos á hum caffè para beber huma tigela de caffè ou de chocolate, e nó mesmo tempo podremos lér as gazetas.

Ey de entrar, ao passar, ná casa de meu Tio, que estóu persuadido folgara de ver a V.M.

Dialogue III.

Of Breakfasting.

**W**HAT will you have for Breakfast, Sir?

*I'll go into the Kitchen to see what the Cook has to give us.*

*There is nothing but Bread, Butter and Cheese, and some Fruit, as Pears, Apples, Figs, &c.*

*Put the Kettle on the Fire to make the Water boil, for I will drink some Coffee this Morning.*

*If you'll eat some Meat, Sir, I'll send to Market for some Veal, Mutton or Beef.*

*No, Sir, I don't care to eat Flesh in the Morning; Bread and Butter with a little Cheese is sufficient for me.*

*What will you drink? will you please to taste the Ale or Beer, or white or red Wine? all these sorts are here at your Service.*

Pratica III.

De almoçar.

**Q**UE quer V. M. para almoçar.

Hirey ná cufinha para ver o que tem o cufinheiro (a cufinheira) que darnos.

Não ha senám pão, mateiga e quéijo, e alguma fruta, como peras, maçãas, figos, &c.

Poem a caldéyra fobre o fogo, para fazer ferver a agoa, porque quero beber caffè esta manhã.

Se V. M. quizer comer carne, eu mandarey à praça por vitela, carneiro, ou vaca.

Não Senhor, a mim não se meda de comer carne pela manhã, pão e manteiga, com hum pouco de queijo basta para mim.

Que quer V. M. beber? fera V. M. servido de provar Ella ou cerveja, ou vinho branco ou tinto? todas estas sortes estão a qui ao seu servicio de V. M.

*With*

*With your Leave,  
I'll drink some red Wine  
with Water.*

*Why don't you cut a  
Piece of Bread? have  
you no Knife, Sir?*

*Yes, I have. To your  
Health, Sir.*

*I thank you (to you  
many Years.)*

*I think it is plea-  
sant to drink out of the  
Glass than the Cup.*

*Drink it all; I take  
it to be good Wine.*

*I can drink no more,  
I have drank enough.*

*What think you of  
the Wine?*

*The Wine is very  
good.*

*You don't eat.*

*I have eat so much  
that I shall not be able to  
dine.*

*Com licença de V.  
M. beberéy vinho tinto  
com ágo.*

*Pôr que não corta  
huma fatia de pam?  
não tem V. M. faca?*

*Si tenho. A sua  
saude de V. M.*

*Agradeço (a V. M.  
muitos annos.)*

*A mim me parece  
máis gostoso beber dó  
copo de vidro que dó  
púcaro.*

*Beba todo, tenho  
para mim que o vinho  
he regalado.*

*Não posso mais  
Senhor, tenho bebido  
bastante.*

*Que lhe parece á V.  
M. do vinho?*

*O vinho he muy  
bom.*

*V. M. não come.*

*Tenho comido tan-  
to que não podrey jan-  
tar.*

#### Dialogue IV.

To speak Portuguese.

**H**OW goes the Por-  
tuguese? Are you  
well advanced in the Por-  
tuguese Tongue?

#### Pratica IV.

Para fallar Portuguese.

**C**OMO vái dó  
Portuguez? Está  
V. M. bem avançado  
ná lingua Portugueza?  
*Not.*



*Not much; I am as yet  
not very learned.*

*Yet they say you talk  
very well.*

*I wish to God it was  
true; those that say it  
are much mistaken.*

*I assure you, Sir, I was  
told it.*

*I can say some words  
I know by heart.*

*That is necessary to  
begin.*

*It is not enough to be-  
gin, but it is necessary  
also to end.*

*Speak always well or  
ill, that's no Matter;  
this Language is not dif-  
ficult.*

*I know it, and that  
it is very useful in several  
Parts of the World.*

*Particularly to Men of  
Business.*

*How happy should I be  
if I knew it!*

*You must study to learn  
it.*

*How long is it that you  
have learnt?*

*It is not yet quite a  
Month.*

*What is your Master's  
Name?*

*His Name is Mr. N.*

*Nam muito; ainda  
nãō estó muí perito.*

*Porem dizem que  
V. M. falla mui bem.*

*Provéra Deos que  
fosse verdade; os que o  
dizem se enganam muito*

*Lhe asseguro a V. M.  
que mo diceram.*

*Posso dezir algumas  
palavras que tenho de  
cor.*

*Issō he necessario para  
começar.*

*Nãō he bastante para  
começar, mas he mister  
tambem para acabar.*

*Fallay sempre, bem  
ou mal, issō nãō im-  
porta nada; este lingua  
nãō he mui difficul-  
tosa.*

*Eu o féy, e que he  
mui util em diferentes  
partes dó mundo.*

*Párticularmente a ho-  
mens de negotio.*

*O que seria eu dito so  
se a soubera!*

*Hade estudar para  
sabélla.*

*Quanto tempo haque  
V. M. tem aprendido?*

*Nãō ha ainda hum  
mez.*

*Como se chama o seu  
mestre.*

*Se chama Senhor N.  
P I have*

*I have known him a long time; he has taught several of my Friends. Dost he not tell you that you must speak Portuguese?*

*Yes, Sir, he tells it me often.*

*For why don't you speak then?*

*With whom should I speak?*

*With those who speak to you.*

*I would fain speak, but I dare not.*

*You must not be timorous; but boldly speak, well or ill.*

Eu o conheço muito tempo ha; tem ensinado a muitos dós meus amigos: Nam lhe diz a V. M. que ha mistér fallar Portuguez?

Si Senhor mó diz muitas vezes.

Por que rezão então não falla V. M?

Com quem fallaria eu?

Com os que lhe fallarem a V. M.

Eu quísera fallar porém não me atrevo.

V. M. não deve ser medroso; mas ha de fallar intrepidamente bem ou roim (máo.)

### Dialogue V.

#### Of the Weather.

**W**HAT Weather is it?

*It is good Weather. It is bad Weather.*

*Is it cold? Is it warm?*

*The Weather is temperate; neither cold nor hot.*

*Dost it rain?*

*No, for the sky is clear (sereno.)*

### Pratica V.

#### Dó Tempc.

**Q**UE tempo faz?

Faz bom tempo.  
Faz tempo roim.

Faz frio? Faz calor?

O tempo está temperado; nem frio nem quente.

Chove?

No, porque o céu está claro (sereno.)

*The Weather is changed. Yesterday the Sky was very cloudy and rainy.*

*But as the Wind is not changed, I fear we shall have Rain.*

*It will not rain To day:*

*I believe it will thunder and lighten.*

*That may be; but I am sure it will not snow.*

*For certain; 'tis more probable that it will hail.*

*You have a great Cold, Sir.*

*I have had this Cold this Fortnight.*

*I don't wonder; it is a very common Thing, and the fruit of the Season.*

*What shall we do to pass the Time till Dinner?*

*Let us take a little Walk.*

*With all my Heart. I consent; but whither shall we go?*

*Let us go to walk in the Garden.*

*Let us go; but see first if the Key is in the Door.*

O tempo está mudado; ontem o céu estava muy nevoado, e chuvaso.

Más como o vento não está mudado recéo teremos chuva.

Não choverá oje.

Créo que avera trovada e relâmpagos.

Isso pode ser (isso si) porem estóu persuadido que não nevará.

Por certo; he mais provavel que ha de pedriscar.

V. M. está muito refriado.

Tive este frio quinze dias ha.

Não me admiro; he cousa mui commúa, e a fruita da estação.

Que faremos para passar o tempo até o jantar?

Vámonos passear hum pouco.

De todo meu coração. Eu consento; más onde hemos de hir?

Vámonos passear nó jardim.

Vamos; mas véja primeiro se á chave, está ná porta.

*Yes it is, but I cannot open the Door; the Key is rusty.*

*Let me see; if you turn it that Way you'll break it.*

*What think you of the Garden? Is it not fine and pleasant?*

*Yes, Sir, these Shades and Arbours look very beautiful.*

*Let us walk in that Walk, where it is not so hot.*

*This Walk is beautified with a thousand various kinds of Flowers.*

*I think the Roses, with the Tulips and the Ranuncles, with the Carnations and Lilies, charm the Eye with the Briskness of their Colour.*

*This Place is a Paradise on Earth.*

*Gather any of these Flowers, if you please, to make a Nosegay.*

*No, Sir, it is enough for me to smell them here, and that I have the Pleasure of seeing them in their Spring.*

*This is my Pastime when I am alone.*

*Si, esta, porem não posso abrir a porta; a chave está ferrugenta.*

*Deixama ver; se V. M. a vira por esta parte, a quebrará.*

*Como lhe parece o jardim? não he lindo e prazentéiro?*

*Si Senhor estes arvoredos e ramados tem bellissima vista.*

*Passeémos naquelle passeio, a ónde não faz tanta calma.*

*Este passeio está rodeado com mil varios género de flores.*

*A mim me parece que as rosas, com as tulipas e os renúnculos com os cravos e lirios encantão os olhos com a viveza de suas cores brilhantes.*

*Este lugar he hum Paraíso terreal.*

*Colha V. M. qualquer destas flores se quizer, para fazer hum ramalhete.*

*Não Senhor, basta para mim que as chéiro aqui, e que tenho o gosto de vellas ná sua primavera.*

*Este he o meu passatempo quando estou sozinho.*



*I must take my Leave of you, Sir; I have something to do at home that cannot be excused.*

*That cannot be; out of Civility you ought to dine with me.*

*With your leave, Sir, I must go, for the Business is very urging; another Time I will accept your Favour.*

Ey de despedirme de V. M. tenho que fazer em casa que não se póde excusar.

Isso não se ha de soffrer; em cortesia ha de jantar comigo.

Com licença de V. M. ey de ir, pois o negocio he muy preciso; para outra vez aceitarei o seu favor.

*Dialogue VI.*

*Of Dinner.*

*Pratica VI.*

*Dó jantar.*

**I** Believe it is near Dinner-time; let us go home.

*I agree, for I am hungry.*

*Hero, Boy, go see if Dinner be ready.*

*I go, Sir, but I believe it is yet early.*

*Lay the Cloth, and bring the Salt-seller, with clean Plates and Napkins. Bring here Knives and Forks and Spoons, and let the Soup come upon the Table: Sit down, Sir, and let us use (let there be) no Ceremonies.*

*This is my favourite Dish (greatest Dainty) I*

**C** Réyó que serão horas de jantar, vámos pera casa.

Eu consento, porque tenho fome.

O rapaz, vay ver se o jantar está feito.

Eu vóu Senhor, mas créyo que ainda he cedo.

Poem a mesa, e tráz o saléiro com pratos e guardanápos limpos. Dacá fâcas, gârfos, e colheres, e venham as sopas sobre a mesa. Acente se V. M. e não aja cerimonia.

Isso he o meu mayór regalo, paraceme sôã  
*think*

*think it is good and well seasoned.*

*These Turnips are delicious, and the Carrots with the Cabbage are not bad.*

*They cannot be better.*

*Be pleased to help yourself to some Beef; I believe it is well roasted.*

*I would rather have boiled Mutton with Spinage.*

*John, take away this Plate, and bring something else to Table.*

*It is coming, Sir, the Cook is taking it up, and will send it presently.*

*Do you like Wood Pigeons? Now is their Season, and they are very fat.*

*I know it very well, Sir, but I had rather have a Leg of the Turkey, or a Wing of the Goose or Capon.*

*How do you like this Fish? Help yourself to some Sturgeon; there stand the Crevets, with Oil and Vinegar, and there is melted Butter in another Plate.*

bóas e bem temperadas.

Estes nabós são regalados, e as cenouras com a couve não são más.

Não podem ser melhores.

Seja V. M. servido de partir para si da vaca; creyo que está bem assada.

Antes queria do carneiro cozido com espinafres.

O João, tira este prato, e venha mais que comer á mesa.

Ja vem Senhor o cozinheiro está tirándoo, e logo o mandará.

Gosta V. M. daquellas rôlas? agora he seu tempo dellas, e são bem gordas.

Bem o fey Senhor, más antes quero a perna do Perú, ou a aza do pato ou capão.

Como lhe parece este peixe? parta V. M. do peixe folha; allí estão as galhétas com azeite e vinagre, e noutro prato tem manteiga derretida.

*'Tis a good Fish, and  
it looks white like Veal.*

*Shall I help you to some  
of the Turbet? It is very  
fresh and fat, and in the  
Opinion of most, is no con-  
temptible Fish.*

*Lord, Sir, it is one of  
the best that swims, and  
so well dress'd, that it  
temptis (opens) my Appe-  
tite.*

*Fill the Gentleman  
some Wine; they used to  
say in former Times, that  
Fish without Wine is Poi-  
son.*

*Is there any Snow in  
the house? If not, put  
some Wine in the Well to  
cool.*

*There is, Sir; I bought  
two Pounds To-day, and  
there are two Bottles of  
Wine cooling.*

*Fill some cool Wine and  
Water.*

*If you please, Sir, I'll  
send your Boy to the  
Water-side to see for a  
Boat.*

*What for? Whither  
will ye go? It is late,  
I believe no boat will be  
found.*

He hum bom peixe,  
e parece alvo como vi-  
tela.

Quer que eu parta  
para V. M. dó rodova-  
lho? hem fresco he e  
gordo, e nó parecer co-  
mum, não he péixe des-  
prezível.

Oh Senhor, he húm  
dos melhores que náda,  
e de tal modo guisado,  
que me abre a vóntade  
de comer.

Enche vinho ao Sen-  
hor; foy dito nós tem-  
pos antepassados, que o  
péixe sem vinho he pe-  
çonha.

Ha algúa neve em  
casá? se não ouver, me-  
te o vinho nó poço para  
esfriar.

Ha Senhor; oje com-  
préy dous arrateis, e es-  
tamse esfriando duas  
garafas de vinho.

Enche vinho frio com  
agua ferenada.

Se V. M. for servi-  
do mandarey o rapaz á  
praya buscar hum batel  
(fragata.)

Paraque? adónde vay  
V. M? já he tarde, creyo  
que não se achara batel  
(fragata.)

*Let him go to see; I must go on the other Side of the Water.*

*If your Business is not very pressing, stay till To-morrow, and I will wait on you.*

*I will stay with all my Heart, but we must know what o'Clock the Tide serves.*

*The Tide begins to flow To-morrow Morning, and the Watermen say, it will be low Water at Five o'Clock in the Morning.*

*Very well; we'll take Boat at Six, and with a favourable wind we shall be at N. by Eight.*

*Boy, go see if there be any Thing in the House to carry with us for our Journey.*

*Yes, Sir, I have already put into the Boat two cold roasted Fowls, a Couple of Bottles of Wine, and all other Necessaries.*

*Bring the Fruit to the Table, and if there is any thing else of a Dessert; to make up a small Dinner.*

*Taste these Grapes; they are the first of the Season (Year,) and these*

*Que va ver; pois hey de ir abanda dálém dá agoa.*

*Se o negocio não for muito apressado, espere até minhã e acompanharey a V. M.*

*Esperarey de boa mente, mas avemos de saber a que horas serve a maré.*

*Comecera a encherse a maré a minhã, pella minhã e dizem os barqueiros que as cinco horas de minhã estara vazia.*

*Bellamente, embarcaremos as seis horas, e com o vento em popa estaremos á N. as oito.*

*O rapaz, vay ver se he algúa cousa ná casa para a nossa viagem.*

*Si Senhor, já meti ná fragata (batel) duas frangas assadas frias, duas canéguas de vinho, com todo o mais necessário.*

*Venha a fruíta para a mesa, e se ouver alguma cousa mais de sobre mesa, para acabar hum jantar limitado.*

*Prove V. M. aquellas uvas; são as primeiras do anno, e as maçãs*  
*Apples*



*Apples and Nuts have now only their natural Taste.* e nozes agora só tem seu gosto natural.

*If you want any Thing else, command as if you were in your own House (at home.)*

*Nothing more; I humbly thank you, Sir; I have eat enough.*

*If you please to sleep after Dinner, here you have a fresh retiring Room with a Couch.*

Se V. M. quizer alguma coisa mais, mande como se estivesse na sua propria casa.

Nada mais, viva V. M. mill annos; ja comi bastante.

Querendo V. M. dormir a festa depois de jentar, eis aqui huma câmara de fresquidão com huma caminha.

Dialogue VII.

Pratica VII.

*Of a young Woman, and what news passes.*

*De huma moça, e do que se passa de novo.*

**S**EE there a handsome Damsel, or young Woman.

**E**IS aqui huma formosa donzella, ou moça.

*She is very well made.*

He muy bem feita.

*She has a beautiful Face.*

Tem huma bella cara.

*Do you know her?*

V. M. a conhece?

*No, I do not know her: She has fine Eyes.*

Não a conheço; tem os olhos bellos.

*She walks very gracefully.*

Anda muy graciosamente.

*And she is very well dressed too.*

E tambem está muy bem vestida.

*Yes, and I believe she must be a Person of Distinction.*

Si e creyo eu que he huma pessoa de distincção.

*That*

*That may be; what say you, Sir, should you not be happy with such a Wife?*

*Yes, if I had a good deal of Money with her.*

*You are too interested; the enjoying so fine a Woman is worth a Fortune.*

*I am not of that Opinion; but let us drop that Discourse. What News is there To-day? Do you know no News?*

*I have heard nothing.*

*I have read the Dutch Gazette, which speaks of nothing but War; and they write from Paris, they expect hourly news of some Rencontres between the French and the Imperialists.*

*What do they say of the Princes of the North? How go the Affairs between the King of Poland and the King of Prussia?*

*The Reports are various in all Places; some say they are in good Friendship, others think they are jealous of each other.*

Isso pode ser; que diz V. M. não seria ditoso com tam mulher?

Sim se tivera muito dinheiro com ella.

V. M. he demasiado interessado; o gozar hum tal mulher val hum dote.

Não sou desta opinião; mas deixemos este discurso. Que novas ha oje? não sabe V. M. nada de novo?

Não tenho ouvido nada.

Eu tenho lido a gazeta d'Ollanda, que não fallo senão de guerra; e escrevem de Paris, que todas as horas estam esperando novas de algum encontro entre os Francezes e as forças dó Imperio.

Que dizem dós principes dó Norte? como vay o negocio entre o rey de Polonha, e o rey de Prussia?

Os rumores são vários em todas as partes; huns dizem que estão em boa amizade; outros cuidam que estão ciolos hum dó outro.

*Be it as it will, the  
supreme Government is  
still the same, and there  
is a great deal of Truth  
in that old Saying, That  
very often a good War  
makes an advantageous  
and lasting Peace.*

*They write from Spain  
that the Spanish Fleet is  
ready to sail.*

*Their Preparations  
make a great Noise in the  
World; they have Mari-  
ners, Ammunition, and  
Ships enough; but it is  
said they want Money.*

*Others say the Expe-  
dition is deferred till next  
Spring, for other political  
Reasons.*

*We must leave those  
Things to Time, which  
clears up all Doubts.*

*Seja o que for, ainda  
Deos esta onde estáva,  
e he muita verdade na-  
quélle ditto antigo, que  
múltas vezes focede que  
a bóa guerra faz huma  
bóa e durante paz.*

*Escrevem de Espan-  
ha, que a frota Espan-  
hola está pronta para na-  
vegar.*

*As suas preparaçóens  
rugem muito nó mun-  
do; tem marinhéyros,  
provimiento de guerra e  
naviós bastantes, porem  
se diz que lhes falta din-  
heiro.*

*Outros dizem, que a  
expedição se pospoem  
pélo verão proximo por  
rezoens politicas.*

*Temos de deixár isso  
ao tempo que aclara to-  
das as dúvidas.*

*Dialogue VIII.*

*Pratica VIII.*

*To enquire about a  
Person.*

*Pare enquerir sobre huma  
pessoa.*

**W**HO is that Gen-  
tleman that spoke  
to you just now?

*He is a German.*

**Q**UEM he esse fi-  
dalgo que agora  
lhe fallava?

*He hum Alemão.*

*I thought*

*I thought he was an Englishman.*

*No, Sir, he is from Vienna.*

*He speaks very good Portuguese.*

*He pronounces it like one born and educated at Lisbon.*

*Has he been long in Portugal?*

*No more than two Years.*

*I am surprized he learnt so much in so little Time.*

*He has the Advantage of knowing Latin well, and he understands the Grammar perfectly.*

*In secret, you say he is a Scholar, and I see by his Mein, that he is an accomplished Gentleman.*

*Your Opinion is very just, and I always found him such.*

*He is of a genteel Behaviour, and a polite complaisant handsome young Man.*

*You speak so favourably of him, that were he a Woman I should think you were in love with him.*

Eu cuidava que era Ingrez.

Não Senhor, he de Vienna.

Falla muy bem Portuguez.

O pronuncia como hum nacido e criado em Lisbóa.

Esteve muito tempo em Portugal?

Não mais que dous annos.

Me espanto que tem aprendido tanto, em tam pouco tempo.

Tem a ventagem de saber bem o Latim, e entende a grammática perfeitamente.

Brève, V. M. diz que he docto, e eu vêjo por sua apparencia exterior que he hum fidalgo aperfeiçoado.

A sua opiniãõ de V. M. he justa, e eu o achêi sempre tal.

He muy gentíl na conversaçãõ, e hum mui polido, cortez e fermoso moço.

V. M. falla d'elle tam favoravelmente, que se fosse mulher, créria eu que estivesse enamorado d'elle.



*You joke, Sir; but I must own I have such an Esteem for him, that I should be obliged to you if you would do me the Favour to procure me his Acquaintance.*

*If you will, we will To-morrow go to his Lodging together.*

*Where doth he lodge?*

*Not far off; in New-Street.*

*'Tis very well: Good Night, Sir.*

*I thank you: Farewel, Sir.*

*I kiss your Hands: I wish you well home.*

V. M. zomba; podem ey de confessar tenho tanta reverencia por elle, que tivera muita obrigação a V. M. se quizera fazerme o favor de procurarme sua amizade.

Se V. M. quizer, haremos a menhãã juntos a sua pouxada.

Onde se hospeda?

Não muy longe daqui, na Rúa nova.

Está bem: Bóas nóites Senhor.

Agradeço a V. M. á Deos Senhor.

Bijoe as mãos de V. M. Chegue com bem a sua casa.

*Dialogue IX.*

*For to write.*

**G**IVE me a Sheet of Paper, a Pen and Ink.

*Go into my Closet, you will find there on the Table what you want.*

*I see no Pens.*

*There are a great many in the Inkborn.*

*They are not good.*

*Pratica IX.*

*Para escrever.*

**D**A cá huma fólha de papél, huma pena e tinta.

*Entre em minha recâmara e achara V. M. na mesa o que quizer.*

*Não vejo penas.*

*Ha muitas nó tintéiro.*

*Não valem nada. Não são boas*

*Here are some others.*

*They are not cut.*

*Where is your Pen-knife?*

*Do you know how to cut Pens?*

*This is not bad:*

*Whilst I finish this Letter, be so kind as to fold up that Packet.*

*What Seal must I put?*

*Seal it with my Coat of Arms, or my Cypher.*

*What Seal-wax shall it be?*

*'Tis no matter; take of the red or the black, which you please.*

*Have you put the Date?*

*I think I have; but I am not sure whether I have signed or no.*

*What Day of the Month is it?*

*'Tis the twentieth Day of the Month.*

*Put the Superscription.*

*There is no Sand here.*

*There is some in the Sand-box.*

*Look, here is your Servant; will you have him carry the Letters to the Post?*

*Eis aqui outras.*

*Não estão cortadas.*

*Onde está o seu canivete?*

*Sabe V. M. cortar penas?*

*Esta não he má.*

*Entre tanto que acabo eu esta carta façame V. M. a graça de dobrar este paquete.*

*Que sello tenho de pôr?*

*Selleo com as minhas armas, ou cifra.*

*Que lacre ha de fer?*

*Não importa nada; tome V. M. dó vermelho ou negro; o que quizer.*

*Tem V. M. posto a data?*

*Créo que si, mas não estóu certó se tenho firmado ou não.*

*A quantos dó mez estamos oje?*

*Estamos a vinte dó mez.*

*Ponha V. M. o sobrescrito.*

*Não ha aréa aqui.*

*A tem ná poeira.*

*Eis a qui voffo criado; quer V. M. que leve as cartas ao coreo?*

*Don't*

*Don't forget to pay the Postage.*

*I have no Money.*

*Here is a Crown; make haste, and return presently.*

*I will not tarry, Sir; I will dispatch.*

*Não esqueça de pagar o porte.*

*Não tenho dinheiro.*

*Aqui tems hum cruzado; vay de pressa he torna logo para casa:*

*Não ey de tardar Senhor, despachárey.*

*Dialogue X.*

*Pratica X.*

*For to buy.*

*Para comprar.*

**W** *Hither do you go? If it is no Matter of Secrecy, I'll wait on you.*

*You do me much Honour: I only go to speak with a Shop-keeper, to buy me a new Suit of Cloaths.*

*What is the Shop-keeper's Name? Probably he may be my Acquaintance.*

*I think his Name is M. N. or something like it; I do not know it for certain.*

*I know him very well; he lives in the Middle of the Street, on the Right Hand, over against the Insurance-Office.*

*Well then, let us go and do our Business.*

**O** *NDE vay V. M. P. Se o negócio não fór cõusa de segredo, acompanharey a V. M.*

*V. M. me fas muita honra; eu vóu samente para fallar á hum mercadór? de lója, para comprar-me hum vestide novo.*

*Como se chama o mercadór? tal vez será meu conhecido.*

*Cúydo que se chama M. N. ou tal; não o féy por certo.*

*Eu bem o conhêço; mora nó mèyo dá rua, a mão deréita, justo em frente dá casa dós seguros.*

*Pois, vámonos e tratemos o nosso negócio.*

*God*

*God save your Person,  
Mr. M. N. I come recommended to you by a  
Friend of yours, Mr. N.  
having Occasion for some  
Things out of your Shop.*

*Sir, you are welcome,  
and the whole Shop is at  
your Service.*

*I have Occasion for  
some fine Cloth to make  
me a Suit; have you any  
that is good?*

*Yes, Sir, I will shew  
you a Piece that I believe  
will not displease you.*

*Look you, here is a  
Piece, and in my Opi-  
nion one of the best that  
is this Day in Portugal,  
being very fine, well  
wrought, and of an agree-  
able Colour.*

*The Cloth is not bad,  
but the Colour doth not  
please me: I am no Friend  
to this Ash Colour, be-  
cause it is soon filled with  
Spots.*

*Look here, how do you  
like this Piece? It is of a  
more lively Colour, and  
more chearful for the  
Summer.*

*Guarde Deos a pessoa  
de V. M. Senhor N.  
venho en commendado  
a V. M. por hum amigo  
seu o Senhor N. por  
aver mister algúas cou-  
sas de sua tenda.*

*Seja V. M. bem vin-  
do, meu Senhor, e tudo  
que está ná lója fica as  
suas ordens.*

*Ey de mister algum  
pano fino, para fazer  
hum vestido; tem V. M.  
algum que préste?*

*Ténho Senhor, mos-  
traréy a V. M. huma  
peça que não lhe des-  
contentara.*

*Eis aqui húa peça, e  
nó meu parecer húa das  
melhores que oje ha em  
Portugal, por ser muy  
fina, bem lavrada, e de  
cor agradavel.*

*O pano não he máo,  
mas a cor não me agra-  
da; não sou amigo des-  
ta cor de cinza, por-  
que logo se enche de  
nódoas.*

*Olhecá Senhor, como  
lhe parece estóutra pe-  
ça? he de cor mais vi-  
va e mais alegre para o  
verão.*

*Yes,*



*Yes, this I like; how do you sell it a Covado\*, and be at a Word with me?*

*Sir, I'll tell you, I cannot sell it under two Mil and five hundred Reas a Covado.*

*It is very dear; I know I can buy cheaper in other Places.*

*If you find any so good, and of this Make, for less Money, I will give it you for nothing.*

*Hark ye, Sir, I'll give you two Mil two hundred and forty Reas, and I am persuaded it can be worth no more.*

*Well then, to be short, I will not let it go under two Mil four hundred Reas, although it were to my Brother.*

*Do you know how many Covado's will be sufficient to make a Suit?*

*Truely I cannot tell; but I'll send and call a Taylor that lives close by in the Neighbourhood, and he will soon inform us.*

*Isto sim; a como vende o cóvado, e digamo em huma palavra?*

*Eu lhe diréy a V. M: não posso vendêllo por menos de dous mil e quinhentos reis o cóvado*

*He muito caro, bem séy que posso comprállo mais acomodado em outras parres.*

*Se V. M. achar algum tão bom e deste feitio por ménos dinheiro eu lhó darey por nada.*

*Ouçame V. M. eu lhe daréy dous mil douscentos e quarenta reis, e tenho para mim que não podo valer mais.*

*Em fim, para usar de brevidade não ey de largallo por menos de dous mil e quatro centos reis, ainda que fosse ao meu irmão.*

*Sabe V. M. quantos cóvados bastaram para fazer hum vestido?*

*Não sey por certo; mas mandaréy chamar hum alfayate que mora aqui perto ná vezinhança, e elle logo o dirá.*

\* A Covado is a Measure almost an English Yard.

*How many Córdoades must I have to make a compleat Suit?*

*You must have for Coat, Waistcoat, and Breeches, four Córdoades and a half.*

*What may be the Breadth of it? I believe I must have more.*

*No, Sir, it is a Yard and three Quarters broad, and I am sure four or five Yards will be sufficient.*

*Very well, cut me off five Yards, that none may be wanting.*

*Here is just a Remnant of five Yards.*

*See what it comes to, and I will give you your Money.*

*Five Yards at two Mil four hundred Reas per Córdoad, amount to twelve Milreas in Portugal Money.*

*How much is it in Sterling, or current Money of England?*

*Twelve Milreas, at six Shillings and three Pence per Mil, make three Pounds fifteen Shillings Sterling.*

*Quantos córdoades hey de mistér para hum vestido inteiro?*

*V. M. ha mister para cassaca, vestia, e calções quatro córdoados e méyo.*

*Que largura téra? créyo que ey de mistér mais.*

*Não Senhor, tem de largura hum córdado e tres quartos, e asseguro-lhe que quatro para cinco córdoados bastaram.*

*Andar; córteme cinco córdoados, que não aja falta.*

*Eis aqui hum retalho de cinco córdoados justos.*

*Veja quanto importa, e lhe darey o seu dinheiro.*

*Cinco córdoados a dous mil e quatro centos reas o córdado, montam doze milreis em dinheiro de Portugal.*

*Quanto vem á ser em dinheiro estarlino ou moeda corrente de Inglaterra?*

*Doze milrea, (12000 rs.) á seis chelins e tres peniques por mil, fazem tres libras e quinze chelins estarlinos.*

*Here,*

*Here, tell your Money,  
and see if it be right.*

*It is, Sir, I humbly  
thank you, and hope ano-  
ther Time I shall have the  
same Honour.*

Eis aqui, conte V. M.  
o dinhéiro, e veja se está  
cértó.

Está Senhor, agrade-  
ço a V. M. mil annos,  
e espero que em outra  
oçasiã terey a mesma  
honra.

*Dialogue XI.*

*Of Playing.*

**L**ET us play a Party  
at Piquet.

*How much will you  
play for?*

*Let us play for one  
Shilling to pass the Time.*

*Give us some Cards.*

*Let us see who is to  
deal.*

*You are to deal.*

*Shuffle the Cards; all  
the Court Cards are toge-  
ther.*

*They are mixed suffi-  
ciently; cut the Cards, if  
you please.*

*Have you all your  
Caras?*

*I think I have.*

*How many do you take?*

*I take all; I leave none.*

*I have a bad Game.*

*Pratica XI.*

*Dó jogar.*

**J**Uguemos huma par-  
tida a o piquete.

*Porquanto quer V. M.  
jugar?*

*Juguemos por hum  
chelin por passo o tempo*

*Danos humas cartas.*

*Vejamos quem ha de  
dar has cartas.*

*V. M. as ha de dar.*

*Baralhe as cartas; to-  
das as cartas de figura  
estão juntas.*

*Estãm bastanteménte  
misturadas; parta V. M.  
as cartas, se fôr servido.*

*Tem V. M. todas suas  
cartas?*

*Creyo que tenho.*

*Quantas toma V. M.?*

*Tomo tudo; deixo  
nenhuma.*

*Eu tenho hum máo  
jogo.*

*Let us deal the Cards over-again.*

*No, Sir. My Game puzzles me.*

*You must have a fine Game; for I have nothing.*

*Count your points; fifty, sixty, &c.*

*They are not good. They are good.*

*A Quint Major, a Quint from the King, a Quart from the Queen, a Tierce from the Knave.*

*I have fourteen Kings, three Aces, three Queens, and three Knaves.*

*Play Hearts, Spades, Clubs, or Diamonds.*

*I have lost. You have won.*

*You owe me a Shilling.*

*Pardon me, Sir, you owed me one.*

*Then we are quits.*

*Démos as cartas outra vez.*

*Não Senhor. O meu jogo me embarça.*

*V. M. ha de ter hum bello jogo, por que eu não tenho nada.*

*Conte V. M. os seus pontos; cincoenta, seisenta, &c.*

*Não valem nada. Estão boms.*

*Huma quinta mayor, huma quinta do Réy, huma quarto dá Sôta, huma terça dó cavallo.*

*Eu tenho cartorze de Reys, tres ases, tres fouts e tres cavallos.*

*Jogue copas, espadas, páos, ou ouros.*

*Eu tenho perdido, V. M. tem ganhado.*

*V. M. me deve hum chelin.*

*Perdoeme V. M. mó devia.*

*Pois estamos iguáis.*

## Dialogue XII.

## Pratica XII.

*About a Journey, with some other Occurrences.*

*De kuma viagem com outras cousas diferentes.*

**O** Sir, are you here yet? I expected a Letter from you from

**S** Enhor, está V. M. ainda aqui? estive esperando por huma  
*London*



*London by the last Week's Post.*

*It is true, Sir, there was no Remedy: I thought to depart last Week, but I had an embroiled Business, which has detained me.*

*But what hinders you now? Is the Ship ready; and are the Goods dispatched at the Custom-House?*

*Not yet, all will be cleared To-morrow,*

*Is the Ship cleared in the Custom-house? And have you your Provision on board?*

*Yes, Sir, I think I shall have Occasion for nothing more.*

*Don't you think I am sufficiently provided for? I have put on board, for myself and my Footman, two Sheep, four Dozen of Fowls, four Turkeys, four Geese; and a Barrel of Wine.*

*Your Provisions are sufficient for a Voyage of two Months: Have you agreed with the Captain for your Passage? How much are you to give him*

*carta de V. M. de Londres, pello corréo dá semana passada.*

*He verdada Senhor; não óuve remedio, tray de partir a semana passada, mas tive hum negocio embaraçado que me poz em detença.*

*Pois agora que ha de impedimento? o navio está leites? e as fazendas estão despachadas ná alfândega?*

*Ainda não; todo liquidaríea a menhã.*

*O navio está despachado ná alfândega? e tem V. M. sua matalotagem abórdo?*

*Si Senhor, creyo que não hey de mister nada mais.*

*Não lhe parece que estou provido bastante-mente? pois mandey a bordo para mim e meu criado dous carneiros, quatro duzias de galinhas, quatro perús, quatro patos, com hum barril de vinho.*

*Os mantimentos bástam por huma viagem de dous meses. Tem V. M. ajustado com o capitão por sua passagem? quanto ha de dar-*

*for yourself and your Footman?*

*I made a Bargain with the Captain for the Cabin for me and my Servant for twenty Milrees, or about six Pounds five Shillings Sterling.*

*I think it is very reasonable. God send you a good Voyage.*

*But pray tell me, is it any Business of Consequence that obliges you to this sudden Departure.*

*It is, Sir, I have some Accounts to adjust with my Correspondents of great Moment.*

*Have you any Money owing you there among your acquaintance?*

*Yes, Sir, my Business is such, that I cannot do it by Letters of Attorney; but my Presence is necessary.*

*You have a Brother there, and if you will not trust him, whom will you trust?*

*Don't you know the Proverb; avoid Accounts with Relations, as Debts with such as are absent.*

*lhe por V. M. e mais o seu criado?*

*Eu fiz concerto com o capitão pello camerote, por mim e mais meu criado, em vinte milres, ou seis libras e cinco chelins esterlinas.*

*Bem acomodado está nó meo parecer. Deos lhe de boa viagem.*

*Más dígame ha algum negotio de importancia que obriga a V. M. a ésta apressada partida?*

*Ha Senhor, tenho outras contas que ajustar com meus correspondentes de muito pezo e valor.*

*Tem algum dinhéiro que se lhe fica devendo de seus conhecidos?*

*Sim Senhor, meus negocios são táes que não posso fassellos por húa carta de procuração, mas a minha presença he necessaria.*

*V. M. tem lá hum irmão, e se não quizer fiarse delle de quem se fiara?*

*Não sabe V. M. o provérbio, guardate de contas com parentes, como de dívidas com ausentes.*

*You say right, Sir;  
mean while farewell, Sir;  
To-morrow Morning I'll  
come to kiss your Hands,  
and to take my Leave of  
you.*

*No, Sir, that shall not  
be; you must, without  
Fail, dine with us, and  
we will wait for you till  
one o' Clock.*

*Sir, your Servant; you  
have overcome me with  
Civilities, and shall be  
obeyed.*

V. M. diz bem Sen-  
hor; ora entretanto a  
Deos Senhor, a menhaa  
pélla manhã virey bei-  
jar suas mãos e despe-  
dirme de V. M.

Não Senhor, isso não  
ha de fer; V. M. sem  
falta jentara com nosco  
e esperaremos por V. M.  
até a huma hora.

Criado, meu Senhor;  
V. M. me tem vencido  
com cortezias e fera fer-  
vido.

*Dialogue XIII.*

*Pratica XIII.*

*To reckon with the  
Landlord.*

*Para contar com o estala-  
jadéiro.*

**G**OOD Evening,  
Sirs, are you con-  
tented (pleased) with your  
Supper?

*Was the Supper to your  
Liking?*

*We are satisfied; but  
now we must pay you.*

*The Expence is not  
great.*

*See what we must pay  
for ourselves, our Servants  
and Horses.*

**B**OAS tardes Sen-  
hores meus, estão  
V. M. S. contentes com  
a cea?

*Esteve a cea ao gosto  
de V. M. S.?*

*Estamos satisfeitos?  
mas agora he mister pa-  
gar a vossé.*

*Os gastos não são  
grandes.*

*Veja quanto temos de  
pagar por nos, e mais  
os nossos criados e ca-  
vallos.*

*Reckon yourseſs, Gentlemen, and you will find there are ſeven Crowns.*

*It ſeems to me you ask too much.*

*On the contrary, I am very reaſonable (moderate.)*

*How much do you make us pay for the Wine?*

*Fifteen Pence the Bottle.*

*Bring us another Bottle, and To morrow Morning we will pay you. We will abate nothing.*

*It ſeems to me this Gentleman doth not find himſelf well.*

*I am well, but I am tired and fatigued.*

*You muſt have Courage.*

*It will be better for me to be in Bed than at Table.*

*Tell my Servant to come and undreſs me.*

*Good Night, Gentlemen; good Repoſe to you all; ſleep well.*

*I humbly thank you (ſave you a thouſand Tears) God preſerve your perſon.*

*Have you ordered clean Sheets for our Beds?*

Contem V. M, S. meſmos e acharam que ſão ſete coróas.

A mim me parece que Voſſé pede demaſiado.

Péſſo contrario, eſtôu múi razoado (moderado.)

Quanto nós faz pagar pello vinho?

Quinze peniques o fraſco.

Traga nós hum outro fraſco e menhãa pelli menhãa pagaremos á Voſſe; não lhe abatemos nada.

Tenho para mim que eſſe Senhor não ſe acha bem.

Eſtôu bem, más eſtôu canſado e fatigado.

Ha miſtér ter animo.

Sera melhor para mim eſtar ná cama, que ná meſa.

Diga ao meu criado que venha diſpirme.

Bóas noites Senhores. Bom repouſo a V. M. S. todos; dormam V. M. S. bem.

Viva V. M. mil annos; guarde Deos a peſſoá de V. M.

Tem voſſé ordenado lançoys limpos para nobiſas camas?

*Table*



*Take care that they may wake us early To-morrow Morning.*

*I will not fail; good by, Gentlemen, good Night.*

*Hark ye, Hostler, have you look'd well after the Horses?*

*Yes, Sir, for my Part I have been wanting in nothing? they have their Fill of Hay and Barley.*

*Do us the Favour to have our Horses ready To-morrow at Six o'Clock in the Morning.*

*Here, Master Landlord, tell your Money; and the Half-Crown which is over and above, let it be shared among the Servants.*

*Your humble Servant, Gentlemen; I hope every Thing has been to your Liking.*

*When you pass by this Way you have all your humble Servants at Command.*

*You are welcome, Gentlemen.*

*A good Journey (Voyage) to you, Gentlemen.*

*Tome vossé cuidado que nós despertem cedo à menhã pella menhã.*

*Não faltarey; a Deos Senhores, boas nóites.*

*O vossé, moço de estribaria, tem tratado bem os cavallos?*

*Si Senhor, dá minha parte não faltéy nada; tivéram de feno e cevada em abundancia.*

*Faça nós a Tercé de tér os cavallos prontos á menhã as séys horas pella menhã.*

*Ouçá Senhor. nosso amo, conta Vossé o dinhéiro, e a méya coróa que sobeja repartasse entre os criados.*

*Vivam V. M. S. mil annos Senhores; espero que todo esteve a seu gosto.*

*Quando passarem por este caminho, aqui tem todos os seus criados prontos ás suas ordens.*

*V. M. S. estão bem vindos.*

*Bóá jornada (viagem) tenham V. M. S.*

## Dialogue XIV.

About the Exchange.

**W**HERE are you going, Sir?

To Change; and pray where do you come from?

I come from thence.

Did you hear any News?

No, Sir, nothing particular.

Nothing that is remarkable.

How is the Exchange for Amsterdam To-day?

Thirty four Shillings and four Groats.

Who told you so?

My Broker.

Is there a great deal of Business doing To-day?

Yes, and if you have any to do, I advise you to make haste.

Then good bye to you, Sir.

I am your Servant. Pray my Service at home.

Do you design to draw or to remit?

I am not yet determin'd what I shall do; tell me: What do you think, is the Exchange for Amsterdam likely to rise or to fall?

## Pratica XIV.

*Dá bolsa.*

**A** Donde vai V. M.?

A bolsa, e peçohe de donde vem V. M.?

Venho de lá.

Ouvio V. M. algumas novas?

Não Senhor, nada em particular.

Nada que seja remarcavel.

Como vai o cambio para Amsterdam oje?

Trinta e quatro soldos e quatro grossos.

Quem lhó disse?

Meu corredór.

Se faz muito negocio oje?

Si, e se tem que fazer eu lhe a conselho que va de pressa.

Pois a Deos Senhor.

Sou seu servidor. Faça-me Mercê de dar meus beijamãos em casa.

V. M. intenta facar ou remeter?

Não estou ainda resolto ó que farei; digame: o cambio para Amsterdam parecelhe que subirá ou que baixará?

*They*

*They talk variously about it ; yet according to Appearance it will fall.*

*Can you get me some good Bills of Exchange?*

*I was just now offer'd some from a very good House, and People of a good Reputation.*

*Where the Bills at Sight or Usance?*

*I can have either the one or the other.*

*How much Brokerage must I give you?*

*You know the Custom is one Eighth per Cent.*

*I want to negotiate some Bills ; What do you advise me ? Should I send these Bills to Amsterdam or to Hambourg ?*

*I have not made any Calculation yet ; I'll tell you by and by.*

*They say Mr. N. has refused Payment.*

*Yes, and a great many Bills drawn on him have been sent back again to Holland, protested, by Yesterday's Post.*

*I am surprized, that a Man who was in so good Business, and bore*

*Fallam variavelmente nisto ; porem ao parecer baixará.*

*Pode V. M. procurar-me algumas boas letras de câmbio?*

*Inda agora me offercerão algumas de boa casa, e gente de boa reputação.*

*Eram as letras a vista ou usos ?*

*Posso tér de humãs ou de outras.*

*Quanto de corretagem lhe ey de dar?*

*V. M. sabe que o costume he hum outavo pór cento.*

*Eu quero negociar algumas letras ; que me aconselha ? que mande estas letras a Amsterdam ó Hamburgó ?*

*Não he feito calculo nenhum ainda ; lhó direy daqui a pouco.*

*Dizem que o Senhor N. refusou pagamento.*

*Sim e muitas letras facadas sobre elle se mandaram outra vez protestadas a Hollanda, pelo correo de ontem.*

*Me admiro, que hum homem que tinha bom negotio, e de bom ca-*  
*a good*

*a good Character, should owe so much Money.*

*Some say he is broke, and that he cannot pay 50 per Cent.*

*What do People imagine to be the Reason?*

*Some fancy his Friend and Correspondent abroad is broke; others say he games, or that his Wife is extravagant.*

*When will his Creditors meet?*

*They have taken already Possession of all his Effects and Goods, and they will examine the Balance of his Books Tomorrow.*

*I hope our Friend Mr. N. has not lost by him.*

*No, for he suspected him a great while, and I remember that he has often refused to take his Bills.*

*Do you know any Man of Credit who insures upon Ships and Goods?*

*Yes, Sir, if you'll leave your Business to me, I'll get it done to your Approval, and for a moderate Premium.*

*racter devesse tanto dinheiro.*

*Alguns dizem que faltou é que não pode pagar cincoenta por cento.*

*Que lhes parece ao publico seja a razão?*

*Alguns imaginão que o seu amigo e correspondente fora faltou; outros dizem que jogou ou que sua mulher he muy extravagante.*

*Quando se ajuntarão seus acredores?*

*Tem já tomado possessão de todos seus effectos e fazendas, e examinarão o balanço dos seus livros a menhã.*

*Espero que nosso amigo N. não tem perdido com elle.*

*Não, por que o suspeitava já ha muito tempo, e me lembra que muitas vezes tem recusado suas letras.*

*Sabe V. M. algum homem de credito que assegura sobre navios e fazendas?*

*Sim Senhor; se V. M. quer deixar seu negocio a mi, lhó far ei fazer á seu contento, e por premio moderado.*

*When*



*When is the India Company's Sale?*

*In a Fortnight.*

*I am glad of it, for then I shall have Time enough to execute my Commission before the Ships sail (or depart.)*

*Quando he a venda da companhia da India?*

*Em quinze dias.*

*Estimo, por que então terey tempo bastante para executar a minha commissão, ante que os navios se ponham á vela (ou que partam.)*

*Dialogue XV.*

*Pratica XV.*

*Of the Laws of England.*

*Dás leys de Inglaterra.*

**B***Y what Laws is England govern'd?*

*They have several, according to the Nature of Affairs, and the Diversity of Places.*

*How are they distinguished?*

*They are called the Common Law, the Statute Law, the Civil Law, and the Canonical (or Spiritual, or Ecclesiastical) Law?*

*What is the Common Law?*

*It is nothing but the common Customs of the Kingdom, which by length of Time have obtained the Force of Laws.*

*The Statute Laws have been made by several*

**P***OR que leys se governa a Inglaterra?*

*Tem diversas conforme a natureza d'os negocios, e a diversidade de lugares.*

*Como se distinguem?*

*Se chamam a ley comú, a ley d'os statutos, a ley civil, e a ley canonica (ou espirital ou ecclesiastica.)*

*Que he a ley comú?*

*Não he outro senão os costumes comús d'ó reyno, os quais com o tempo tem alcançado a força de leys.*

*As leys de statutos se fizeram por diversos*  
*Kings*

*Kings of England, by the Advice and Consent of both Houses of Parliament, the Lords and Commons of England.*

*The Civil Law is the written Law, or a Collection of the Judgments and Opinions of the wisest Men in all Nations for many hundred Years past.*

*What is the Use thereof?*

*To preserve the Peace and Tranquility of Mankind in general.*

*Who was the Author of the Book which contains the Civil Laws, and is intituled the Codex?*

*The Emperor Justinian, in the Year 527, had it compiled by the greatest Lawyers of his Time.*

*What do you call the Canonical Law?*

*Certain Canons compiled by the Clergy to support the Dignity of the Church, and to decide in all Matters relating to Ecclesiastical Affairs.*

*The Civil Law is used in the Court of Admiralty because therein are plead-*

*Reys de Inglaterra, por conselho e consentimento de ambas casas do parlamento, os condes e os comuns de Inglaterra.*

*A ley civil he a ley escrita, óu huma collecção das sentenças e opiniões dos mais sabios homens de todas as nações, por muitos seculos passados.*

*Que uso he o seu?*

*Para preservar a paz e tranquillidade do genero humano em geral.*

*Quem foi o autor do livro que contem as leis civiys, e he intitulado o Codex?*

*O Emperador Justiniano no anno 527, o fez collegir pelos mayores letrados de seu tempo.*

*Que chamays a ley canonica?*

*Cyrtos canones collegidos por clerigos para supportar a dignidade da igreja e por decidir em todas materias tocante os negocios ecclesiasticos.*

*A ley civil se usa na corte de almirantaigo, por que nella se litigam*  
*ed*

*ed and judged Affairs of Foreigners, as well as of Englishmen.*

*What is the privilege of a born Englishman?*

*That he may not be commanded by an arbitrary Power, but according to the known Laws of the Land: viz. the Common and Statute Laws, and especially by that call'd Magna Charta, the great Charter, which preserves him in his Liberty and Property.*

*How do they plead and try their Causes?*

*The Accuser and Accused, or Defendant, stand forth in the Court of Justice; their Advocates plead the Cause, the Witnesses depose upon Oath what they know of the Matter; the Judge who sits on the Bench, recapitulates what has been said on both sides, and declares the Law in that Case. Then the twelve Jurors (who are House-keepers, and chosen by Turns, not belonging to the Law, but all Men that have common Sense may serve in this Case) go into a Room*

*e julgam negocios de forasteiros tam bem como dós Ingrefes.*

*Que he o privilegio de hum Ingres nacido?*

*Que não seja governado por hum poder arbitrario, mas conforme ás leys conhecidas dá terra, a saber, a comúa, e as leys de statutos, e especialmente por aquella chamada Magna Charta, ou grande privilegio, a qual o conſerva ná fua liberdade e poſſeſſão.*

*Como litigam e julgam ſeus pleitos?*

*O accusante e o accusado óu defendente eſtão diante dá corte de justiça; ſeus avogados representam o pleito; as testemunhas depoem ſobre juramento o que ſabem dá materia. O juez, que eſta ſentado nó banco (cadéira) repite o que ſe tem dito de ambas partes, e declara a ley em eſte caſo. Então os doze jurados (os quais são gente que tem caſa, e eſcolhidos por vezes, não são letrados, mas todo homem que tem uſo de rezam*

*by themselves, and when they are all agreed, return into Court and declare what they think, guilty or not guilty, and the Judge pronounces Sentence accordingly.*

*Are criminal Matters managed in the same Manner?*

*Yes, and thus an Englishman has the Happiness of being tried and judged only by God and the Laws of his Country, acknowledging no arbitrary Power at all.*

*Happy is that Nation which enjoys their Life, Liberty, and Property, and can lose neither of them, but by those same Laws upon which the Safety of all their Fellow-Countrymen depends.*

pode servir neste caso) vam em hum aposento só e quando accordão todos bolvem pera a corte e declarão quema imaginão ser reo ou não; e o juez pronuncia a sentença em conformidade.

Os casos criminaes se dirigem dó mesmo modo?

Sim e assim hum Ingrez tem a satisfacção de ser julgado sómente por Deos e as leys de sua patria, não reconhecendo nenhum poder arbitrario.

Ditosa he essa nação que goza de sua vida, liberdade, e possessões, e não póde perder nenhuma d'ellas, se não por aquellas mesmas leys sobre as quais depende a segurança de todos seus compatriotas.



GRAMMATICA

LUSITANO ANGLICA,

OU

GRAMMATICA

PORTUGUEZA e INGLEZA.

SEGUNDA PARTE,

A qual serve para Instruir a os *Portuguezes* na  
*Lingua Ingleza.*



L O N D O N:

Printed in the Year 1767.

---

# A O L E I T O R

**S**ENDO varias as Razoens, que rendem ésta Obra util e necessaria; não farey mais que observar, ser para o homem de negocio, de absoluta importancia, e para o curioso estudante de entretenimento e recreyo; o que suposto, darey principio a o dictame que se observou nesta empreza.

Primèiramentese tratou das letras e sua pronunciaçãõ mostrando como se leyem por exemplos no estillo Portuguez de soletrear, como tambem das vogais, syllabas, diphthongos, triphthongos, &c. Seguindolhe despois as declinaçoens, conjugaçãoens, regras da syntáce, etymologia, prosi-dia e accentos. Com um vocabulario, e dialogos das couzas mais commuãs que a contecem na vida juntamente varias cartas sobre o negocio ou commercio; e finalmente, a carta, ou instrumento de procuraçam, a carta, ou instrumento de fretamento. A police de seguro. O conbi-mento. O instrumento, ou escritura de com-promisso. A letra de cambio, e seu protesto, &c. o que sem duvida nenhuma será o melhor e mais seguro metbodo de obter e conservar o conbecimento de ambas as linguas, e que tenha o efeito dezejado he o que o author muy sincera-mente implora.

---

---

# A O LEITOR

**S**ENDO varias as Razoens, que rendem ésta Obra util e necessaria; não farey mais que observar, ser para o homem de negocio, de absoluta importancia, e para o curiozo estudante de entretenimento e recreyo; o que suposto, darey principio a o dictame que se observou nesta empreza.

Primeiramente se tratou das letras e sua pronunciaçãõ mostrando como se leyem por exemplos no estillo Portuguez de soletrear, como tambem das vogais, syllabas, diphtongos, triphongos, &c. Seguindolhe despois as declinaçoens, conjugaçoens, regras da syntaxe, etymologia, prosi-dia e accentos. Com um vocabulario, e dialogos das couzas mais commuãs que a contecem na vida juntamente varias cartas sobre o negocio ou commercio; e finalmente, a carta, ou instrumento de procuraçam, a carta, ou instrumento de fretamento. A police de seguro. O conbi-mento. O instrumento, ou escritura de com-promisso. A letra de cambio, e seu protesto, &c. o que sem duvida nenhuma será o melhor e mais seguro metbodo de obter e conservar o conbecimento de ambas as linguas, e que tenha o efeito dezejado he o que o author muy sincera-mente implora.



# GRAMMATICA LUSITANO-ANGLICA;

O U

Grammatica, *Ingleza*, e *Portuguesa*.

---

## SEGUNDA PARTE.

---

### C A P. I.

#### *Das Letras, e sua Pronunciaçãõ.*

**O**S *Inglezes* não fô mente Escrevem de hum modo e Leyem de outro; mas tambem não falaõ como Leyem ou Escrevem: Se não por hum modo muy rapido, que para com elles tem total dominio; o que sem duvida cauza grande harmonia a os Forasteiros; para facilitar o qual, tenho applicado todas as diligencias possiveis para expressar, tanto a Alphabeto *Inglez*, por estilo *Portuguez*, como tambem as Vogais, Syllabas, Diphtongos, Triphongos, &c. com suas distincçens; allegando as mais adequadas Regras, para que possa o curiozo *Portuguez*, adquirir o conhecimento de ditta Lingua.



O Alphabeto *Inglez* contem 26 Letras asaber.

<i>A,</i>	<i>b,</i>	<i>c,</i>	<i>d,</i>	<i>e,</i>	<i>f,</i>	<i>g,</i>	<i>h,</i>	<i>i,</i>
<i>E,</i>	<i>bi,</i>	<i>ci,</i>	<i>di,</i>	<i>i,</i>	<i>ef,</i>	<i>gi,</i>	<i>etche,</i>	<i>ai,</i>
<i>j,</i>	<i>k,</i>	<i>l,</i>	<i>m,</i>	<i>n,</i>	<i>o,</i>	<i>p,</i>	<i>q,</i>	<i>r,</i>
<i>je,</i>	<i>que,</i>	<i>el,</i>	<i>em,</i>	<i>en,</i>	<i>o,</i>	<i>pi,</i>	<i>quíu,</i>	<i>ar,</i>
<i>s,</i>	<i>t,</i>	<i>u,</i>	<i>v,</i>	<i>w,</i>	<i>x,</i>	<i>y,</i>	<i>z.</i>	
<i>es,</i>	<i>ti,</i>	<i>iu,</i>	<i>vi,</i>	<i>dàbiliu,</i>	<i>eks,</i>	<i>uay,</i>	<i>zed.</i>	

*Ingles.**Portugues.*

<i>ba,</i>	<i>be,</i>	<i>bi,</i>	<i>bo,</i>	<i>bu,</i>	<i>be,</i>	<i>bi,</i>	<i>bai,</i>	<i>bo,</i>	<i>bu,</i>
<i>ca,</i>	<i>ce,</i>	<i>ci,</i>	<i>co,</i>	<i>cu,</i>	<i>que,</i>	<i>ci,</i>	<i>sai,</i>	<i>co,</i>	<i>cu,</i>
<i>da,</i>	<i>de,</i>	<i>di,</i>	<i>do,</i>	<i>du,</i>	<i>de,</i>	<i>dí,</i>	<i>dai,</i>	<i>do,</i>	<i>du,</i>
<i>fa,</i>	<i>fe,</i>	<i>fi,</i>	<i>fo,</i>	<i>fu,</i>	<i>fe,</i>	<i>fi,</i>	<i>fai,</i>	<i>fo,</i>	<i>fu,</i>
<i>ga,</i>	<i>ge,</i>	<i>gi,</i>	<i>go,</i>	<i>gu,</i>	<i>gue,</i>	<i>gi,</i>	<i>jai,</i>	<i>go,</i>	<i>gu,</i>
<i>ha,</i>	<i>he,</i>	<i>hi,</i>	<i>ho,</i>	<i>hu,</i>	<i>he,</i>	<i>hi,</i>	<i>hai,</i>	<i>ho,</i>	<i>hu,</i>
<i>ja,</i>	<i>je,</i>	<i>ji,</i>	<i>jo,</i>	<i>ju,</i>	<i>je,</i>	<i>jí,</i>	<i>jai,</i>	<i>jo,</i>	<i>ju,</i>
<i>ka,</i>	<i>ke,</i>	<i>ki,</i>	<i>ko,</i>	<i>ku,</i>	<i>que,</i>	<i>quí,</i>	<i>cai,</i>	<i>co,</i>	<i>cu,</i>
<i>la,</i>	<i>le,</i>	<i>li,</i>	<i>lo,</i>	<i>lu,</i>	<i>le,</i>	<i>li,</i>	<i>lai,</i>	<i>lo,</i>	<i>lu,</i>
<i>ma,</i>	<i>me,</i>	<i>mi,</i>	<i>mo,</i>	<i>mu,</i>	<i>me,</i>	<i>mí,</i>	<i>mai,</i>	<i>mo,</i>	<i>mu,</i>
<i>na,</i>	<i>ne,</i>	<i>ni,</i>	<i>no,</i>	<i>nu,</i>	<i>ne,</i>	<i>ní,</i>	<i>nai,</i>	<i>no,</i>	<i>nu,</i>
<i>pa,</i>	<i>pe,</i>	<i>pi,</i>	<i>po,</i>	<i>pu,</i>	<i>pe,</i>	<i>pí,</i>	<i>pai,</i>	<i>po,</i>	<i>pu,</i>
<i>qua,</i>	<i>que,</i>	<i>qui,</i>	<i>quo,</i>		<i>quíue,</i>	<i>quíui,</i>	<i>quíuai,</i>	<i>quíuo,</i>	
<i>ra,</i>	<i>re,</i>	<i>ri,</i>	<i>ro,</i>	<i>ru,</i>	<i>re,</i>	<i>rí,</i>	<i>rai,</i>	<i>ro,</i>	<i>ru,</i>
<i>sa,</i>	<i>se,</i>	<i>si,</i>	<i>so,</i>	<i>su,</i>	<i>se,</i>	<i>sí,</i>	<i>sai,</i>	<i>so,</i>	<i>su,</i>
<i>ta,</i>	<i>te,</i>	<i>ti,</i>	<i>to,</i>	<i>tu,</i>	<i>te,</i>	<i>tí,</i>	<i>tai,</i>	<i>to,</i>	<i>tu,</i>
<i>va,</i>	<i>ve,</i>	<i>vi,</i>	<i>vo,</i>	<i>vu,</i>	<i>ve,</i>	<i>ví,</i>	<i>vai,</i>	<i>vo,</i>	<i>vu,</i>
<i>wa,</i>	<i>we,</i>	<i>wi,</i>	<i>wo,</i>	<i>wu,</i>	<i>úe,</i>	<i>úi,</i>	<i>úai,</i>	<i>úo,</i>	<i>úi,</i>
<i>ya,</i>	<i>ye,</i>	<i>yi,</i>	<i>yo,</i>	<i>yu,</i>	<i>yé,</i>	<i>yí,</i>	<i>yai,</i>	<i>yó,</i>	<i>yú,</i>
<i>za,</i>	<i>ze,</i>	<i>zi,</i>	<i>zo,</i>	<i>zu,</i>	<i>ze,</i>	<i>zí,</i>	<i>zai,</i>	<i>zo,</i>	<i>zu,</i>

O seguinte he o (*ba*) areves o qual muda, o Son das Vogais como consta peilos Accentos; dos quais o primeiro se pronuncia largo e com aboca bem aberta, o segundo mais curto e com menos força.

Ingles.					Portugues.				
<i>ab,</i>	<i>eb,</i>	<i>ib,</i>	<i>ob,</i>	<i>ub,</i>	<i>êb,</i>	<i>ěb,</i>	<i>ib,</i>	<i>ăb,</i>	<i>âb,</i>
<i>ac,</i>	<i>ec,</i>	<i>ic,</i>	<i>oc,</i>	<i>uc,</i>	<i>ec,</i>	<i>ec,</i>	<i>ic,</i>	<i>ac,</i>	<i>ac,</i>
<i>ad,</i>	<i>ed,</i>	<i>id,</i>	<i>od,</i>	<i>ud,</i>	<i>ed,</i>	<i>ed,</i>	<i>id,</i>	<i>ad,</i>	<i>ad,</i>
<i>af,</i>	<i>ef,</i>	<i>if,</i>	<i>of,</i>	<i>uf,</i>	<i>ef,</i>	<i>ef,</i>	<i>if,</i>	<i>af,</i>	<i>af,</i>
<i>ag,</i>	<i>eg,</i>	<i>ig,</i>	<i>og,</i>	<i>ug,</i>	<i>eg,</i>	<i>eg,</i>	<i>ig,</i>	<i>ag,</i>	<i>ag,</i>
<i>ah,</i>	<i>he,</i>	<i>oh,</i>			<i>êh,</i>	<i>ěh,</i>	<i>oh,</i>		
<i>ak,</i>	<i>ek,</i>	<i>ik,</i>	<i>ok,</i>	<i>uk,</i>	<i>êk,</i>	<i>ěk,</i>	<i>ik,</i>	<i>ăk,</i>	<i>âk,</i>
<i>al,</i>	<i>el,</i>	<i>il,</i>	<i>ol,</i>	<i>ul,</i>	<i>el,</i>	<i>el,</i>	<i>il,</i>	<i>al,</i>	<i>al,</i>
<i>am,</i>	<i>em,</i>	<i>im,</i>	<i>om,</i>	<i>um,</i>	<i>em,</i>	<i>em,</i>	<i>im,</i>	<i>am,</i>	<i>am,</i>
<i>an,</i>	<i>en,</i>	<i>in,</i>	<i>on,</i>	<i>un,</i>	<i>en,</i>	<i>en,</i>	<i>in,</i>	<i>an,</i>	<i>an,</i>
<i>ap,</i>	<i>ep,</i>	<i>ip,</i>	<i>op,</i>	<i>up,</i>	<i>ep,</i>	<i>ep,</i>	<i>ip,</i>	<i>ap,</i>	<i>ap,</i>
<i>ar,</i>	<i>er,</i>	<i>ir,</i>	<i>or,</i>	<i>ur,</i>	<i>ar,</i>	<i>ar,</i>	<i>ir,</i>	<i>ar,</i>	<i>ar,</i>
<i>as,</i>	<i>es,</i>	<i>is,</i>	<i>os,</i>	<i>us,</i>	<i>es,</i>	<i>es,</i>	<i>is,</i>	<i>as,</i>	<i>as,</i>
<i>at,</i>	<i>et,</i>	<i>it,</i>	<i>ot,</i>	<i>ut,</i>	<i>et,</i>	<i>et,</i>	<i>it,</i>	<i>at,</i>	<i>at,</i>
<i>ax,</i>	<i>ex,</i>	<i>ix,</i>	<i>ox,</i>	<i>ux,</i>	<i>eks,</i>	<i>eks,</i>	<i>iks,</i>	<i>aks,</i>	<i>aks,</i>
<i>az,</i>	<i>ez,</i>	<i>iz,</i>	<i>oz,</i>	<i>uz,</i>	<i>ez,</i>	<i>ez,</i>	<i>iz,</i>	<i>az,</i>	<i>az,</i>
<i>amp,</i>	<i>emp,</i>	<i>imp,</i>	<i>omp,</i>	<i>ump,</i>	<i>emp,</i>	<i>emp,</i>	<i>imp,</i>	<i>amp,</i>	<i>amp,</i>
<i>ant,</i>	<i>ent,</i>	<i>int,</i>	<i>ont,</i>	<i>unt,</i>	<i>ent,</i>	<i>ent,</i>	<i>int,</i>	<i>ant,</i>	<i>ant,</i>
<i>ast,</i>	<i>est,</i>	<i>ist,</i>	<i>ost,</i>	<i>ust,</i>	<i>est,</i>	<i>est,</i>	<i>ist,</i>	<i>ast,</i>	<i>ast,</i>
<i>ath,</i>	<i>eth,</i>	<i>ith,</i>	<i>oth</i>	<i>uth,</i>	<i>eth,</i>	<i>eth,</i>	<i>ith,</i>	<i>ath,</i>	<i>ath,</i>
<i>bla,</i>	<i>ble,</i>	<i>bli,</i>	<i>blo,</i>	<i>blu,</i>	<i>ble,</i>	<i>bli,</i>	<i>blai,</i>	<i>blo,</i>	<i>blu,</i>
<i>bra,</i>	<i>bre,</i>	<i>bri,</i>	<i>bro,</i>	<i>bru,</i>	<i>bre,</i>	<i>bri,</i>	<i>brai,</i>	<i>bro,</i>	<i>bru,</i>
<i>cha,</i>	<i>che,</i>	<i>chi,</i>	<i>cho,</i>	<i>chu,</i>	<i>che,</i>	<i>chi,</i>	<i>chai,</i>	<i>cho,</i>	<i>chu,</i>
<i>cla,</i>	<i>cle,</i>	<i>cli,</i>	<i>clo,</i>	<i>clu,</i>	<i>cle,</i>	<i>cli,</i>	<i>clai,</i>	<i>clo,</i>	<i>clu,</i>
<i>cra,</i>	<i>cre,</i>	<i>cri,</i>	<i>cro,</i>	<i>cru,</i>	<i>cre,</i>	<i>cri,</i>	<i>crai,</i>	<i>cro,</i>	<i>cru,</i>
<i>dra,</i>	<i>dre,</i>	<i>dri,</i>	<i>dro,</i>	<i>dru,</i>	<i>dre,</i>	<i>dri,</i>	<i>drai,</i>	<i>dro,</i>	<i>dru,</i>
<i>dwa,</i>	<i>dwe,</i>	<i>dwi,</i>			<i>dué,</i>	<i>duí,</i>	<i>duaí,</i>		
<i>fla,</i>	<i>fle,</i>	<i>fli,</i>	<i>flo,</i>	<i>flu,</i>	<i>fle,</i>	<i>fli,</i>	<i>flai,</i>	<i>flo,</i>	<i>flu,</i>
<i>fra,</i>	<i>fre,</i>	<i>fri,</i>	<i>fro,</i>	<i>fru,</i>	<i>fre,</i>	<i>fri,</i>	<i>frai,</i>	<i>fro,</i>	<i>fru,</i>

*Inglez.**Portuguez*

*gla, gle, gli, glo, glu,  
gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu,  
gra, gre, gri, gro, gru,  
kna, kne, kni, kno, knu,  
pha, phe, phi, pho, phu,  
pla, ple, pli, plo, plu,  
pra, pre, pri, pro, pru,  
rha, rhe, rhi, rho, rhu,  
sca, sce, sci, sco, scu,  
sha, she, shi, sho, shu,  
ska, ske, ski, sko, sku,*

*sla, sle, sli, slo, slu,  
sma, sme, smi, smo, smu,*

*sna, sne, sni, sno, snu,*

*spa, spe, spi, spo, spu,*

*squa, sque, squi, squo,*

*sta, ste, sti, sto, stu,  
swa, swe, swi, swo, swu,  
tha, the, thi, tho, thu,  
tra, tre, tri, tro, tru,  
twa, twe, twi, two,  
wba, whe, whi, who,  
wra, wre, wri, wro, wru,  
sra, sre, sri, spro, spru,*

*sora, sore, sori, spro, spru,*

*sp!a, sp!e, sp!i, sp!o, sp!u,*

*spra, spre, spri, spro, spru,*

*gle, gli, glai, glo, glu;  
ne, ni, nai, no, nu,  
gre, gri, grai, gro, gru,  
ne, ni, nai, no, nu,  
fe, fi, fai, fo, fu,  
ple, pli, plai, plo, plu,  
pre, pri, prai, pro, pru,  
re, ri, rai, ro, ru,  
esquê, fi, fai, escó, escú,  
xe, xi, xai, xo, xu,  
esqué, esquí, esquaí, escó,  
escú,*

*celé, cilí, celaí, celo, celú,  
cemé, cimí, cimaí, cemó,  
cemú,*

*cené, ciní, cinaí, cenò,  
cenú,*

*espé, espí, espai, espó,  
espú,*

*esquíuê, esquíuí, esquíuai,  
esquíuó,*

*esté, esti, estai, estó, estú,  
fué, fuí, suaí, fuó, fuú,  
the, thi, thai, tho, thu,  
tre, tri, trai, tro, trú,  
tué, tuí, tuaí, tú,  
ué, uí, uai, ú,*

*re, ri, rai, ro, ru,  
escré, escrí, escrai, escró,  
escrú,*

*xeré, xerí, xeraí, xeró,  
xerú,*

*esplé, espli, esplai, espló,  
esplu,*

*espré, esprí, esprai, espró,  
esprú,*

*stra, stre, stri, stro, stru,* estré, estrí, estrai, estró,  
estrú,

*thra, thre, thri, thro, thru,* thré, thrí, thraí, thró,  
thrú,

*thwa, thwe, thwi,* thué, thuí, thuaí,

Letra he hum Character, q̃. significa hum Simple Articulado Son sem Composição. As Letras na Língua *Ingleza* são 26 como seve do Alfabeto a tras.

Dividense em Consoantes, e Vogais. As Vogais tem hum cheo, e perfeito Son de si mesmo, sem ajuda de outra qual quer Letra; e são Sinco, a saber. *a, e, i, o, u,—e, y*, Grego que sepoem no fim das Palavras: Todas em Geral soão na forma Seguinte a saber. *a*, antes de, *ll*, he, *a Portuguez*, Ex. *tall, Wall, all, &c. lease, tal, uál, al, &c.* Tambem antes de, *ld*, he, *a Portuguez*, Ex. *bald, scald, &c. lease, bald, escáld, &c.* e antes de *lk*, Ex. *talk, walk, lease, tak, uák*, e antes de *lt*, Ex. *Malt, Salt*; e entre *w r*, Ex. *war, ward, warm, &c.* e tambem em *Watch, Water, was, wash*, e nas Palavras dirivadas de qual quer destes; assim tambem os Diphtongos.

*Au, aw*, São, *a, Portuguez*, Ex. *Authority, Audience, saw, law, raw, &c. lease, Athárity, ádíence, sa, la, ra, &c.*

*A, he, e, Portuguez* em todos os Nomes de huma Syllaba que acabaõ com huma Consoante, Ex. *bat, can, far, mad, &c. lease, bet, quen, fer, med, &c.* tambem quando duas Consoantes da mesma especie se encontraõ no meyo de huma Palavra. Ex. *Battle, cannot, Farrier, &c. lease, bétíl, quénnat, fériar, &c.* e tambem quando huã singela Consoante em o meyo Soa como dobrada, Ex. *banish, Dragon, Habit, &c. lease, bénix, Drégan, Hébit, &c.*



E. em Palavras que acabaõ com huma ou mais Consoantes he, *e, Portuguese.* Ex. *Bed, blest, length, Strength, &c. lease, bed, blest, length, estrength, &c.*

E. Singello no fim de alguns Nomes proprios soa como, *i, Portuguese.* Ex. *Phebe, Penelope, &c. lease, Phíbi, Penélípi, &c.* e assim deve ser no fim de todos os Nomes Gregos, e Latinos, Ex. *Epitome*, como tambem em, *he, she, me, we, be, ye, the*, tambem, *y*, no fim de varias Palavras soa como, *i, Portuguese.* Ex. *holy, happy, daily, &c.*

E. tacito e que não Soa serve para fazer longa a Vogal q̃. lhe fica atras, e tambem para abrandar, o, c, g, Ex. *mad, made, bit, bite, not, note, tun, tune, lac, lace, rag, rage, stag, stage, bug, buge, &c. lease, med, mede, bit, bait, not, nat, &c.* Note-se, q̃. quando, *e*, não Soa no fim das Palavras, se chama, *e*, final: O qual algumas vezes serve para alongar on Son da Vogal que fica atras; como Ex. *sawe*, e algumas vezes he redundante como Ex. *give*. E. não Soa no fim das Palavras depois de *r* mas se converte em *a Portuguese.* Ex. *fire, desire, acre, meagre, &c. lease, faíar, dízaíar, écar, mígar, &c.*

I. tem o Son de, *ai, Portuguese,* Ex. *pint, mind, wild, &c. lease, páint, máind, úaild*, e de *i* em *tin, win, sing, &c. lease, tin ún, sing, &c.* Tambem antes de *gh*, he *ai, Portuguese.* Ex. *high, nigh, sigh, &c. lease, hái, náí, faith, &c.* excepto nos Diphthongos Impropios de *ui*, que he, *i, Portuguese.* Ex. *uild, built, guilty, &c. lease, bild, bilt, gúilty, &c.*

O. Tem 4 Sons a saber.

- 1.º. Como *o Portuguese,* Ex. *go, lo, so, &c.*
- 2.º. Como *a,* Ex. *hot, not, plot, &c. lease, hat, nat, plat, &c.*
- 3.º. Como *u,* *Rome, move, prove, &c. lease, Rum, muvé, pruvé, &c.*

4. Como *a*, Ex. *some, mouth, monk, &c. lease, sam, máuth, mánk.*

U. Soa como *e*, *Portuguez* nesta Palavra, *bury, lease, béri*, porem em *busy, business*, soa como *i*, *Portuguez*, e se leyem *bizi, bízines*. U. em Palavras de huã Syllaba ou seguindolhe qual quer Consoante he *a Portuguez*, Ex. *rub, gun, burst, custom, clutter, mutter, &c. lease, ráb, gán, bárít, cástam, clátar, mátar, &c.* Em todos os Monosyllabas que terminaõ côm *e* soa como *u* apertado, Ex. *cube, pure, flute, confute, lease, quíub, píuar, fíut, confíut, &c.* Y. Em os Nomes de huã Syllaba, se pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *by, my, why, thy, &c. lease, bai, mai, uai, thai, &c.*

No fim dos nomes Adjectivos, e Substantivos, se pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *beauty, bounty, angry, ready, city, heavy, &c. lease, bíuti, báunti, éngri, rédi, cíti, évi*, nos Verbos de duas Syllabas se pronuncia, como *ai Portuguez*, Ex. *deny, apply, &c. lease, dinái, épplai, &c.*

Tiraõse os Verbos que acabaõ em, *ry*, que nestes se pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *carry, tarry, merry, lease, quéri, téri, méri.*

No principio das Palavras se pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, ainda que se lhe siga Vogal, Ex. *Yard, yes, year, you, your, yours, youth, yet, young, &c. lease, íard, íes, íer, iú, iúar, iuars, iuth, iút, íang, &c.*

Su. Soa como *x Portugues*, Ex. *Sugar, assure, insure, lease, Xugar, éxuar, ínxúar, &c.* Tambem, *ti*, quando lhe segue qual quer das 5 Letras Vogais Soa como *x*, Ex. *Nation, vexation, condition, determination, patience, &c. lease, néxian, vékséxian, cándíxian, díterminexian, péxience, &c.*

Todas as Palavras que acabaõ em, *ure*, Soaõ coma *ar Portugues*, Ex. *Nature, adventure, procedure, &c. lease, néitar, édventar, prodar, &c. ric.*

As

As Consoantes, *g b*, em o meyo de qual quer Palavra não Soaõ pore[m] no fim Soaõ algumas vezes como *f*. Ex. *rough, cough, laugh, enough, lease, raf, caf, laf, ènaf, &c.*

As Consoantes, *sb*, tem o Son de *x* *Portuguez*, Ex. *shinz, Sbirt, Sbift, Skip, short, &c. lease, xáin, xáart, xift, xip, xart, &c.*

K. seguin dolhe *n* não Soa, Ex. *know, knot, knee, knuckle, lease, no, nat, ni, náquil, &c.* Tambem *w*, em lhe seguin do, *r* não tem Son, Ex. *write, wrist, wrong, &c. lease, raít, ríst, ráng, &c.* Taõ pouco, *g*, seguin do lhe *n* tem Son, Ex. *gnaw, gnat, &c. lease, na, net, &c.*

Estes Nomes Singulares, *knife, wife, life, lease, náif, uaif, laif*, e seus Compostos, no numero Plural mudaõ o *f* em *v*, Ex. *Knives, Wives, lives, lease, náivs, uaívs, laivs, &c.*

### *Dos Diphtongos.*

Diphtongos são duas Vogais juntas, fazendo hum Son, ou huma Syllaba, dos quais ha duas Sortes; proprios, e improprios.

Os proprios, São duas Vogais em huma Syllaba fazendo hum Son Asaber.

O Diphtongo *ai* he *e* *Portuguez*. Ex. *fair, pair, pain, stain, &c. lease, fer, per, péin, estéin, &c.*

O Diphtongo *ee* he *i* *Portuguez*. Ex. *Queen, seen, meet, &c. lease, Quin, fin, mit, &c.*

O Diphtongo *oo* he *u*, *Portuguez*, Ex. *good, noon, ccock, lease, gud, nun, cuk, excepto nestas palavras que Soa como a, Ex. blood, flood, foot, lease, blad, flad, fat, &c.*

O Diphtongo *oi*, he *ai* *Portuguez*, Ex. *void, toil, seil, spoil, &c. lease, váid, táil, fáil, espáil, &c.*

Os Diphtongos, *ou, ow, Soaō*, como *au* *Portuguez*, Ex. *House, Mouse, rouse, Cow, now, how, lease, áus, máus, ráus, caú, aú, &c.*

*Dos Diphtongos Impropios.*

Este Diphtongo he o encontro de 2 Vogatis em huã Syllaba, soando sô huã dellas e ficando a outra muda. Ha 10. asaber.

*aa, ea, eo, eu, ei, ie, oa, oe, ue, ui.*

*aa.* he e *Portuguez*, Ex. *Aaron, Isaac, Canaan, lease, éran, áizac, Kénan.*

*ea* Tem 4 Sons asaber.

1º. Como *e* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Bear, swear, tear, wear, &c. lease, bér, fúer, tér, úer, &c.*

2º. Como *a* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Heart, heard, hearken, &c. lease, hart, hard, harkin, &c.*

3º. Como *e* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Already, Bread, Breast, Head, &c. lease, álredi, bréd, brést, héd, &c.*

4º. Como *i* *Portuguez*, Ex. *appear, fear, near, Veal, deal, conceal, Flea, Plea, Pea, Sea, Tea, yea, &c. lease, éppiar, fíar, níar, vil, dil, cáncil, fli, pli, pi, Si, Ti, ii, &c.*

*eo*, Tem 3 Sons asaber.

1º. Como *e* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Jeopardy, Leopardy, Feoffee, &c. lease, Jepardy, Lepardy, Fessi, &c.*

2º. Como *i* *Portuguez*, Ex. *People, Feodary, &c. lease, pípil, fídery.*

3º. Como *a* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Geometry, Geography, &c. lease, Geámetri, Geâgrefi, &c.*

*eu, ew*, Soaō como *u* *Portugues*, Ex. *Deuce, Pleurisy, Dew, few, Pew, Pewter, &c. lease, díus, plúrifi, diu, fíu, píu, píutar, &c.*

*ei*, Tem 2 Sons asaber.

1º. Como *e* *Portuguez*, Ex. *feign, reign, lease, féin, rein, &c.*



2º. Como *i*, Ex. *perceive, Deceit, Conceit, inveigle, Receipt, receive, &c. lease, párliv, dílit, cánsit, ínviguil, rícit, ríciv, &c.*

*ie*, he *i* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Belief, believe, brief, Cashier, Field, pierce, Priest, &c. lease, bílif, bíliv, brif, Kexiar, Fild, píars, príst, &c.* e Tambem em *busie, crasie, Gypsie, &c.* que em lugar de *ie* no fim se escrevem hoje com *y*, Ex. *busy, crasy, Gipsy, dignify, &c. lease, bízi, crézi, jipsi, &c.*

*O A*, he *o* *Portugues*, Ex. *Coat, Cloak, Coast, Float, Boat, &c. lease, Cot, Clok, Cost, Flot, Bot, &c.* excepto em *broad, Groat*, que he *a* *Portuguez*, *lease, brad, grat*, e em *Goal*, que he *e* *Portugues*, *lease, Gel.*

*oe*, Soa algumas vezes como *e* *Portuguez*, Ex. *OEconomy, OEdipus, OEconomical, &c. lease, écanimi, edípas, écanamical, &c.* Tambem he *o* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Fcc, Toc, &c. lease, fo, to, &c.* excepto em *Shoe*, que he *u* *Portuguez*, *lease, xu.*

*ue*, he *u* *Portuguez*, Ex. *accrue, sue, avenue, pursue, Residue, &c. lease. écru, fu, evinu, parfu, residu, &c.* depois de *g* serve para fazelo forte, e a largar a Vogal que vay a diante e emtaõ he *a* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Catalogue, Dialogue, Epilogue, Fatigue, League, Synagogue, prorogue, Rogue, Tongue, &c. lease, Ketelag, Daíelag, &c.*

*ui*, Tem 3 Sons asaber.

1º. Como *ai* *Portuguez*, Ex. *beguile, guide, disguise, quite, lease, bígáil, gáid, disgáis, quáit, &c.*

2º. Como *i*, Ex. *Guildford, build, rebuild, &c. lease, Guíldford, bild, rébild, &c.*

3º. Como *u*, Ex. *bruise, recruit, Fruit, Brute, &c. lease, brús, rícrut, Frut, &c.* Tambem quando 3 Vogais vem juntas em huã palavra se chama hum Triphthongo, Ex. *Beauty, lieu, adieu, lease, bíeti, líu, edíu.*

*Das Consoantes em Geral.*

Consoante he huã Letra, a qual não pode ter Son, sem que antes, ou depois se lhe junte huã Vogal, Ex. *m* em, *d* de. A *Lingua Inglesa* them 21, viz.

*b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, w, x, y, z.*

B. não se pronuncia antes de *m*, Ex. *Comb, Lamb, dumb, &c. lease*, có*m*, le*m*, da*m*, &c. Tambem antes de *t*, Ex. *Doubt, Debt, Debtor, &c. lease*, dá*ut*, de*t*, dé*tar*, &c.

C. Tem dois Sons, hum forte e duro, como em *Cat, cast, &c. lease*, Ke*t*. Ke*st*, &c. e outro brando como em *City, Cell, &c. lease*, Cí*ti*, Cé*l*, &c. Soa sempre duro antes de, *a, o, l, r*, Ex. ca*n*, Co*rd*, Cra*b*, clea*n*, &c. lease, Ke*n*, Ca*rd*, Cre*b*, cli*n*, &c. Soa brando antes de *e, i, y*, Ex. ce*ase*, ce*ment*, Ci*ty*, Cy*pher*, &c. lease, cí*s*, cí*ment*, Ci*ti*, Saí*far*, &c. E antes de hum Apostrophe (') denota a ausencia de *e* Ex. plac'*d*, em lugar, de plac*ed*, lea*se*, plé*s*ed. Quando Soa duro antes de, *e, i, n*, sempre se escreve com *k*, Ex. kee*p*, ki*ll*, kna*ck*, kno*w*, &c. lease, ki*p*, ki*l*, né*ck*, no, &c.

Ch, em palavras meramente *Inglezas* tem o Son forte como em *Portuguez*, Ex. Chur*ch*, rich, su*ch*, chea*p*, &c. lease, Cha*rché*, riché, fá*ché*, chi*p*, &c. porem na quellas que se dirivão do *Frances* se pronunciaõ brandamente como se focem escritas com *x* *Portugues*, Ex. Cheva*lier*, Cha*ise*, Cha*mpain*, Ca*puchin*, Ma*chine*, &c. lease, Xé*veliar*, Xé*s*, Xe*m*, pé*n*, Quepuxi*n*, Mexi*n*, &c. nos Nomes dirivados dos *hebreos*, ou dos *Gregos* Soa como *K*, Ex. Ach*am*, Baroda*ch*, Antio*ch*, Chri*stian*, Monar*ch*, Chro*nicle*, lea*se*, é*quam*, Berode*k*, Enti*ak*, Chri*stian*, Má*nark*, Crá*niquil*, &c.

D.

D. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez* nas Palavras em que compoem Syllaba, porein não se pronuncia nas Palavras seguintes, servindo so para cargar na Syllaba, Ex. *Badge, Hedge, Bridge, Lodge, Judge, &c. lease, bége, hége, brígi, láje, jáge, &c.*

F. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*.

G. Tem dois Sons, hum duro gutural, Ex. *Game, Gold, Gum, &c. lease, guem, guld, gam, &c.* e outro brando, Ex. *gentle, danger, Ginger, lease, jéntil, dénjar, jíngar, &c.*

Soa sempre duro antes de *a, o, u, l, r*, e no fim das Palavras, excepto se for molificado por *d*, ou *e*, Ex. *Bag, Badge, Cag, Cage, Log, lodge, Dog, dodge, bug, buge, &c. lease, beg, bége, queg, quéje, lag, láge, dag, dáge, hag, iúje, &c.*

Soa communmente brando antes de *e, i, y*, Ex. *Gender, gentle, Ginger, Gipsy, &c. lease, jéndar, jéntil, jínjar, jípsi, &c.* excepto que seja endurecido por *b* ou *u*, Ex. *guide, guile, guesst, ghests, Ghest, &c. lease, gaíd, gáil, guést, gués, góft, &c.*

Nas Palavras seguintes retem, o seu natural duro Son antes de *e*, Ex. *altogether, Anger, beget, Tínger, forget, Gese, get, Hunger, linger, &c. lease, álto-guethar, éngar, bíguít, fíngar, fárgit, guís, guit, hángar, língar, &c.* e em todas as Palavras derivadas de *long, big, strong, beg, sing, bring, &c.*

Da mesma forte Soa duro antes de *i* nas Palavras seguintes, Ex. *begin, forgive, giddy, Gift, Girt, Girl, Gizzard, &c. lease bíguin, fárguiv, guídi, guíft, gárt, guél, guizard, &c.* Tambem quando dois *gg*, vem juntos, ambos tem o Son duro, ainda que, *e, i, y*, se sigão depois delles, Ex. *Gagg, Dagger, &c. lease, Guégue, Dégar, &c.*

As Letras que a companhia *g*, na mesma Syllaba saõ *h, l, n, r*, e fazem o Son de *g* duro, Ex. *Ghest, Ghost, glad, great, Ground, lease, gués, goft, gled, grét, gráund, &c.*

G. Antes de *n* no fim das Palavras he mudo, e so serve para fazer longa a Vogal que fica atras, Ex. *Sign, Désign, Ensign, consign, &c. lease, fáin, difáin, infáin, confáin, &c.*

H. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez* apertando mais a respiração.

J. Não rem variedade en seu Son soando sempre como *g* brando, Ex. *just, Joint, Joindre, &c. lease, jast, jáint, jáintar, &c.*

K. Se pronuncia como *Q* *Portuguez*.

L. Não se pronuncia antes de *f, k*, Ex. *Chalk, Calf, half, Walk, lease, chák, keí, éf, uak, &c.* tão pouco se pronuncia em, *could, should, would, lease, cud, xúd, úd, &c.*

M. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*.

N. Nunca se pronuncia depois de *n*, Ex. *Autumn, áamn, lease, átam, dém, &c.*

P. Não se pronuncia em *Psaln, tempt, Receipt, lease, Sâm, témt, rícit, &c.*

Ph. ou principie ou termine a Syllaba, sempre Soa como *f*, Ex. *Physic, Physician, Philosopher, lease, Fízik, Fízixien, Fílazitar*; excepto em *Pbthifick, Pbthifical, aonde, Pb*, são mudos e não soão, *lease, thízik, thízical, &c.*

Q. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *Quail, quick, Quality, lease, quéil, quíc, quáliti, &c.*

R. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *run, rest, Rain, lease, ián, rest, réin, &c.*

S. Entre duas Vogais se pronuncia como *z*, Ex. *Desire, desrise, praise, dispraise, &c. lease, dízaíar, dípaíz, préiz, dispréiz, &c.* mas no principio das Palavras se pronuncia como *nó Latin es*, e *nó* fim mesmo como *s* *Portuguez*.

T. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*.

Th. Tem difficultoza pronuncia a melhor instrução he aquella da Vóz humana; sem embargo a



sua pronuncia he ficioza metendo a Lingua entre os dentes, Ex. *that, thou, thence, this, they, thine, &c. lease, thét, thaú, théns, this, thé, tháin, &c.*

V. Sempre sepoem antes, das Vogais, e nunca depois dellas, sem se lhe seguir e mudo, Ex. *vain, Voice, vulgar, have, Lease, Love, sav'd, lov'd*, em lugar de *saved, loved, lease*, véin váiz, válgar, év lív, lav, féved, láved, quéro, &c.

Segue-se depois das Consoantes *lr* Ex. *Calves, Carve, &c. lease* quélvs, quérv, &c.

W. Tem dous Sons a saber, de Consoante e de Vogal; antes de Vogal; he consoante, Ex. *Want, went, Winter, lease, úant, úent, úintar*, pore m depois de *a, e, o*, he Vogal, Ex. *Awl, crawl, Dew, few, bow, now, lease, ál, crál, diú, fiú, áu, náu, &c.* mas todas as vezes que he pronunciada no principio das Palavras ou Syllabas, sempre tem o Son de *u*, Vogal em *Portuguez*, Ex. *want, went, was, &c. lease, úant, úent, úas, &c.*

X. Sempre Soa como *es, ou, ks*, nunca começa palavras commuas e fô da principio a alguns nomes proprios, sempre acaba, mas nunca começa Syllaba; algumas vezes tem *c* despois, mas nunca *s*, Ex. *Ax, vex, fix, Oz, Box, Flux, Example, exempt, express, &c. lease, éks, veks, fiks, ács, báks* fâcs ékiempil, eksempit, ékspres, &c.

Z. Não tem alteraçãõ no seu, Son, pode estar antes ou depois de qual quer Vogal, mas nunca pode estar immediatamente antes, ou depois de Consoante na mesma Syllaba.

*Para amelhor execuçaó das referidas Regras, daremos aqui ao Leitor huma pequena Carta em Inglez, escrita pello estilo Portuguez de Soletrear.*

Inglez.

*Since mine of the 16th Instant I have yours of the 14th ditto, and refer myself to what I have already written in answer to your said Letter. This serves at present to desire you to furnish and pay to Mr. J. M. to the Value of two hundred Pounds, at one or more Times, according as he shall desire it from you, taking his Bill or Bills of Exchange for what you shall so furnish him with, and put it to my Account, and this my Letter of Credit shall be your sufficient Warrant for so doing.*

O mesmo Inglez por estilo Portuguez.

*Sênse máin av thi 16 instant Ai ev iúars av thi 14 ditto, end rifár máifelf tu úat Ai ev alrédy rúin in énsar tu iúar séid Létar. This sárvés et prézent tu dizáir iú tu fárnix end péy tu Místar J. M. tu thi vélhu av tu hándad páunds et uán ar môr Táims eccarding es hi xal dizáiar it fram iú, teking his Bill ar Bills av Exchéngé far úat iú xal fo fárnix him úich end pát it to mái eccáunt, end this mái Létar av Credit xal be iúar fáffi-xíent Uárant far so doing.*

*Regras, para se saber quando se hade Escrever com Letra grande, ou pequena.*

As Letras grandes se não devem de uzar no meyo ou fim de qual quer Palavra, sem que toda ella sege compoſta dellas, mas sempre no principio; e ainda a hi sômente nestes 6 Caſos, aſaber. 1. Em o Principio de qual quer Eſcritura. 2. Depois de Cada Periodo, ou Ponto final, quando começa

huã nova Sentença. 3. Em o Principio de cada regra na Poezia, e qual qu-r Verso na Bibilia. 4. Em Nomes Proprios de todos os Generos, tanto de Pessoas, Lugares, ou Couzas, &c. 5. Em Termos de Artes, e Nomes de dignidades, Officiaes, ou outra qual quer Palavra de especial Veneraçã em huã Sentença; ou a quem se da em particular todo o devido Respeito. Tambem todos os Nomes Substantivos podem começar com Letra grande; e se podem conhecer pellos signaes, *a*, *an*, *ou*, *the*, antes delles; *Ex, a Man*, hum Homem; *a Mouse*, hum Rato; *an Ox*, hum Boy; *an Ass*, huma Burra; *the City*, a Cidade, *the River*, a Ribeira, &c. E ultimamente o pronome Pessoal *I*, *eu*, se hade sempre Escrever com Capital ou Letra grande. As pequenas se uzaõ em qual quer lugar que seja.

*Das Paradas, ou Pontos, e Virgolas.*

As Paradas servem para mostrar que distancia de Tempo se deve observar entre Palavra e Palavra quando se lê. E são taõ absolutamente necessarias para a melhor Intelligencia do que Escrevemos, e lemos, que sem ellas, todas as Escrituras seriaõ muy confuzas, sujeitas a contrarias interpetaçoes. São 4 a saber.

Comma, Semicólon, Cólon, e Período, ou Ponto final

Caba huma destas tem alguma a finidade como o Compasso da Muzica: Porque, o Comma, para a Voz do Lector entre mentes q'elle possa com deliberação contar hum. O Semicólon, dous. O Colon, tres; e o Período, ou Ponto final, Quatro.

Comma (,) he huã Virgola ao pe de huma Palavra.

Semicólon (;) Ponto, e Virgola,

Colon (:) dous Pontos.

Periodo

Periodo ( . ) hum Ponto fô ao Pe de huã Palavra

Porem em se preguntando huã Quêstaõ, se põem hum risco em riba do Periodo, e se chama Interrogação; assim ( ? )

Se de repente se expressa alguã couza de admiração, emtaõ se poem hum risco dereito em riba do Periodo, e se chama nota de Admiração; assim ( ! )

Se huma Sentença estiver incluzã com outra, da qual não he nem têm Parte, em taõ se poem dous meynos Circulos, e se chamaõ Entre Parenthesis, assim ( ) e, quando se le, estes fazem q' o Ton da Voz seje mais baixo, como huma couza que vem por acazo interrompendo a Coherencia e concordia do Periodo, e tirandolhe a força da intelligencia que de outro modo podera ter. Cada huã Parte delle tem o mesmo Tempo de diliberação como huã Virgola.

Estas que seguem são as Marcas, ou Charactars que mais se uzaõ quando se escreve.

O, Accento ( ´ ) em estando em cima de huã Vogal, mostra, que o Ton, ou força da Voz na pronunciação está sobre a quella Syllaba.

Apostrofa ( ' ) he huã Virgolã que se poem em cima das Letras, e denota alguma Letra, ou Letras que se deixaraõ de Escrever em alguã Palavra para apressar a Pronunciação, Ex. *I'll, I will*; eu quero. *Would'st, wouldest*; queres tu. *Shan't shall not*; não eyde. *Ne'er, never*, nunca.

Afterism ( \* ) he huma Estrela que serve de guia para alguã Remarca na Margem, ou ao Pe da Folha, ou Pagima.

Muytas dellas junctas significaõ que falta alguã couza na quella Passagem, ou relação do Author a qual tem defeito ou immodestia.

Breve, ( ° ) he hum risco torto sobre huã Vogal.



Caret, ( ^ ) se põem debaixo da Regra, e denota, que alguma Letra, Palavra, ou Sentença, ficou de fora por erro, e se deve incluir exactamente aonde aponta.

Circumflex ( ˇ ) he do mesmo talho como o Caret, mas sempre se põem encima de alguma Vogal em huã Palavra, e demostra ser hua Syllaba longa, Ex. *Euphrâtes*.

Diæresis ( ¨ ) dous Pontos em cima de 2 Vogais em huã Palavra, que de outro modo fariaõ hum Diphthongo, e as reparte em duas diversas Syllabas.

Hyphen, ( - ) he hum risco derecho, o qual em estando no fim de huã Regra, denota, que as Syllabas de huã Palavra estão apartadas, e q̃. o resto della está no Principio da outra Regra.

Tambem se uza para ajuntar, ou Compor, de duas Palavras hua; Ex. *ale-bouse*, Caza, ou Taverna de Cerveja; *Inn keeper*, Estalajadeiro, ou Estalajadeira.

Estando por cima de huã Vogal, emtaõ não se chama propriamente Hyphen, mas sim huã Pilica, e de nota haverse omitido hum *m*, ou *n*. quando se escreveo, Ex. *nothing is more comendable than fair Writing*; *nothing is more commendable than fair Writing*.

Não ha couza q̃. mereça mais louvor q̃. huã bota Letra.

Index, ( [ ) he Dedo dianteiro a pontando, e significa ser aquella Passagem ou relação notavel para aqual está pontando.

Obelisk, † se uza tambem como o Asterism \*, e he para que o Leitor se refira a Margem. Em Dictionarios communmente, denota ser a Palavra Antigua, e de pouco uzo.

Par graph, ( ¶ ) Paragrafo, ou Divizaõ contem varias Sentenças debaixo de hum Artigo, ou Discurso.

Parenthesis, [ ] ou Brackets, incluem Palavras, ou Sentenças do mesmo valor ou Significação com aquellas a quem se ajunctaõ, as quaes se podem uzar em seu lugar.

Quotation, ( " ) ou duas Virgolas a o reves, em o Principio de huã Regra, mostraõ a Passagem, ou Relação do Author que está Quotada, ou alegada em suas proprias Palavras.

Section, ( § ) ou divizaõ, se uza em o repartimento de hum Capitulo, ou Livro, em menos Partes, ou Porçoens.

*Profodia, ou Accento das Palavras.*

As Monosyllabas que terminaõ cum huã Consoante saõ breves, Ex. *Bar, bit, Car, fat, Fin, Hat, mad, Shin, win, &c. lease, bér, bit, quer, fét Fín hét, méd, Xín, úin, &c.*

Aquelles que terminaõ com a Vogal e, Saõ longas, Ex. *bare, bite, care, fare, fine, hate, made, shine, Wine, lease, bér, baít, quér, fér, fáin, ét medé, Xáin, úain, &c.*

As he duas Syllabas, tem o Accento ou na primeira, Ex. *ángel, Bánquet, cértain, Dánger, éarly, férvent, Gárment, húman, Jewel, Kíngdom, Lícence, Mémber, Náture, óintment, párdon, quárrel, Ráiment, Sérmon, Témple, wánton, &c.* ou na ultima, Ex. *Abhór, begán, commánd, descénd, encámp, fomént, genteél, implóre, lámént, matúre, neglèet, obscúre, permít, refórm, sincére, transfórm, vouchsáse.*

As de 3 Syllabas tem o Accento na primeira, Ex. *árgument, Báttlement, cáptivate, Décency, Excellence, Férwency, Gárrison, Hármoney, íntimate, Kíns-woman, Lénity, mágnify, négligent.*

Na Syllaba do meyo, Ex. *Advénture, cobérent, detérmine, encóunter, forbídden, immórtal, incéntive, inbérit, matérnal, noélérnal, obsérvance, presump-*

*tice*, ou na ultima, Ex. *Apprehend*, *circumvent*, *disappoint*, *entertain*, *importune*, *intercept*, *exchange*, *persevere*, *reconcile*, *thereupon*.

As de 4 Syllabas tem o Accento vario, por que hoás vezes o tem na primeira, Ex. *amiable*, *comfortable*, *diligently*, *effacy*, *fórmidable* *glóriously*, *innocency*, *mércenary*, *náturally*, *óratory*, *pátrimony*, *sánctuary*; outras vezes na segunda, Ex. *abundantly*, *bebáviour*, *commúnicate*, *determinate*, outras vezes na terceira, Ex. *Apprehénsion*, *Arbitrátor*, *comprehénsive*, *disinbérít*, *bewsoóver*, *ornaméntal*; outra vezes na quarta, Ex. *Legerdemáin*, *nevertheless*, &c.

As de 5 Syllabas sempre tem o Accento ou na segunda, Ex. *abóminable*, *commúnicable*, *extravagantly*, *immédiately*, *notóriously*, *originally*, *perpetually*, *unnécessary*; ou nas do meyo, Ex. *Alacátion*, *Admonítion*, *Benedíctiön*, *Ceremoníal*, &c.

As de 6 Syllabas tem quasi sempre o Accento na quarta, Ex. *Abominátion*, *Commemorátion*, *Disadvantágious*, *Ecclesiástical*, *Familiárity*, *Irregularity*, *Mathematícian*, *Qualificátion*. &c.

### *Das partes da Oraçam.*

As partes da Oraçaõ são oyto, a saber Nome, Pronome, Verbo, Participio, Advérbio, Preposição, Conjuncçaõ, Interjeiçao.

#### *Nome.*

Os Nomes são as Vozes, ou palavras, q' significão alguma Couza, q' seve, ouve, ou palpa; e se dividem, em duas Clases; a Saber em substantivos, e em adjectivos.

Os Substantivos significão a mesma e Sencia, e entidade da Couza; Como, *Earth*, terra; *Stone*,  
pedra;

pedra; e podem estar na oração por *Sy* so sem ajuda de adjectivo.

Os adjectivos são Aquelles, q' significão aqualidade, ou Accidente da couza, Como, *good*, bom; *white*, branco; anaó podem estar na oração, sem ajuda de Substantivo, claro, ou es condido;

Os Nomes Substantivos se dividem em proprios, e apellativos.

O nome proprio he aquelle, q' Significa as Couzas proprias, e Certas, Como, *Romulus*, Romulo; *Rome*, Roma.

O nome appellativo he aquelle, q' Sgnifica as Couzas Commuas, e incertas, Como, *King*, Rey; *Town*, Lugar.

### *Genero.*

Todo o nome Substantivo, ou he de Genero Masculino, ou Feminino, ou Commum, ou Neutro.

Os nomes de Anjos, Homens, e animais Machos são do Genero Masculino.

Os nomes defemeas tanto de pessôas, Como de Animais são do Genero feminino.

Os nomes q' Significão hum, e outro Sexo São do Genero Commum, Como, *Cousin*, q' Significa, primo, ou prima; *Neighbour*, q' significa, vizinho, ou vizinha; *Servant*, Criado, ou Criada; *Thief*, Ladrao, ou Ladra.

Os nomes, em os quais se não pode discernir, nem conhecer o sexo, Como são, *the creeping Things*, As Couzas Reptis, q' Andão de Rasto, *the Fishes*, os peixos, são do Genero neutro.

### *Da Derivaçam dos Nomes.*

O Nome, ou he permetivo, ou derivativo; o permutivo he aquelle, q' nao se deriva de outro,  
I . Como,



Como, *Love*, Amor; e derivativo he aquelle, q' se deriva de permutivo, Como, *Lover*, Amante, q' se deriva de *Love*.

A Lingua Inglesa Contem emsi grande variedade de outras Linguas; por Cujá Razaó muyta parte de seus nomes tem sua derivação Nellas; o Curiozo, q' a quizer Saber, o podera conseguir recorrendo a *Bailey*, e a outros Dictionarios, q' apenés deste Volume, não permite mayor extensão.

Há Certos Substantivos materiais, a os quais ajuntandolhe huã destas Syllabas, er, yer, ou ster, formão outros substantivos, q' significão, o agente empregada nas Cōuzas. Ex.

<i>Am Hat</i> , hum Chapeo.	<i>An Hatter</i> , Chapeleiro.
<i>Pot</i> , Panella.	<i>Porter</i> , o Leyro.
<i>Fish</i> , Peyxe.	<i>Fisher</i> , Pescador.
<i>Glove</i> , Luva.	<i>Glover</i> , Luveyro.
<i>Garden</i> , Jardim.	<i>Gardiner</i> , Jardineyro.
<i>Gun</i> , Canhão.	<i>Gunner</i> , Canhoneyro.
<i>Law</i> , Ley.	<i>Lawyer</i> , Jurista.
<i>Game</i> , Jogo.	<i>Gamester</i> , Jogador.
<i>Seam</i> , Cultura.	<i>Seamster</i> , Cultureyra.

Tambem ha certos Substantivos pessoais, dos quais se formão outros Substantivos de dignidade, ajuntandolhe esta Syllaba, *Ship*. Ex.

<i>Apostle</i> , Apostolo.	<i>Apostleship</i> , Apostolado.
<i>Admiral</i> , Almirante.	<i>Admiralship</i> , Almirantafgo.
<i>Master</i> , Mestre.	<i>Mastership</i> , Magisterio.
<i>Lord</i> , Senhor.	<i>Lordship</i> , Senhoria.

Da mesma forte a Syllaba, *Hood*, junta aos Substantivos tem a mesma força. Ex.

<i>Father</i> , Pay.	<i>Fatherhood</i> , Parternidade
<i>Child</i> , Criança.	<i>Childhood</i> , Mininice.
<i>Brother</i> , Irmão.	<i>Brotherhood</i> , Irmandade,
	<i>Man</i>

<i>Man</i> , Homem.	<i>Manhood</i> , Virilidade.
<i>False</i> , Falso.	<i>Falshood</i> , Falsidade.
<i>Priest</i> , Sacerdote.	<i>Priesthood</i> , Sacerdocio.

Tambem da mayor Parte dos Adjectivos terminados em, *full*, *less*, *ous*, *y*, *ish*, se formão Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *ness*. Ex.

<i>Powerful</i> , poderoso.	<i>Powerfulness</i> , Poder.
<i>Willful</i> , opinativo.	<i>Willfulness</i> , Opinião.
<i>Careless</i> , sem cuydado.	<i>Carelessness</i> , Descuydo.
<i>Godly</i> , piadozo.	<i>Godliness</i> , Piedade.
<i>Crafty</i> , engenhozo.	<i>Craftiness</i> , Engenho.
<i>Foolish</i> , loco.	<i>Foolishness</i> , Locura.
<i>Righteous</i> , justo.	<i>Righteousness</i> , Justidade.
<i>Worthy</i> , digno.	<i>Worthiness</i> , Eltimação.
<i>Devilish</i> , diabolico.	<i>Devilishness</i> , Diabrura.
<i>Brutish</i> , brutal.	<i>Brutishness</i> , Brutualidade

Tambem há muytos Substantivos derivados do Latin, terminados variamente, porque hums terminão em, *ion*; derivados dos Latinos Acabados em, *is*, como, *Opinion*, Opinião, de *Opinio*; *Religion*, Religião, de *Religio*; *Question*, Pergunta, de *Questio*. Outros terminão em, *our*, derivados dos Latinos em, *or*, como, *Labour*, trabalho, de *Labor*, *Honour*, Honra, de *Honor*; *Favour*, Favor, de *Favor*; outros terminão em, *ty*, e se derivão dos Latinos em, *tas*, como, *Piety*, Piedade, de *Pietas*; *Charity*, Caridade, de *Charitas*; *Liberality*, Liberalidade, de *Liberalitas* *Purity*, Puridade, de *Puritas*; e outros muytos.

### *Dos Numeros dos Nomes.*

Os Nomes tem Numero singular, e Numero plural; o singular he quando se fala de hum; como, *a King*, hum Rey; o plural, quando se fala de muytos, como, *Men*, Homens; *Kings*, Rey.

O numero plural se forma ordinariamente por ajuntamento de hum, s, ao singular. Ex.

<i>The King,</i> o Rey.	<i>The Queen,</i> a Rainha.
<i>The kings,</i> os Reys.	<i>The Queens,</i> as Rainhas.
<i>The Lord,</i> o Senhor.	<i>Book,</i> Livro.
<i>The Lords,</i> os Senhores.	<i>Books,</i> Livros.
<i>My Brother,</i>	Meu, Irmão.
<i>My Brothers,</i>	Meus, Irmãos.
<i>My Horse,</i>	Meu Cavallo.
<i>My Horses,</i>	Meus Cavallos.
<i>My House,</i>	Minha Caza.
<i>My Houses,</i>	Minhas Cazes.
<i>Tree,</i>	Arvore.
<i>Trees,</i>	Arvores.

*Tres Excepções tem esta regra.*

A primeyra he nos nomes, q' terminaõ o singular em, *ch, dg, se, sb, ss, s,* q' nestes se forma o plural ajuntando-lhe, *es, ex.*

<i>Church,</i>	<i>Churches,</i>	Igrejas.
<i>Match,</i>	<i>Matches,</i>	Mechas.
<i>Hedge,</i>	<i>Hedges,</i>	Cercos.
<i>Horse,</i>	<i>Horses,</i>	Cavallos.
<i>Fish,</i>	<i>Fishes,</i>	Peyxes.
<i>Cross,</i>	<i>Cresses,</i>	Cruzes.
<i>Witness,</i>	<i>Witnesses,</i>	Testemunhas.
<i>Box,</i>	<i>Boxes,</i>	Caixas.

A segunda he nos nomes acabados em, *f,* ou *fe,* q' estes formaõ o plural, mudando, *o, f,* ou *fe,* em, *es.* Ex.

<i>Self</i>	<i>selves,</i>	mesmos.
<i>Knife,</i>	<i>Knives,</i>	Facas.
<i>Life,</i>	<i>Lives,</i>	Vidas.
<i>Calve,</i>	<i>Calves,</i>	Vitellas.
<i>Staff,</i>	<i>Staves,</i>	Bordões, Baculos.
<i>Thief,</i>	<i>Thieves,</i>	Ladrões.
<i>Wife,</i>	<i>Wives,</i>	Mulheres cazadas.
<i>Leaf,</i>	<i>Leaves,</i>	Pains.

Aterceyra he nos irregulares seguintes.

<i>Man,</i>	<i>Men,</i>	Homens.
<i>Woman,</i>	<i>Women,</i>	Mulheres.
<i>Child,</i>	<i>Children,</i>	Rapazes, crianças.
<i>Ox,</i>	<i>Oxen,</i>	Boys.
<i>Mouse,</i>	<i>Mice,</i>	Ratos.
<i>Louse,</i>	<i>Lice,</i>	Piolhos.
<i>Die,</i>	<i>Dice,</i>	Dados.
<i>Foot,</i>	<i>Feet,</i>	Pes.
<i>Goose,</i>	<i>Geese,</i>	Gansos.
<i>Penny,</i>	<i>Pence,</i>	Peniques.
<i>Sow,</i>	<i>Swine,</i>	Porcos.
<i>Tooth,</i>	<i>Teeth,</i>	Dentes.

*Notese*, q' ha Substantivos, q' não tem plural como, *Gold*, Ouro; *Silver*, Prata; *Copper*, Cobre; *Lead*, Chumbo, &c.

### *Das Declinações dos Nomes.*

Os nomes em Inglez, se declinaõ por meyo de Artigos, e não por Mudança de terminaçois, como os Latinos e tem seis Cazos; a saber, Nominativo, Genitivo, Dativo, Acuzativo, Vocativo, Abelativo.

Os artigos são *the*, *of*, *to*, *the*, *o*, *from*; o Artigo, *the*, corresponde ao artigo, o, a, os, as do Portuguez, e se aplica ao Nominativo, e Acuzativo; o Artigo *of*, corresponde ao Artigo, de, da, des, das, e serve para o Genitivo; o Artigo, *to*, corresponde, ao Artigo, a, ao, para o, e serve, para o Dativo; o Artigo, *o*, he o mesmo q' em Portuguez, e se aplica ao Vocativo; o Artigo, *from*, corresponde ao Artigo, de, do Portuguez, e serve para o Abelativo.

*Notese* q' supposto, *of*, e *from*, signifiquem, de, em Portuguez; com tudo, no Inglez se uza de, *of*, quando dois nomes substantivos, pertencentes a Couzas diversas, se encontraõ na oração; Como, *the Riches of England are great*, As Riquezas de Inglaterra são Grandes.

Ede,



Ede, *from* se uza quando aquestaõ he feita, pella pergunta, unde, (de donde) dos Latinos; como, *from whence come you?* de donde vens? *I come from London*; eu veno de *Londres*; tudo o sobredito ficará manifesto, á vista da declinaçaõ que he na forma seguinte.

*Singular.*

N. *the King*, o Rey.  
 G. *of the King*, do Rey.  
 D. *to the King*, ao Rey.  
 Ac. *the King*, o Rey.  
 V. o King, o' Rey.  
 A. *from the King*, do Rey.

Tambem se pode declinar por meyo dessa particula, *a*, *q*, em *Portuguez*, significa hum;

*Singular.*

N. *a King*, hum Rey.  
 G. *of a King*, de hum Rey.  
 D. *to a King*, á hum Rey.  
 Ac. *a King*, hum Rey.  
 V. *Caret*.  
 A. *from a King*, de hum Rey.

Advertindo q' se o nome Começa por hua vogal, he necessario uzár de *an*, em Lugar de, *a*. Ex.

N. *an Angel*, hum Anjo.  
 G. *of an Angel*, de hum Anjo.  
 D. *to an Angel*, a hum Anjo.  
 Ac. *an Angel*, hum Anjo.  
 A. *from an Angel*, de hum Anjo.

Para declinar o plural, não he necessario mais, q' juntar hum, *s*, ao singula, observando a mesma ordem.

*Notese* q' os Artigos tanto servem par o masculino como para o feminino, e tanto, para o singular, como para o plural. Ex.

<i>A Man, and a Woman,</i>	Hum Homem, e huá mulher.
<i>A Brother, and a Sister,</i>	Hum Irmaõ, e huá Irma.
<i>The Father, and the Mother,</i>	O Pay, e a May.
<i>The Son, and the Daughter,</i>	O Filho, e a Filha.
<i>The Children,</i>	As Crianças.
<i>The Sun,</i>	O Sol.
<i>The Moon,</i>	A Lua.
<i>The Stars,</i>	As Estrellas

### *Dos Adjectivos.*

Os Nomes Adjectivos tem só huã Forma, como, *bitter*, amargo; *sour*, azedo; *sharp*, agudo; *even*, igual; *crafty*, astuto; *greedy*, sofrego; *warlike*, guerreiro, billicozo; *large*, cumprido; *fit*, capas, proporcionado; *narrow*, estreito.

No *Inglez* servem para todo o genero, e para todo o numero; idest, que o mesmo Adjectivo serve com o Substantivo; seja este de qualquer genero, que for; esteja no, singular, ou no plural, Ex.

<i>Good Boy,</i>	Bom Rapaz.
<i>Good Boys,</i>	Bons Rapazes.
<i>Good Girl,</i>	Boa Rapariga,
<i>Good Girls,</i>	Boas Raparigas.
<i>Wise Man,</i>	Sabio Homem.
<i>Wise Men,</i>	Sabios Homems.
<i>Wise Woman,</i>	Sabia Mulher.
<i>Wise Women,</i>	Sabias Mulheres.

*Do Modo, como muytos Adjectivos se formam.*

Muytos Adjectivos se formaõ de Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *full*, que importa huma Quantidade, da Qualidade, que o Substantivo significa, Ex.

<i>Joy</i> , Alegria,	<i>joyful</i> , alegre.
<i>Fruit</i> , Fruta,	<i>fruitful</i> , frutifero.
<i>Youth</i> , Mocidade,	<i>youthful</i> , juvenil.
<i>Care</i> , Cuydado,	<i>careful</i> , cuydadozo.
<i>Use</i> , Uzo,	<i>useful</i> , uzual.
<i>Deceit</i> , Dolo,	<i>deceitful</i> , dolozo.
<i>Disdain</i> , Desdém,	<i>disdainful</i> , desdenhozo.
<i>Grace</i> , Graça,	<i>graceful</i> , gracioso.
<i>Faith</i> , Fé,	<i>faithful</i> , fiel.
<i>Forget</i> , Esquécimento,	<i>forgetful</i> , esquecido.
<i>Beauty</i> , Fermozura,	<i>beautiful</i> , formosa.
<i>Bounty</i> , Benignidade,	<i>bountiful</i> , benigno.
<i>Cheer</i> , Alegria,	<i>cheerful</i> , alegre.
<i>Skill</i> , Pericia,	<i>skillful</i> , perito.
<i>Power</i> , Poder,	<i>powerful</i> , poderoso.
<i>Delight</i> , Delicia,	<i>delightful</i> , delicioso.
<i>Disrust</i> , Desconfiança,	<i>disrustful</i> , desconfiado.
<i>Dread</i> , Medo,	<i>dreadful</i> , medroso.
<i>Will</i> , Vontade,	<i>wilful</i> , voluntario.
<i>Hurt</i> , Damno,	<i>hurtful</i> , danoso.
<i>Pain</i> , Dor,	<i>painful</i> , doloroso.
<i>Watch</i> , Vigia,	<i>watchful</i> , vigilante.
<i>Plenty</i> , Abundancia,	<i>plentiful</i> , abundante.

Outros se formaõ de Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *less*, que importa huma privação daquelle, que o Substantivo significa. Ex.

<i>Beard</i> , Barba.	<i>beardless</i> , desbarbado.
<i>Blame</i> , Culpa.	<i>blameless</i> , sem culpa.

*Fa.*

<i>Father, Pay,</i>	<i>fatherless, orphaõ.</i>
<i>Friend, Amigo,</i>	<i>friendless, semamigo.</i>
<i>God, Deus,</i>	<i>godless, sem deus.</i>
<i>End, Fim,</i>	<i>endless, sem fim.</i>
<i>Name, Nome,</i>	<i>nameless, sem nome.</i>
<i>Question, Questão,</i>	<i>questionless, sem questão.</i>
<i>Sense, Sentido,</i>	<i>senseless, sem sentido.</i>

Outros se formaõ, ajuntandolhe hum, *ous*, Ex.

<i>Danger, Perigo,</i>	<i>dangerous, perigozo.</i>
<i>Courage, Animo,</i>	<i>courageous, animozo.</i>
<i>Malice, Malicia,</i>	<i>malicious, maliciozo.</i>
<i>Harmony, Armonia,</i>	<i>harmonious, armoniozo.</i>
<i>Valour, Valor,</i>	<i>valourous, valerozo.</i>
<i>Zeal, Zello,</i>	<i>zealous, zellozo.</i>
<i>Monster, Monstro,</i>	<i>monstrous, monstruozo.</i>
<i>Outrage, Contumelia,</i>	<i>outrageous, contumeliozo.</i>
<i>Marvel, Maravilha,</i>	<i>marvellous, maravilhozo.</i>
<i>Rigour, Rigor,</i>	<i>rigorous, rigorozo.</i>
<i>Virtue, Virtude,</i>	<i>virtuous, virtuozo.</i>

Outros se formaõ ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *ly*, Ex.

<i>God, Deus,</i>	<i>godly, piadozo.</i>
<i>Brother, Irmão,</i>	<i>brotherly, irmandade.</i>
<i>Earth, Terra,</i>	<i>earthly, terrestre.</i>
<i>Heaven, Ceo,</i>	<i>heavenly, celeste.</i>
<i>Love, Amor,</i>	<i>lovely, amavel.</i>
<i>Order, Ordem,</i>	<i>orderly, ordenado.</i>

Outros se formaõ ajuntandolhe hum, *y*, Ex.

<i>Blood, Sangue,</i>	<i>bloody, fanguinho.</i>
<i>Dirt, Lama,</i>	<i>dirty, lamacento.</i>
<i>Guilt, Culpa,</i>	<i>guilty, culpado.</i>
<i>Hair, Cabello,</i>	<i>hairy, cabelludo.</i>
<i>Hunger, Fome,</i>	<i>hungry, faminto.</i>
<i>Mud, Limo,</i>	<i>muddy, limozo.</i>
<i>Need, Necessidade,</i>	<i>needy, necessitado.</i>
<i>Sand, Areia,</i>	<i>sandy, areozo.</i>
<i>Stone, Pedra,</i>	<i>stony, pedragozo.</i>
<i>Wind, Vento,</i>	<i>windy, ventozo.</i>



*Outros se formam ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, ish Ex.*

<i>Brute, Bruto,</i>	<i>brutish, brutal.</i>
<i>Devil, Diabolo,</i>	<i>devilish, diabolico.</i>
<i>Fool, Estulto,</i>	<i>f. olish, fatuo.</i>
<i>Sot, Tonto, Bebado,</i>	<i>sottish, atontado, embe-</i> <i>bedado.</i>
<i>Water, Agua,</i>	<i>waterish, agüado.</i>
<i>Whore, Puta,</i>	<i>whorish, putanheiro.</i>
<i>Child, Criaça,</i>	<i>childish, pueril.</i>

*Porem se esta Syllaba, ish, sejunta a Adjeſtivos, di-*  
*minue sua significam. Ex.*

<i>White, branco,</i>	<i>whitish, branquinho.</i>
<i>Red, vermelho,</i>	<i>reddish, vermelhinho.</i>
<i>Black, negro,</i>	<i>blackish, negrinho.</i>
<i>Cold, frio,</i>	<i>coldish, friozinho.</i>
<i>Sweet, doce.</i>	<i>sweetish, docezinho.</i>

*Outros se formam ajuntandolhe a particula, able, Ex.*

<i>Season, Oportunidade,</i>	<i>seasonable, oportuno.</i>
<i>Blame, Culpa,</i>	<i>blameable, culpavel.</i>
<i>Answer, Reposta,</i>	<i>answerable, responsavel.</i>
<i>Change, Troco,</i>	<i>changeable, comutavel.</i>
<i>Cure, Cura,</i>	<i>curable, curavel.</i>
<i>Favour, Favor,</i>	<i>favourable, favoavel.</i>
<i>Marriage, Cazamento,</i>	<i>marriageable, cazadeira.</i>
<i>Note, Nota,</i>	<i>notable, notavel.</i>
<i>Pardon, perdão,</i>	<i>pardonable, perdoavel.</i>
<i>Profit, proveito,</i>	<i>profitable, proveytozo.</i>

*Outros se formam ajuntandolhes as Syllabus, cal, al,*  
*ical, Ex.*

<i>Rhetorick, Rhetorica,</i>	<i>Rhetorical, Rhetorico.</i>
<i>Angel, Anjo,</i>	<i>Angelical, Angelico.</i>

*Can-*

<i>Canon</i> , o Canon,	<i>canonical</i> , canonico.
<i>Logic</i> , Logica,	<i>logical</i> , logico.
<i>Musick</i> , Muzica,	<i>musical</i> , muzico.
<i>Allegorick</i> , Allegoria,	<i>allegorical</i> , allegorico.
<i>Accident</i> , Accidente,	<i>accidental</i> , accidental.
<i>History</i> , Historia,	<i>historical</i> , historico.
<i>Method</i> , Methodo,	<i>methodical</i> , methodico.
<i>Person</i> , Pessoa,	<i>personal</i> , pessoal.

*Dos Graos de Comparação.*

Em os Nomes Adjectivos, tem so Lugar a comparação; em aqual se admitem tres graos; a saber positivo, que significa a simples qualidade, ou quantidade da Couza; como *big*, grande; *white*, branco; comparativo, que e leva a couza a mais alto Lugar; como, *bigger*, mais grande; *whiter*, mais branco; e superlativo, que a exalta ao mais alto Lugar; como, *biggest*, o mais grande; *whitest*, o mais branco.

O Comparitivo formase do positivo, ajuntando lhe a Syllaba, *er*, regularmente; e o superlativo, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *est*, Ex.

*Low*, bayxo; *lower*, mais bayxo; *lowest*, o mais bayxo.

*Great*, grande; *greater*, e mayor; *greatest*, o mayor.

*High*, alto, *higher*, mais alto, *highest*, o mais alto.

Tambem se pode formar com as dicções, *more*, e *most*, a primeira para expressar o comparitivo, e segunda, o superlativo, o que communmente tem Lugar nos Adjectivos, que terminaõ, em, *ous*, Ex.

<i>Charles is ingenious,</i>	<i>Carlos</i> he engenhozo.
<i>William is more ingenious,</i>	<i>Guilherme</i> , he mais engenhozo.

## 276 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

*George is the most ingenious in the World,*      *George he o mais engenhozo em o mundo.*

*Glorious, gloriozo.*

*More glorious,*

*mais gloriozo.*

*The most glorious.*

*o mais gloriozo.*

*Jealous, zelozo.*

*More jealous,*

*mais zelozo.*

*The most jealous,*

*o mais zelozo.*

### *Das comparaçoens irregulares.*

*Good, better, the best, bom, melhor, o melhor.*

*Ill, bad, naught, maõ, worse, peyor, the worst,*  
*o mais peyor.*

*Much, muyto, more, mais, most, o mais.*

*Little, pouco, less, menos, the least, o minimo.*

### *Dos Pronomes.*

O Pronome he aquelle, que se poem em Lugar do nome; declinasse tambem por Cazos, tendo Numero singular, e plural.

Ha quatro especies de Pronomes; pessoais, possessivos, demonstrativos, e relativos.

Os pessoays saõ, *I, eu, thou, tu, he, elle* no Numero singular; e *we nos, ye ou you, they, elles*, no plural. Se declinaõ na Forma seguinte.

#### *Singular.*

N. *I ou me,*

*eu.*

G. *of me,*

*de mi.*

D. *to me,*

*a mi.*

A. *me,*

*a mi:*

Ab. *from me,*

*de mi.*

#### *Plural.*

N. *We,*

*nos.*

G. *of us,*

*de nos.*

D. *to us,*

*à nos.*

A. *us,*

*a nos.*

Ab. *from us,*

*do nos.*

*Singular.*

N. <i>thou,</i>	tu,
G. <i>of thee,</i>	de ti.
D. <i>to thee,</i>	a ti.
Ac. <i>thee,</i>	a ti.
V. <i>o thou,</i>	ó tu.
A. <i>from thee,</i>	de ti.

*Plural.*

N. <i>ye,</i>	vôz.
G. <i>of you,</i>	de vôz.
D. <i>to you,</i>	a vôz.]
Ac. <i>you,</i>	â vôz.
V. <i>o ye,</i>	ó vôz.
A. <i>from you,</i>	de vôz.

*Sing.*

N. <i>he, elle.</i>
G. <i>of him, delle.</i>
D. <i>to him, a elle.</i>
Ac. <i>him, a elle.</i>
A. <i>from him, delle.</i>

*Plur.*

N. <i>they, elles.</i>
G. <i>of them, delles.</i>
D. <i>to them, a elles.</i>
Ac. <i>them, a elles.</i>
A. <i>from them, delles.</i>

*Sing.*

N. <i>she, ella.</i>
G. <i>of her, della.</i>
D. <i>to her, a ella,</i>
Ac. <i>her, a ella.</i>
A. <i>from her, della.</i>

*Plural.*

o plural de, *she, he* o mesmo q' o de, *he, a* sima.

Os Pronomes possessivos são aquelles, qu' mostrão a posse das Couzas ; estes são de duas maneyras, ou Conjunctivos, ou absolutos.

Os Conjunctivos são aquelles, q' se juntaõ aos Substantivos, q' significão as entidades possuidas, Ex.

*My Father,*  
*My Mother,*

meu Pay,  
minha May.



<i>My Sister,</i>	minha Irmã.
<i>My Brother,</i>	meu Irmão.
<i>My Friends,</i>	meus Amigos.
<i>Thy Horse,</i>	tu Cavallo.
<i>Thy Mare,</i>	tua Egua.
<i>Thy Dogs,</i>	teus Cães.
<i>Thy Bitches,</i>	tuas Cadellas.
<i>His Ox,</i>	seu Boy.
<i>His Cow,</i>	sua Vaca.
<i>His Cocks,</i>	seus Gallos.
<i>His Hens,</i>	suas Gallinhas.
<i>Our Houses,</i>	Nossas Gazas.
<i>Your Book,</i>	Vosso Livro.
<i>Your Books,</i>	Vossos Livros.
<i>Their Country,</i>	seu Pays.
<i>Their Cities.</i>	suas Cidades.

*Notese* que quando a Couza possuida pertence amacho, se uza do possessivo, *his*, e pertencendo a femea, se uza do possessivo, *her*, declinaõse os sebre ditos possessivos na forma seguinte.

*Sing.*

*Plural.*

N. <i>my</i> , meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
G. <i>of my</i> , de meu, de minha,	de meus, de minhas.
D. <i>to my</i> , a meu, a minha,	a meus, a minhas.
A. <i>my</i> , meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
V. <i>o my</i> , ó meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
A. <i>from my</i> , de meu, de minha,	de meus, de minhas.

*Sing.*

*Plural.*

N. <i>thy</i> , teu tua,	teus tuas.
G. <i>of thy</i> , de teu, de tua,	de teus, de tuas.
D. <i>to thy</i> , a teu, a tua,	a teus, a tuas.
A. <i>thy</i> , teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
V. <i>o thy</i> , o teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
A. <i>from thy</i> , de teu. de tua,	de teus, de tuas.

*Sing.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
N. <i>his</i> , feu, sua,	feus, suas.
G. <i>of his</i> , de feu, de sua,	de feus, de suas.
D. <i>to his</i> , á feu, á sua,	á feus, á suas.
A. <i>his</i> , feu, sua,	feus, suas.
Ab. <i>from his</i> , de feu, de sua,	de feus, de suas.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
N. <i>her</i> , feu, sua,	feus, suas.
G. <i>of her</i> , de feu, de sua,	de feus, de suas.
D. <i>to her</i> , á feu, á sua,	á feus, á suas.
A. <i>her</i> , feu, sua,	feus, suas.
Ab. <i>from her</i> , de feu, de sua,	de feus, de suas.

<i>Sing.</i>
N. <i>our</i> , nosso, nossa.
G. <i>of our</i> , de nosso, de nossa.
D. <i>to our</i> , a nosso, á nossa.
A. <i>our</i> , nosso, á nossa.
V. <i>o our</i> , 'o nosso, o, nossa.
Ab. <i>from our</i> , de nosso, de nossa.

<i>Plur.</i>
N. <i>ours</i> , nossos, nossas.
G. <i>of ours</i> , de nossos, de nossas.
D. <i>to ours</i> , á nossos, a nossas.
A. <i>ours</i> , nossos, nossas.
V. <i>o ours</i> , o' nossos, o nossas.
Ab. <i>from ours</i> , de nossos, de nossas.

<i>Sing.</i>
N. <i>your</i> , vosso, vossa.
G. <i>of your</i> , de vosso, de vossa.
D. <i>to your</i> , á vosso, á vossa.
A. <i>your</i> , vosso, vossa.
V. <i>o your</i> , o' vosso, o' vossa.
Ab. <i>from your</i> , de vosso, de vossa.

*Plural.*

N. *yours*, vossos, vossas.  
 G. *of yours*, de vossos, de vossas.  
 D. *to yours*, a' vossos, a vossas.  
 A. *yours*, vossos, vossas.  
 V. *o yours*, o' vossos, o' vossas.  
 Ab. *from yours*, de vossos, de vossas.

*Sing.*

N. *their*, seu, sua.  
 G. *of their*, de seu, de sua.  
 D. *to their*, a seu, a sua.  
 A. *the*, seu, sua,  
 V. *o their*, o' seu, o' sua.  
 Ab. *from their*, de seu, de sua.

*Plural.*

N. *theirs*, seus, suas.  
 G. *of theirs*, de seus, de suas.  
 D. *to theirs*, á seus, á suas.  
 A. *theirs*, seus, suas.  
 V. *o theirs*, o' seus, o' suas.  
 Ab. *from theirs*, de seus, de suas.

*Notese*, q', *their*, se pode aplicar no plural; como também, *yours*, se pode uzar no singular, e, *your*, no plural.

Os Absolutos são aquelles, q' senão juntaõ immediatamente aos Substantivos; se não por via de conjuncção; os quais são os seguintes.

<i>mine</i> , meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
<i>thine</i> , teu, tua,	teus, tuas:
<i>his</i> , seu, sua,	seus, suas:
<i>her</i> , seu, sua,	seus, suas.
<i>ours</i> ,	nossos, nossas.

*their,*

*their, sua,*  
*your, vosso, vossa,*  
*yours, vosso, vossa,*  
*Ex.*

*seus, suas.*  
*vossos, vossas.*  
*vossos, vossas.*

*Your Father and mine,*  
*Your House and mine,*  
*Your Friends and mine,*  
*Your Daughter and mine,*  
*My Country and yours,*  
*My Friend and yours,*  
*Our Servants and theirs,*  
*Their Opinion and ours,*  
*My Horse runs better than*  
*yours,*  
*I am at your Service,*  
*I am at yours,*

*vosso Pay, e meu.*  
*vossa Caza, e minha.*  
*vossos Amigos, e meus.*  
*vossa Filha, e minha.*  
*meu Pays e vosso.*  
*meus Amigos, e vossos.*  
*nossos Moços, e seus.*  
*sua Opinião e nossa.*  
*meu Cavallo corre mel-*  
*hor, q' o vosso.*  
*eu estou á vosso Serviço.*  
*eu estou ao vosso.*

*Notese, q' os mais dos Sobreditos possessivos, sendo de sua natureza Conjunctivos, como fica atras ditto, se fazem accidentalmente absolutos, por se juntar por Cazualidade por via de Conjuncção aos Substantivos; e q' entre elles so, mine, e thine, são propria, e realmente absolutos, porque estes nunca se juntaõ aos Substantivos immediatamente se naõ por via de Conjuncção, e commumente se applicão em Repostas. Como, whose Book is this? de quem he este Livro? is mine, he meu; is thine, he teu: Sua declinação he na forma seguinte.*

*N. mine, meu, minha, meus minhas.*  
*G. of mine, de meu, de minha, de meus de minhas,*  
*D. to mine, a meu, a minha, a meus a minhas,*  
*A. mine, meu, minha, meus, minhas.*  
*V. o mine, ó meu, ó minha, ó meus, ó minhas.*  
*A. from mine, de meu, de minha, de meus, de minhas.*



N. *thine*, teu, tua, teus, tuas.

G. *of thine*, de teu, de tua, de teus, de tuas.

D. *to thine*, a teu, a tua, á teus, á tuas.

A. *thine*, teu, tua, teus, tuas.

V. *o thine*, ó teu, ó tua, ó teus, ó tuas.

A. *from thine*, de teu, de tuá, de teus, de tuas.

Os Pronomes demonstrativos, são aquelles q' fazem de  
mostração das pessoas ou Couzas. Ex.

*this Man*,

este Homem.

*these Men*,

estes Homens.

*that Man*,

aquelle Homem.

*those Men*,

aquelles Homens.

*this Woman*,

esta Mulher.

*these Women*,

estas Mulheres.

*that Woman*,

aquella Mulher.

*those Women*,

aquellas Mulheres.

*that same*,

aquello mesmo.

*that vexes me*,

aquillo me emraivece.

*Sua declinação he na Forma seguinte.*

*Singular.*

*Plural.*

N. *this*, este, esta.

N. *these*, estes, estas.

G. *of this*, deste desta.

G. *of these*, destes, destas.

D. *to this*, a este, á esta,

D. *to these*, a estes, a estas.

Ac. *this*, este, esta.

Ac. *these*, estes, estas.

Ab. *from this*, deste,  
desta.

Ab. *from these*, destes,  
destas.

*Singular.*

N. *that*, aquella, aquella.

G. *of that*, da quelle, da quella.

D. *to that*. aa quelle, aa quella.

Ac. *that*, aquella, aquella.

Ab. *from that*, da quelle, da quella.

*Plu.*

*Plural.*

N. *those*, aquellas, aquellas.  
 G. *of those*, da quelles, da aquellas.  
 D. *to those*, á aquellas, á aquellas.  
 Ac. *those*, aquellas, aquellas.  
 Ab. *from those*, da quelles, da aquellas.

Quando, *that*, he Relativo se uza dos Pronomes pessoais, e não dos demonstrativos. Ex.

<i>He that is content, is rich enough,</i>	aquelle q' está contente he bastante rico.
<i>She that you know,</i>	aquelle, q' tu conheces.
<i>They, that you spoke to me of,</i>	aquelles de quem vos me falasteis.

Tambem se uza destes Pronomes, *this*, e *that*, por evitar a repetição de hum nome. Ex.

<i>This Knife doth not cut so well, as that which I lost.</i>	este faca não corta também como aquella, o' eu perdi.
<i>That Cloth is not so fine, as that you bought yesterday.</i>	este pano não he tão fino, como a quelle q' tu compraste honte.
<i>My Book is better than that</i>	meu Livro he melhor q' aquella.
<i>Your Horse runs better than this</i>	vosso Cavallo corre melhor, q' este.
<i>Our House is bigger than this.</i>	nossa Caza he mayor q' esta.
<i>Our Bells ring better than those.</i>	nossos Sinos tangem melhor q' aquellas.

*Dos Pronomes Relativos.*

Os Pronomes Relativos são aquellas, q' se referem aos Substantivos, q' lhe ficam atrás; e são tres, a sa-

a saber, *who*, *which*, e, *that* e, se declinaõ na forma seguinte, sendo de todo o genero e de todo o numero.

*Singular.*

N. *Who*, quem ou que.

G. *of whom*, de quem.

D. *to whom*, á quem.

Ac. *whom*, quem.

Ab. *from whom*, de quem.

*Plural.*

N. *Who*, que, ou quem.

G. *of whom*, dos que, ou de quem.

D. *to whom*, aos que, ou a quem.

Ac. *whom*, que.

Ab. *from whom*, dos que, ou de quem.

*Singular.**Plural.*

N. *which*, o que, o qual,      aqual, os q' os quais,  
a q',

G. *of which*, de q', do      de qual, dos q' das quais.  
qual, da q',

D. *to which*, ao q', ao      á qual, aos q' aos quais.  
qual, á q',

Ac. *which*, oq', o qual,      a qual, os q', as' quais.  
a q',

Ab. *from which*, do q',      da qual, dos q', das  
do qual, da q'.      quais.

*That* se declina na mesma Forma ; mas nesta natureza de Relativo, he de todo, o genero, e de todo, o numero, e em tam significa, que, ou oqual ;

*Notese*, q' o Pronome, *who*, se refere só á pessoas. Ex.

Alexander, *who* found  
the Earth too little, of  
*whom* you speak.

He is a Man of *whom* I  
have received many Fa-  
vours.

Alexandre, que achou o  
Mundo pequeno mui-  
to de quem falais, vòz.

Este he hum homem de  
quem eutenho recebi-  
do muitos favores.

*To whom I am much obliged.* A quem eu estou muito Obrigado.

*There are the Gentlemen of whom we have spoken so much.* La estaõ os Gentis Homens, de quem nos havemos falado tantos.

*These are the Gentlewomen, of whom we have bought.* Estas saõ as Gentis mulheres de quem nos havemos comprado.

*Which, etbat, se referem á pessoas, e a Couzas indiferentemente.*

*The Man, that lives well.* O Homen q' vive bem.

*The Woman, which works.* A Mulher, q' trabalha.

*The Birds, that fly.* As Aves q' voaõ.

*There are Predictions, which advertise us of our Misfortunes.* Ellas saõ perdicçõis, q' nos Avizaõ de nossas Desgraças.

*Gold is a Metal, which doth help us in all our Wants.* Ouro he hum Metal, q' nos adjuda em todas nossas Faltas :

*Which makes the Execution of our Designs easy; and which makes us to triumph over all Difficulties.* Q' fas a Execuçaõ de nossos Dizignos facil; eq' nös fas triumphar sobre todas as Difficuldades.

*Estes Pronomes Relativos sam tambem Interrogativos, Ex.*

*Who is there?*

*Quem está lá?*

*Who comes here?*

*Quem vem aqui?*

*Who is that Man?*

*Quem he aquelle Homem?*

*Who is that Woman?*

*Quem he aquella Mulher?*

*Who are those Men?*

*Quem saõ aquelles Homens?*

*Which*



## 286 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

<i>Which will you have?</i>	Qual queris vós?
<i>Which of these two Horses do you like best?</i>	Qual destes dois Cavallos, te agrada melhor?
<i>From whom have you this News?</i>	De quem tendes vos estas novas?
<i>Which is it?</i>	Qual he elle?
<i>Which is the Way?</i>	Qual he o Caminho?
<i>Which of the two?</i>	Qual dos dois?

Uzasse deste Pronome, *what*, quando no Portuguez se uza, o que, no Principio de hum Periodo, como tambem diante das pessoas, couzas, e Verbos, quando se fas alguá interrogaçãõ, Ex.

<i>What you say is true.</i>	O q' tu dizes he verde.
<i>What he doth is worth nothing.</i>	O q' fas elle, he digno de nada.
<i>What the Heart thinketh, the Tongue speaketh,</i>	O q' o Coraçãõ cuyda, dis a Lingua.
<i>What one wins, the other spends.</i>	O q' Ganha hum, o outro diipende.
<i>Give what you can.</i>	Da o que tu Podes?
<i>Say what you know.</i>	Dize o q' tu sabes?
<i>What Man is that?</i>	Q' Homem he aquelle?
<i>What Book is that?</i>	Q' Livro he aquelle?
<i>What trade are you of?</i>	De q' Officio sois?
<i>What say you?</i>	Q' dizes tu?
<i>What do you ask?</i>	Q' procuras tu?
<i>What will you drink?</i>	Q' queres tu beber?
<i>What do you want?</i>	Q' necessitas tu?

Esta palavra, *where*, a acompanhada das Prepozicõis, *about*, *at*, *in*, *of*, *unto*, *with*, he uzada em Lugar de, *which*, Ex.

<i>Where about,</i>	Aorredor, do qual, ou da qual.
<i>Where at,</i>	Ao qual, ou a qual.
	<i>Wherein,</i>

<i>Wherein,</i>	Em o qual, ou em a qual.
<i>Wherewith,</i>	Com o qual, ou com a qual.
<i>Whereunto,</i>	Ao qual, ou a qual.

*Notese,* qu' o *Inglez* expressa o Relativo, *o*, do *Portuguez*, pella Syllaba *it*, q' quando se refere a Couzas antecedentes, tem força de Relativo, *Ex.*

<i>I have not seen it,</i>	Eu não o, vi.
<i>Do you see the King's Coach? I see it.</i>	Vés tu o Coche do Rey? en o vejo.
<i>It shall be of fine Flour,</i>	Sera de fina Farinha.
<i>It is a thing the most holy,</i>	He a Couza a mais sagrada.

*Declinasse na maneyra seguinte.*

N. <i>it</i> ,	elle, ou ella.
G. <i>of it</i> ,	de elle ou de ella.
D. <i>to it</i> ,	a elle, ou a ella.
Ac. <i>it</i> ,	elle ou ella.
Ab. <i>from it</i> ,	dé elle, ou de ella.

*Notese,* que a Syllaba, *its*, tem força de possessivo, significando, seu, sua, seus, suas, e se declina na Forma seguinte.

N. <i>its</i> ,	seu, sua, seus, suas.
G. <i>of its</i> ,	de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.
D. <i>to its</i> ,	a seu, a sua, a seus, a suas.
Ac. <i>its</i> ,	seu, sua, seus, suas.
Ab. <i>from its</i> ,	de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.

*Dos Verbos.*

O Verbo he hua Parte da Oraçaõ, que tem modos, e tempos, e não se declina por Cazos.

O Verbo he pessoal, ou impessoal; o impessoal se conjuga só pellas terceyras pessoas do singular; como, *it raineth*, chove; *it bloweth*, aventa.

O Verbo pessoal se conjuga por todas aseys pessoas; a saber tres no singular; *I love*, eu amo; *thou lovest*, tu amas; *he loveth*, elle ama e tres no plural a saber; *we love*, nôz amamos; *ye* ou *you love*, vôz a mais; *they love*, elles amão.

O Verbo pessoal se divide em activo, passivo, e neutro.

O Verbo Activo he aquelle q' exercita a acção com relação a alguá Couza, como, *I read*, eu Leo; *I love*, eu amo; *I write*, eu escrevo; os quais verbos dizem relação ao que se lê ao que se ama, e ao que se escreve.

O Passivo he aquelle em que se padeffe alguá acção; como, *I am loved*, eu seu amado.

O Neutro he aquelle q' produz e exercita a acção em sy mesmo; como, *I am*, eu sou; *I exist*, eu existo.

O Verbo tem seis Modos, a saber, modo Indicativo, que demonstra; como, *I speak*, eu falo.

Modo Imperativo, que manda; como, *do thou that*, faze aquillo; *let him do that*, faça elle aquillo.

Modo Optativo, q' dezeja conhecido pellos signais, *God grant, please God, wifh God, would to God*; como, *O that, God grant I may do that*, oxala faça eu aquillo.

Modo Potencial, conhecido pellos signais, *may, can, might, should, could, would, ought*, v. g. *I may*, ou *can love*, *I might*, ou *I should*, &c. *love*, amaria ou poderia eu amar, &c.

Modo Conjunctivo que ajunta a acção á algum Tempo, ou pessoa, conhecido pellos signais, *how, as, when, if, although*, v. g. *as I love*, como eu amo, &c.

E Modo Infinito, que poem o Verbo sem definir Tempo, pessoa, e Numero, v. g. *to speak*, fallar.

O Modo Indicativo tem cinco Tempos, a saber, Tempo presente, que significa o que actualmente, se está fazendo, v. g. *I love*, eu amo.

Preterito Imperf. ito, que significa a acção passada, mais ainda não totalmente acabada; v. g. *I loved*, eu amava.

Preterito Perfeito, que significa a acção já passada, e finida, v. g. *I loved*, ou *have loved*, eu amey, ou tenho amado.

Preterito Plusquam Perfeito, que vem a ser mais, que perfeito, e significa a acção de tal sorte passada, que já não pôde ser interrompida, v. g. *I had loved*, eu tinha amado.

Futuro, que significa a acção, que hade ser, ou vir v. g. *I shall*, ou *will love*, eu amarey.

Os tempos dos mais Modos se veráõ pella conjugação dos Verbos.

Alem do referido se hade notar que ha dois Verbos auxiliares, a saber, o Verbo, *to have*, e o Verbo *to be*.

O verbo, *to have*, serve para ajudar a Formar os perfeitos compostos, e os plusquam perfeitos dos Verbos Activos; v. g. *I have loved*, *I had loved*.

O Verbo, *to be*, serve para formar os Verbos Passivos, ajuntandolhe os Participios do Preterito dos Verbos que se Necessitaõ aos Tempos do dito Verbo, *to be*, v. g. *I am loved*, eu sou amando, seguindo da mesma Sorte pellos mais Tempos, e Modos.

E porque para a formação dos Tempos assima referidos são necessários estes dois Verbos auxiliares por elles se da Principio as Conjugações, *to have*, ter, ou haver.



*Modo Indicativo, Tempo presente.*

*Singular.*

<i>I have,</i>	<i>eu tenho, ou hey.</i>
<i>Thou hast,</i>	<i>tu tens, ou has.</i>
<i>He hath, ou has,</i>	<i>elle tem, ou ha.</i>

*Plural.*

*We have, &c. ye, ou you have, &c. they have, &c.*

*Preter Imperf.*

*Singular.*

*I had, eu tinha, ou havia.*  
*Thou badst, he had, &c.*

*Plural.*

*We had, &c. ye, ou you had, &c. they had, &c.*

*Preter Perf.*

*Singular.*

*I have had, eu tive, ou houve tido.*  
*Thou badst had, &c. he hath had, &c.*

*Plural.*

*We have had, &c. ye, ou you have had, &c.*  
*They have had, &c.*

*Preter Plusquam Perfeito.*

*Singular.*

*I bad bad, ou tinha, ou havia tido.*  
*Thou badst bad, &c. he bad bad, &c.*

*Plural.*

*Plural.*

*We had had, &c. ye ou you had had, &c.  
They had had, &c.*

*Futuro.*

*Singular.*

*I shall, ou will have, eu terey, ou haverey:  
Thou shalt, ou wilt have, he shall, ou will have.*

*Plural.*

*We shall, ou will have, ye, ou you shall, ou will  
have, they shall, ou will have.*

*Imperativo.*

*Singular.*

*Have thou, tem, tu, ou há tu.  
Let him have, tenha, ou haja elle.*

*Plural.*

*Let us have, have ye, ou have you, let them have.*

*Modo Potencial.*

*Singular.*

*I may ou can have, tenha ou haja ou possa ter  
eu.*

*Thou mayst, ou canst have, ou you may, ou can  
have, he may, ou can have.*

*Plural.*

*We may, ou can have, ye, ou you may, ou can  
have, they may, ou can have.*

*Preter Imperf.*

*Singular.*

*I might have, teria, ou haveria ou poderia eu ter.*

*Singular.*

*Thou mightest have, ou you might have, he might have.*

*Plural.*

*We might have, ye, ou you might have, they might have.*

*Præter Perfect.**Singular.*

*I might have had, pude eu ter, ou haver, thou mightest have had, he might have had.*

*Plural.*

*We might have had, ye, ou you might have had, they might have had.*

*Præter Plusquam.**Singular.*

*I might have had \* had, pudera eu ter, ou haver, thou mightest, ou you might have had \* had, he might have had \* had.*

*Plural.*

*We might have had \* had, ye, ou you might have had \* had, they might have had \* had.*

Nota-se que neste Tempo, e no Præterito imperfecto, do perfeito a sima se podem fazer as mesmas formações com o signalis, *could, would, ought, should*; formandoos, como com o signal, *might*.

Nota-se, tambem que o \* *had* que vai com estrela communmente se suprime, e não se expressa; distinguindo-se então o perfeito do plusquam perfeito, pello sentido da oração: e estas anotações servirão para todas as conjugações, e formações dos mais Verbos.

*Future.*

*Futuro.*

*Singular.*

*I may, ou can have hereafter, poderey eu ter ou haver, thou mayst, ou canst, ou you may, ou can have hereafter, he may, ou can have hereafter.*

*Plural.*

*We may, ou can have hereafter, ye, ou you may, ou can have hereafter, they may, ou can have hereafter.*

*Modo Optativo.*

Os Tempos deste modo se formão ajuntando ao Verbo hum dos Adverbos, ou sinais de dezejo como, *please God, God grant, o' that, &c.* v. g. *ó that I may have, oxala tenha, ou haja eu, ó that thou mayst, ou you may have, oxala tenhas ou hajas tu, &c.* e a fim nos mais Tempos. Notando que os sinais dos Tempos são fó os que se mudão, conservando sempre o Verbo da mesma forte; o que se observarã para todas as Conjugações.

*Modo Conjunctivo.*

Os Tempos deste modo se formão como os do Optativo, ajuntandolhe da mesma forte ao Modo Potencial, huã das Conjugações, *as, if, when, how, although,* v. g. *as I may have, como eu tenho, ou hey;* seguindo da mesma Sorte nos mais Tempos; e guardando, e observando o que se advertio no Potencial do \* *had* com estrela.

*Infinit.*

*Present.*

*To have, ter ou haver.*



*Preter Perf.*

*To have had, ter ou haver tido.*

*Gerundio.*

*Of having, de ter ou de haver, in having, ser having.*

*Supino.*

*To have, para ter, ou haver.*

*To be had, para ser tido ou havido.*

*Participio Present.*

*Having, tendo, ou havendo.*

*Particip. Preter.*

*Had, tido, ou havido.*

*Participio Futuro.*

*To be about to have, o que hade ter ou haver.*

*Do Verbo.*

*To be, ser, ou estar.*

*Indicat. Present.*

*Sing.*

*I am, eu sou, ou estou, thou art, he is,*

*Plural.*

*We are, ye ou you are, they are.*

*Imperf.*

*Sing.*

*I was, eu era, ou estava, thou wast, ou you was, he was.*

*Plural.*

*We were, ye ou you were, they were.*

## Perf.

Sing.

*I have been, eu fuy ou estive.**Thou hast been, he hath ou has been.*

Plural.

*We have been, ye ou you have been, they have been.*

## Plusquamperfect.

Sing.

*I had been, eu fora ou estivera, ou eu tinha fido, ou estado, thou hadst been, he had been.*

Plural.

*We had been, ye ou you had been, they had been.*

## Futuro.

Sing.

*I shall ou will be, eu ferey eu estarey, thou shalt, ou wilt be, ou you shall be, he shall ou will be.*

Plural.

*We shall ou will be, ye ou you shall, ou will be, they shall, ou will be.*

## Modo Imperativo.

Sing.

*Be thou, se tu, ou estā, let him be.*

Plural.

*Let us be, be ye ou you, let them be.*

## Modo Potencial.

Sing.

*I may ou can be, seja, ou esteja eu ou possa fer ou estar eu, thou mayst, ou canst be, ou you may, ou can be, he may, ou can be.*

*Plural.*

*We may ou can be, ye ou you may, ou can be, they may, ou can be.*

*Imperf.*

*Sing.*

*I might be, seria ou estaria ou poderia ser ou estaria, thou mightest be, ou you might be, he might be.*

*Plural.*

*We might be, ye ou you might be, they might be.*

*Perfeit.*

*Sing.*

*I might have been, pude eu ser ou estar, thou mightest have been, ou you might have been, he might have been.*

*Plural.*

*We might have been, ye ou you might have been, they might have been.*

*Plusquamperf.*

*Sing.*

*I might have had been, pudera ser ou estar eu, thou mightest have had been, ou you might have had been, he might have had been.*

*Plural.*

*We might have had been, ye ou you might have had been, they might have had been.*

*Futuro.*

*Sing.*

*I may ou can be hereafter, poderey ser ou estar eu, ou ferey eu ou estarey, thou mayst ou canst be here-*

*hereafter, ou you may ou can be hereafter, be may ou can be hereafter.*

*Plural.*

*We may ou can be hereafter, ye ou you may ou can be hereafter, they may ou can be hereafter.*

*Modo Optativo.*

Este Modo se forma, como dissemos acima no Verbo, *have*, v. g. *God grant I might be*, oxala fora, ou estivera eu, e assim nos mais Tempos.

*Modo Conjunctivo.*

O mesmo se observa neste modo, com as conjunções apropriadas a elle v. g. *as I may ou can be*, como eu sou ou estou, veja-se o que se disse no Verbo, *have*, neste modo, e no Optativo.

*Infinitivo.*

*To be*, ser ou estar.

*Preter.*

*To have been*, ter sido, ou estado.

*Gerund.*

*Of being*, de ser ou estar, *in being*, for being,

*Supin.*

*To be*, para ser ou estar.

*To be been*, para ser sido, ou estado.

*Particip. present.*

*Being*, sendo, ou estando.

*Particip. preter.*

*Been*, sido, ou estado.



*Particip. Futuro.*

*To be about to be*, ou *to be hereafter*, o que hade ser ou estar.

*Dos Verbos Activos.*

Os Verbos activos ou são regulares, ou irregulares, os regulares são aquelles, cujos Participios do preterito, acabaõ *em, ed*, como *love, loved*, advertindo que algumas vezes se supprime *o, e*, por Sincope, interpondo-lhe hum aprofitrofe. que he hum accento entremeyo, como, *loved, lov'd*.

Na Lingua Ingleza os Verbos não tem mais que hũa conjugação aqual he geral para todos os Verbos, assim regulares com irregulares, não havendo mais differença entre huns, e outros, que os regulares terminar seus Participios do preterito *em, ed*, como se fas menção a cima, e os irregulares terminalos, com variedade de terminaçois, guardando em tudo o mais a mesma conjugação, e os mesmos sinais nos mais Tempos, e Modos.

*Da Formação dos Tempos, e Modos.*

O Infinito se forma antepondolhe *to*, a qualquer Verbo, v. g. *to love, to kill*.

O Presente formasse do Infinito, tirandolhe *o, to*, e ajuntandolhe a pessoa, v. g. *to love, I love*.

O Preterito Imperfeito se forma, ou valendosse do Participio do Preterito, e adjuntandolhe a pessoa sem mudança de ditto Participio, ou por meyo do signal, *did*, v. g. *I loved, thou lovedst, &c. I did love, thou didst love, &c.*

Advertindo que o signal, *do*, e signal *did*, o primeiro he presente, e o segundo preterito imperfeito do Verbo, *do*, o qual significando fazer, quando se junta aos Verbos por sinais, nada significa, nem

tem outro e feito, mais que mostrar os Tempos em que está o Verbo, a que se junta; notando também, que quando a oração he interrogativa, *do*, se antepoem ao Nominativo, v. g. *do you speak French?* porem sendo affirmativa se poem de pois do Nominativo, v. g. *he doth speak French.*

O Preterito Perfeito, a que chamaõ diffinido, historico, ou simples, se forma uzando da mesma Sorte do Participio do preterito, v. g. *I loved, thou lovedst, &c.*

O Preterito Perfeito composto se forma, juntando ao Verbo auxiliar, *to have*, o participio do Preterito do Verbo que se necessita uzar, v. g. *I have loved, &c.*

O Plusquam Perfeito se forma também por meyo do Preterito Imperfeito deditto Verbo, *to have*, juntandolhe da mesma Sorte o Participio do Preterito, v. g. *I had loved, &c.*

O Futuro se forma por meyo dos signais, *shall* ou *will*, v. g. *I shall ou will love, &c.*

O Imperativo forma suas segundas pessoas do singular, e do plural, tomando o presente do Indicativo, e pondolhe a pessoa depois, v. g. *love thou, love ye* ou *you*, e a primeyra pessoa do plural e as terceiras de ambos Numeros, se formaõ por meyo do signal, *let*, v. g. *let him love, let us love, let them love.*

A formaçaõ dos Modos Optativo, e Conjunctivo, e de seus Tempos se conhecerá pella Conjugação ad extensum advertindo como acima se disse já, que na conjugação he hum Verbo toda a variedade está, quasi em os signais, que o Verbo sempre he o mesmo sem nelle haver outra mudança mais que juntarlhe na segunda pessoa do Indicativo hum *st*, e na terceira hum, *th*, o qual muytas vezes se resolve em hum, *s*, v. g. *thou lovest, tu amas; he loveth, ou loves, elle ama.*

*Da Conjugação de Verbo activo*

*O Verbo.*

*To love, amar.*

*Modo Indicativo.*

*Presente.*

*Sing.*

*I love, ou I do love, eu amo thou lovest, ou dost love. ou, you love, he loveth, ou loves, ou doth ou does love, &c.*

*Plur.*

*We love ou do love, ye ou you love, ou do love, they love, ou do love.*

*Preter Imperf.*

*Sing.*

*I loved ou did love, eu amava, thou lovedst, ou didst love, ou you loved, he loved ou did love, &c.*

*Plur.*

*We love, ou did love, ye ou you loved, ou did love they loved ou did love, &c.*

*Preter Perfeito:*

*Sing.*

*I have loved, eu amey ou tenho amado. Thou hast, ou have loved, he has, ou hath loved.*

*Plur.*

*We have loved, ye, ou you have loved, they have loved, &c.*

*Plus-*

*Plusquam Perfect.*

*Sing.*

*I had loved, eu tinha amado ou eu amara.  
Thou hadst, ou you had loved, he had loved, &c.*

*Plur.*

*We had loved, ye ou you had loved, they had loved,  
&c.*

*Futur.*

*Sing.*

*I shall ou will love, eu amarey, thou shalt ou  
wilt, ou you shall ou will love, they shall ou will  
love, &c.*

*Plur.*

*We shall ou will love, ye ou you shall, ou will love,  
they shall ou will love, &c.*

*Imperativo.*

*Sing.*

*Love thou, ama tu.  
Let him love.*

*Plur.*

*Let us love, love ye, let them love, &c.*

*Modo Potencial.*

*Prez.*

*Sing.*

*I may ou can love, ame ou possa eu amar.  
Thou may'st, ou canst, ou you may ou can love, he  
may ou can love.*

*Plur.*



*Plur.*

*We may ou can love, ye ou you may ou can love, they may ou can love.*

*Preter Imperf.**Sing.*

*I might love, amaria, ou podeira eu amar: thou mightest love, ou you might love, he might love.*

*Plur.*

*We might love, ye ou you might love, they might love.*

*Preter Perf.**Sing.*

*I might have loved, pude eu amar: thou mightest have loved, ou you might have loved: he might have loved, &c.*

*Plur.*

*We might have loved: ye, ou you might have loved: they might have loved.*

*Plusquam Perf.**Sing.*

*I might have\* had loved, pudera eu ter ou haver amado: thou mightest, ou you might have\* had loved, he might have\* had loved.*

*Plur.*

*We might have\* had loved, ye, ou you might have\* had loved, they might have\* had loved.*

Notese que tirado fora o had com a e strela, como Commum mente se Costuma, ainda que o perfeito se

se e quivoque com o plusquam perfeito ; pello sentido da sentença se farão distinctos.

*Futuro.*

*I may* ou *can have hereafter*, poderey eu amar, ou amarey eu: *thou may'st*, ou *canst*, ou *you may* ou *can love hereafter*, he may, ou *can love hereafter*.

*We may* ou *can love hereafter*, ye ou *you may* ou *can love hereafter*, they may ou *can love hereafter*.

*Modo Optativo.*

Os tempos deste Modo se formão a juntando lhe hum dos adverbios de dezejo, Como,

*O that I may love*, Oxala ame eu.

*O that I might love*, Oxala amara eu ou amasse.

*Modo Conjunctivo.*

Os tempos deste Modo se formão Como os do Optativo, ajuntandolhe da mesma Sorte ao mo do potencial huá das Conjuncções, *as*, *if*, *when*, *how*, *although*, &c. a fim Como, *as I may love*, Como eu amo: *as I might love*, Como eu amara, seguindo da mesma Sorte nos mais tempos ; guardando o que se advertio no verbo, *have*.

*Infinitivo.*

*to love*, amar.

*Preter. Perf.*

*to have loved*, ter amado.

*Gerundio.*

*of loving*, de amar.

*in loving*, em amar.

*for loving*, para amar.

*Supino.*

*to loving*, para amar.

*to be loved*, para ser amado.

*Partic. Presente.*

*loving*, amando, ou oque ama, e amava.

*Partic. Preter.*

*loved*, amado.

*Partic. Futur.*

*to be about to love*, oque hade amar.

*Do Verbo Passivo.*

O verbo passivo não he outra Couza mais, que o verbo auxiliar, *to be* com o participio do preterito dos verbos, que se necessitatō uzar. ex.

*Presente.*

*I am loved*, eu sou amado.

*Preterit Imperf.*

*I was loved*, eu era amado.

*Preter Perf.*

*I have been loved*, eu fui-amado.

*Preter Plusquam.*

*I had been loved*, eu tinha sido amado.

*Futur.*

*I shall*, ou *will be loved*, eu ferey amado.

*Imperat.*

*Be thou loved*, se tu amado.  
*Let him be loved*, seja elle amado.  
*Let us be loved*, sejamos nos amados.  
*Be ye, ou you loved*, sede vós amados.  
*Let them be loved*, sejaõ elles amados.

E por esta Sorte se hiraõ formando as mais pessoas Modos, e seus Tempos.

*Dos Verbos Reciprocos.*

Os Verbos recipricos se formaõ pella particula, *self*, exponse a formaçaõ do Presente do Indicativo, e por ella sera facil saberse dos mais Modos.

*Prezente.*

*I love myself*, eu meamo, *thou lovest thyself*, &c.  
*He loveth*, ou *loves himself*.

*Plural.*

*We love ourselves*, you ou ye love yourselves, they love themselves.

*Dos Verbos Irregulares.*

Em que consista a irregularidade destes Verbos, e qual seja a Diferença entre elles, e os regulares; se pode ver no Paragrafo segundo, no Titulo dos Verbos activos. E porque em tudo o mais se formaõ como os regulares, observando as formaçois destes, fica conhecida, e sabida ada quelles.

Mas porque a formaçaõ dos seus preteritos simples não he sempre a mesma; porque huns os formaõ valendose dos seus Participios do preterito, e outros não; se poem as listas seguintes de huns, e outros para menos confuzaõ dos que dezejarem saber esta Lingua.



*Dos que nao se valem dos Participios do preterito.*

*to see, ver, I saw, eu vi, I have seen, eu tenho visto.*

*to take, tomar, I took, eu tomei, I have taken, eu tenho tomado.*

*to undertake, emprender, I undertook, eu emprendy, I have undertaken, eu tenho emprendido.*

*to give, dar, I gave, eu dei, I have given, eu tenho dado.*

*to write, escrever, I wrote, eu escrevi, I have written, eu tenho escrito.*

*to do, fazer, I did, eu fiz, I have done, eu tenho feito.*

*to forgive, perdoar, I forgave, eu perdoei, I have forgiven, eu tenho perdoado.*

*to go, hir, I went, eu fui, I am gone, eu sou hido.*

*to forsake, abandonar, I forsook, eu abandoney, I have forsaken, eu tenho abandonado.*

*to come, vir, I came, I am come.*

*to break, quebrar, I broke, I have broken.*

*to become, vir a ser, I became, I have become.*

*to rise, levantar-se, I rose, I am risen.*

*to grow, crescer, I grew, I am grown.*

*to know, saber, I knew, I have known.*

*to throw, tirar, I threw, I have thrown.*

*to fall, cahir, I fell, I am fallen.*

*to shew, mostrar, I shew, I have shewn.*

*to beat, bater, I did beat, I have beaten.*

*to eat, comer, I did eat, I have eaten.*

*to owe, dever, I did owe, I have own.*

*to draw, tirar, I drew, I have drawn.*

*to sow, cozer, I did sow, I have sown.*

*to abide, ficar, I abode, I have abode.*

*to bear, levar, I bore, I have borne.*

*to bite, morder, I bit, I have bitten.*

*to blow, soprar, I blew, I have blown.*  
*to bid, mandar, I bade, I have bidden.*  
*to beget, gerar, I begot, I have begotten.*  
*to chuse, eicolher, I chose, I have chosen.*  
*to chide, reprehender, I chid, I have chidden.*  
*to cleave, fender, I clove, cleft, I have cloven, cleft.*  
*to catch, apanhar, I catcht, I have caught.*  
*to crow, cantar ogallo, I crew, I have crown.*  
*to drive, guiar, I drove, I have driven.*  
*to dare, ouzar, atreverse, I durst, I have dared.*  
*to fly, fugir, I fled, I have flown.*  
*to forget, esque ferse, I forgot, I have forgotten.*  
*to flee, voar, I flew, I have flown.*  
*to get, ganhar, I got, I have gotten, ou got.*  
*to gird, cingir, I girded, I have girt.*  
*to hide, esconder, I hid, I have hidden.*  
*to hold, ter, I held, I have holden, ou held.*  
*to lie, jazer, I lay, I have lain.*  
*to lean, pouzar, I did lean, I have leaned.*  
*to run, correr, I ran, I have run.*  
*to ride, cavalgar, montar a cavalo, I rod, rode, I*  
*have ridden, ou rid.*  
*to read, ler, I read, I have read.*  
*to stink, feder, I stank, ou stunk.*  
*to spread, espalhar, I spread, I have spread.*  
*to strike, ferir, I struck, I have struck, ou stricken.*  
*to spell, soletrear, I spelt, I have spelled.*  
*to swear, jurar, I swore, I have sworn.*  
*to smite, dar, I smote, I have smitten.*  
*to shoe, ferrar, I shod, I have shodden.*  
*to shed, derramar, I shed, I have shedden.*  
*to shake, vibrar, brandir, mexer, I shook, I have*  
*shaken.*  
*to spit, cuspir, I spat, I have spitten.*  
*to steal, furtar, I stole, I have stolen.*  
*to swim, nadar, I swam, I have swam.*  
*to shine, resplandecer, I shone, I have shone, ou*  
*shined.*

*to slay, matar, I slew, I have slain.*

*to scald, cozer, I scd, I have scalden.*

*to split, raxar, I splitted, I have split, ou splitted.*

*to stick, pegar, I stuck, I have stuck, ou stucken.*

*to strip, despir, I stript, I have stript, ou strippen.*

*to strife, contender, I strove, I have striven.*

*to tear, despedaçar, I tore, I have torne.*

*to thrive, medrar, I throve, I have thriven.*

*to tread, pizar, I have trodden.*

*to be willing, querer, I was willing, I have been willing.*

*to wring, torcer, I wrung, I have wrung.*

*to wear, trazer, I wore, I have worn.*

*to work, trabalhar, I workt, I have workt.*

*to weave, tecer, I wove, I have woven.*

*to will, querer, I would, I have willed.*

*to awake, despertar, I awake, I have awoke, a-waked.*

*to cut, cortar, I did cut, I have cut.*

*Dos que se servem do Participio preterito.*

*to ask, preguntar, I askt, I have askt.*

*to buy, comprar, I bought, I have bought.*

*to begin, começar, I begun, I have begun.*

*to bring, trazer, I brought, I have brought.*

*to bleed, sangrar, I bled, I have bled.*

*to breed, gerar, I bred, I have bred.*

*to bend, dobrar, I bent, I have bent.*

*to beseech, suplicar, I besought, I have besought.*

*to bind, encadernar, I bound, I have bound.*

*to bereave, privar, despojar, I bereaved, ou bereft, I have bereft, ou bereaved.*

*to burn, queimar, I burnt, I have burnt.*

*to creep, engatinhar, ou andar de rasto, I crept, I have crept.*

*to curse, amaldiçoar, I curst, I have curst.*

*to crack, estallar, I crackt, I have crackt.*

*to drink, beber, I drank, I have drank.*

- to deal, tratar, I dealt, I have dealt.*  
*to dwell, morar, I dwelt, I have dwelt.*  
*to dip, molhar, I dipt, I have dipt.*  
*to feed, pastar, I fed, I have fed.*  
*to fling, tirar com funda, I flung, I have flung.*  
*to fetch, hir buscar, I fetcht, I have fetcht.*  
*to feel, apalpar, I felt, I have felt.*  
*to fight, pelear, I fought, I have fought.*  
*to find, achar, I found, I have found.*  
*to fix, fixar, I fixt, I have fixt.*  
*to geld, castrar, I gelt, I have gelt.*  
*to hang, pendurar, I hung, I have hung.*  
*to help, adudar, I helpt, I have helpt.*  
*to hit, dar golpes, I hit, I have hit.*  
*to keep, guardar, I kept, I have kept.*  
*to kiss, beijar, I kist, I have kist.*  
*to leave, deichar, I left, I have left.*  
*to laugh, rir, I laught, I have laught.*  
*to let, deichar, I let, ou did let, I have let.*  
*to lose, perder, I lost, I have lost.*  
*to learn, aprender, I learnt, I have learnt.*  
*to lead, guiar, I led, I have led.*  
*to make, fazer, I made, I have made.*  
*to meet, en contrar, I met, I have met.*  
*to mix, misturar, I mixt, I have mixt.*  
*to put, por, I put, ou did put, I have put.*  
*to pitch, brear, pegar, untar, com pez, I pitcht,*  
*I have pitcht.*  
*to quake, tremer, I quaked, I have quaked.*  
*to ring, soar, I rung, I have rung.*  
*to rend, despedaçar, I rent, I have rent.*  
*to sell, vender, I sold, I have sold.*  
*to sleep, dormir, I slept, I have slept.*  
*to sing, cantar, I sung, I have sung.*  
*to send, enviar, I sent, I have sent.*  
*to stand upright, estar direito, I stood upright, I*  
*have stood upright.*  
*to snatch, arrebatat, I snatcht, I have snatcht.*



- to smell, cheirar, I smelt, I have smelt.*  
*to shoot, tirar, I shot, I have shot.*  
*to spend, dispende, I spent, I have spent.*  
*to spring, brotar, I sprung, I have sprung.*  
*to stand, estar, I stood, I have stood.*  
*to sting, picar, I stung, I have stung.*  
*to string, encordoar, I strung, I have strung.*  
*to spill, derramar, I spilt, I have spilt.*  
*to sweat, suar, I sweat, I have sweat.*  
*to seek, buscar, I sought, I have sought.*  
*to set, assentar, I sat, I have sat.*  
*to slide, escorregar, I slid, I have slid.*  
*to spin, fiar, I spun, I have spun.*  
*to say, dizer, I said, I have said.*  
*to speed, expedir, I sped, I have sped.*  
*to sweep, varrer, I swept, I have swept.*  
*to stride, abrir aspernas, I stride, I have strode.*  
*to sleep, resvalar, I slept, I have slept.*  
*to sink, fundir-se, I sunk, I have sunk.*  
*to think, imaginar, I thought, I have thought.*  
*to understand, entender, I understood, I have under-  
stood.*  
*to tell, dizer, I told, I have told.*  
*to teach, ensinar, I taught, I have taught.*  
*to weep, chorar, I wept, I have wept.*  
*to whip, açoitar, I whipt, I have whipt.*  
*to win, ganhar, I won, I have won.*  
*to behold, reparar, olhar com atenção, I beheld, I  
have beheld.*  
*to shut, fechar, I shut, I have shut.*  
*to sling, tirar com funda, I slung, I have slung.*  
 Também o Preterito, e o Participio do Preterito  
 de alguns Verbos irregulares, se podem formar,  
 com facilidade observando as regras seguintes.  
 Os Verbos terminados *em, ed*, tem os seus pre-  
 teritos e Participios *em, ed*, Ex.  
*to bleed, sangrar, I bled, I have bled.*

*to breed*, gerar, *I bred*, *I have bred*.  
*to feed*, pastar, ou apascentar, *I fed*, *I have fed*.  
*to speed*, acelerar, *I sped*, *I have sped*.

Os Verbos que terminaõ *em*, *eep*, fazem *em*, *ept*, Ex.

*to keep*, guardar, *I kept*, *I have kept*.  
*to creep*, engatinhar, *I crept*, *I have crept*.  
*to weep*, chorar, *I wept*, *I have wept*.  
*to sleep*, dormir, *I slept*, *I have slept*.  
*to sweep*, varrer, *I swept*, *I have swept*.

Os que terminaõ, *em*, *end*, os fazem *em*, *ent*, Ex.

*to bend*, dobrar, *I bent*, *I have bent*.  
*to lend*, emprestar, *I lent*, *I have lent*.  
*to send*, enviar, *I sent*, *I have sent*.  
*to spend*, dispende, *I spent*, *I have spent*.

Os que terminaõ, *em*, *ind*, os fazem *em*, *ound*, Ex.

*to bind*, liar, encadernar, *I bound*, *I have bound*.  
*to find*, achar, *I found*, *I have found*.  
*to grind*, moer, *I ground*, *I have ground*.  
*to wind*, dobar, *I wound*, *I have wound*.

Os que terminaõ *em*, *ing*, fazem *em*, *ung*, Ex.

*to sting*, picar, *stung*, *have stung*.  
*to string*, encordoar, *strung*, *have strung*.  
*to wring*, torcer, *wrung*, *have wrung*.  
*to ring*, soar, *rung*, *have rung*.  
*to sing*, cantar, *sung*, *have sung*.  
*to sling*, tirar a funda, *slung*, *have slung*.  
*to fling*, tirar, *flung*, *have flung*.  
*to spring*, brotar, *sprung*, *have sprung*.

Os que terminão em, *ear*, fazem o preterito em, *ere*, ou em, *ore*, e o participio em, *orn*, Ex.

*to wear*, trazer, *wore*, *have worn*.

*to swear*, jurar, *swore*, *have sworn*.

*to bear*, levar, *bore*, *have borne*.

*to tear*, despedaçar, *tore*, *have torn*.

Os que terminão em *ow*, ou *aw*, fazem o preterito em, *ew*, e o participio em, *awn*, ou *own*, Ex,

*to draw*, tirar, *drew*, *have drawn*.

*to blow*, soprar, *blew*, *have blown*.

*to grow*, crescer, *grew*, *have grown*.

*to know*, saber, *knew*, *have known*.

*to throw*, tirar, *threw*, *have thrown*.

### *Dos Adverbos.*

O Adverbo he huá Parte da Oraçaõ, que junta as mais Partes a caba de declarar o seu significado,

#### *Ha Adverbos de Tempo. v. g.*

*to day*, hoje.

*now*, agora.

*presently*, ja, logo.

*immediately*, immediatamente.

*already*, ja.

*latimes*, cedo.

*early*, demadrugada.

*late*, ultimamente.

*yesterday*, hontem.

*formerly* antigamente.

*before*, antes.

*after*, depois.

*hereafter*, da qui adiante.

*shortly*, em breve.

*to morrow*, amenhaa.

*every day*, cada dia.

*continually*, continuamente.

*eternally*, eternamente.

*never*, ja mais, nunca.

*Day and Night*, de Dia, o de Noyte.

*by Day*, de Dia.

*by Night*, de Noyte.

*then*, emtaõ.

*whilst*, entre tanto.

*late*, tarde.

Há Adverbos de lugar,  
v. g.

here, aqui.

there, lá.

this way, por aqui.

hitherto, até aqui.

thitherto, até lá.

below, abaixo.

above, acima.

high, alto.

low, baixo.

near, junto.

far, longe.

aside, de lado.

before, diante.

behind, atrás.

within, dentro.

in, dentro.

out, fora.

without, de fora.

upon, sobre.

under, de baixo.

about, aorredor.

amongst, entre.

between, entre.

beyond, além.

somewhere, em alguma par-  
te.

no where, em nenhuma  
parte.

every where, em toda  
parte.

Há Adverbos de Interro-  
gação.

where, onde?

from whence, dedonde?

which, por onde?

how far, que longe?

how much, quanto?

how many, quantos?

how long, neque longura?

when, quando?

why, porque?

what, que?

how, como?

Há de quantidade.

as much, tanto.

but little, pouco.

few, pouco.

almost, quasi.

little, pouco.

much, muyto.

enough, bastante.

abundantly, abundante-  
mente.

more, mais.

wholly, inteiramente.

infinitely, infinitamente.

superfluously, superflua-  
mente.

all, todo.

nothing, nada.

at most, ao mais.

at least, ao menos.

intirely, inteiramente.

sufficiently, suficiente-  
mente.

none, nada.

too much, muyto.

Há de Numero.

once, huā vês.

thrice, tres vezes.

often



<i>often</i> , frequentemente.	<i>coldly</i> , friamente.
<i>twice</i> , duas vezes.	<i>softly</i> , suave, branda-
<i>sometimes</i> , alguās vezes.	mente.

*Há de Qualidade.*

<i>wisely</i> , sabiamente.	<i>handsomely</i> , fermozamen-
<i>virtuously</i> , virtuozaamen-	te.
<i>prudently</i> , prudentemen-	<i>imprudently</i> , imprudente-
te.	mente.
<i>happily</i> , felismente.	<i>quickly</i> , a pressadamente.
<i>boldly</i> , atrevidamente.	<i>at ease</i> , facilmente.
<i>wickedly</i> , malvadamente.	<i>kneeling</i> , dejuelhos.
<i>passionately</i> , apayxoada-	<i>fasting</i> , em jejum.
mente.	<i>larescent</i> , a; edescaço.
<i>both</i> , quentamente.	<i>secretly</i> , em segredo.
<i>rudely</i> , rudamente.	<i>on purpose</i> , de proposito.
<i>neatly</i> , pura, propria,	<i>heedlessly</i> , negligente-
limpa mente.	mente.
<i>insolently</i> , insolentemen-	<i>by oversight</i> , por negli-
te.	gancia.
<i>readily</i> , promptamente.	<i>on a sudden</i> , repentina-
<i>in fashion</i> , á moda.	mente.
<i>openly</i> , abertamente.	<i>desperately</i> , dezesperada-
<i>standing</i> , de pé.	mente.
<i>backwards</i> , para tráz.	<i>in jest</i> , de zombaria.
<i>heartily</i> , de loração.	<i>in pudding time</i> , oportu-
<i>in earnest</i> , seriamente.	namente.
<i>rashly</i> , iradamente.	<i>on horseback</i> , acavalo.
<i>at random</i> , inconsidera-	<i>in a boat</i> , em barco.
mente.	<i>by sea</i> , por mar.
<i>carelessly</i> , descuydada-	<i>confusedly</i> , confuzamente.
mente.	<i>asunder</i> , separadamente.
<i>pleasantly</i> , agradavelmen-	<i>by stealth</i> , aturtadelas.
te.	<i>in haste</i> , apressadamente.
<i>reasonably</i> , razoadamen-	<i>securely</i> , seguramente.
te, erazoavelmente.	<i>conveniently</i> , convenien-
	temente.
	<i>a-foot</i> , a pé.
	<i>in a Coach</i> , em Coche.
	<i>by Water</i> , por Agua.

*by Land*, por Terra.  
*jointly*, juntamente.  
*by turns*, por tornos.

*Há de Affirmação.*

*yes*, sim.  
*it is true*, he verdade.  
*infallibly*, infalivelmente.  
*truly*, verdadeyramente.  
*assuredly*, seguramente.  
*undoubtedly*, indubitavelmente ou sem duvida.  
*in truth*, em verdade.

*Há de Contradição*

*no*, não.  
*not at all*, totalmente nada.  
*nor*, nem.  
*none*, nada.  
*by no means*, de nehuã maneyra.  
*neither*, nem.

*Há de Ordem.*

*first*, primeyramente.  
*thirdly*, terceyramente.  
*at first*, primeiramente.  
*after*, despois.  
*in a Croua*, em Caterva.  
*secondly*, segundariamente.  
*next*, despois.  
*afore*, antecedentemente.  
*together*, juntamente.

*Há de Concluzão*

*in fine*, finalmente.  
*so that*, com anto que.  
*at last*, ultimamente.

*Das Conjuções.*

A conjunção he `huã Parte da oração, que serve para ajuntar as mais Partes.

*Há Adversativas.*

*but*, mas.  
*though*, aindaque.  
*notwithstanding*, não obstante.  
*nevertheless*, não obstante.  
*however*, não obstante.  
*yet*, com tudo, ainda.

*Há concludentes.*

*in fine*, em fim.  
*so that*, de forte, se bem que.  
*to make an end*, por acabar.

*Há Copulativas.*

*and*, e.  
*both*, assim.  
*also*, tambem.  
*both good, and bad*, assim bom, como maõ.

*Outras*

*Outras Disjunctivas.*

*or*, ou.  
*or else*, aliás.  
*neither*, nem:  
*either*, ou.  
*nor*, nem.

*Outras Condicionais.*

*if*, se.  
*if peradventure*, se por a  
 cazo.  
*on condition that*, com  
 condiçãõ que.  
*so that*, se com tudo.  
*if so be that*, se for assim.  
*unless that*, menos que.

*Outras Cauzais.*

*for*, por.  
*since that*, depoisque.  
*for as much as*, por tanto  
 quanto.  
*to the end that*, a fim que.  
*lest that*, paraquenaõ.  
*whereas*, como querque.  
*therefore*, por tanto.  
*then*, em taõ.  
*seeing that*, á vista.  
*because*, por cauza.

*Das Propozicoes.*

A Propozicão he huã  
 Parte da Oraçãõ, que se  
 põem antes das outras  
 Partes.

*near*, junto.  
*against*, contra, de fron-  
 te.  
*before*, diante.  
*about*, aorredor.  
*through*, por.  
*behind*, atrâz.  
*without*, sem.  
*under*, debaixo.  
*out*, fora.  
*instead*, em lugar.  
*at the Side*, ao Lado.  
*with*, com.  
*in*, em, dentro.  
*into*, dentro.  
*from*, de.  
*towards*, para tal parte.  
*beyond*, a lem.  
*above*, sobre, asima.  
*far*, longe.  
*after*, depois.  
*till*, atheque.  
*untill*, atheque.  
*at*, a.  
*since*, depois.  
*between*, entré.  
*for*, para.

*Das Interjecçoes.*

A Interjecçãõ he huã  
 Parte da Oraçãõ, que  
 mostra os varios affectos  
 do animo.

*Há de Alegria.*

*ah, ah, ah*, ha, ha, ha.  
*come, come*, vamos, vamos.  
*let*

*let us be merry, alegremonos.*

*hang Sorrow, enforca a Penna, a Tristeza.*

*De Socorro.*

*help, help, ajuda, ajuda.*

*fire, fire, fogo, fogo.*

*murder, murder, matador, matador, a qui de l'Rey.*

*De Aversão.*

*fie, fie, fy, fo, fo.*

*De Animar.*

*well, well, bem, bem.*

*só, só, asim, asim.*

*that is well, vay vem.*

*well done, bem feito.*

*have a good Heart, Courage, tem Animo, Valor.*

*De Admiração.*

*hó, hó, hó, hó.*

*o strange, o' milagro.*

*o wonderful, o' maravilha.*

*ô fine that is, que bello que está.*

*De Chamar.*

*Ho there, ho there, ho lá, ho lá.*

*Ho heark, you, you, escuta.*

*De Impedir.*

*Not a Word, nem huā Palavra.*

*Hold your Tongue, callate.*

*Da Sintaxe.*

Esta palavra (Sintaxe) derivada do Grego, he huā ordenada disposiçãõ das oito Partes da Oraçãõ entre si, e por esta razaõ todas as instrucçõis, ou regras, que conduzem para esta ajustada Ordem, estaõ de baixõ deste titullo.

A Sintaxe se divide em Analogia, ou perfeyta, e he commua, e regular; e em Anomola, ou figurada, e he irregular; e se a Parta das Regras.

Por duas vias se dis a Sintaxe Analogia, out perfeyta: huá pella Conveniencia, e Concordancia das palavras



palavras entre Sy, e outra pello Regimem, ou de pendencia que huã dicção tem da outra.

Pello que respeita a Concordancia das palavras entre sy; tres são as Concordancias; a primeyra entre o Nominativo, e o Verbo.

A 2a entre o Adjectivo, e o Substantivo.

A 3a entre o Antecedente, e o Relativo.

Em quanto á primeyra, entra o Nominativo e o Verbo: Quanto encontrates algum Verbo em huã sentença, deves preguntar; quem exercita a significação deste Verbo? e a palavra, ou Nome, que te responde a esta pergunta, essa terás por Nominativo do Verbo, e os concordaras em Numero, e pessoa, v. g.

*I am your Servant*, eu sou vosso Servidor.  
*He is very diligent*, elle he muyto diligente.  
*we are all Friends*, nós somos todos Amigos.  
*you are very civil*, vós sois muy civil.  
*they are very bold*, elles são muy atrevidos.

Nos Exemplos referidos acharás, fazendo a pergunta de quem he o servidor, o diligente, os amigos, o civil, e os atrevidos; que eu, elle, nos, vos, e elles, são os que respondem á ditta pergunta, e que por Consequencia são os Nominativos do Verbo de cada huã das Sentenças; o que estão concordando em Numero, e pessoa, conforme a sua regra: Por que o verbo *am*, está concordado com o Pronome *I*, em Numero, e pessoa no singular, e na primeyra pessoa; e a sua terceira pessoa, *is*, está concordando com o Pronome, *he*, terceyra pessoa e do Numero singular, e *we* primeira pessoa de plural, e *you* segunda, e *they* terceira do mesmo Numero são os Nominativos, de, *are* do Verbo, *am* que sem mudança determinação serve para todas dittas pessoas; e com ellas está concordando em numero, e pessoa.

*Note-se*

*Note-se* que muytos Nominativos juntos Levaõ o Verbo ao plural, e que este Concorde com a pessoa mais nobre.

*I and thou are in Safe-Guard.*

Eu e tu estamos em Seguro.

*Thou and thy Father are in Jeopardy.*

Tu e teu pay estais em grande perigo.

*Thy Father and thy Master send for you.*

Teu Pay e teu Mestre mandaõ porti.

O exemplo está em, *I and thou*, em *thou and thy Father*: E em *thy Father and thy Master*: Os quais Nominativos juntos levaõ o Verbo, *are*, eo, Verbo, *send*, ao Plurar.

*Note-se* que alguãs Vezes o Infinitivo, ou aparte enteyra de huã sentença serve de Nominativo ao Verbo. Ex.

*To rise betimes is a very wholesome Thing.*

Levantar cedo he mais salutifera Couza.

*To know much is a most pleasant Life.*

Saber muyto he amais agradavel Vida.

O exemplo está em, *to rise*, e em, *to know*, Infinitivos, os quais estaõ Servindo de Nominativo ao Verbo, *is*.

*Note-se* Que alguãs Vezes se uza do presente, em lugar do preterito. Ex.

*They go a hunting.*

Elles foraõ á caça.

*They take a stag.*

Elles tomaraõ hum Corço.

*They divide it.*

Elles o dividiraõ.

O exemplo está em, *they go*, *they take*, and *they divide*, presentes do Indicativo, em lugar de *went*, *took*, e *divided*, preteritos perfeytos.

*Note-se*

Notese que tambem alguās Vezes se uza do presente em lugar do Futuro. Ex. .

<i>What Day is To-Morrow?</i>	Que Dia he Manhã?
<i>To-Morrow is Sunday.</i>	A Manhã he Domingo;
<i>When do you go?</i>	Quando vas tu?
<i>I go next Week.</i>	Eu vou a Semana que Vem.
<i>Next Monday is a Holy-Day.</i>	A Semana, que vem he dia Santo.

O Exemplo está na terceira pessoa, *is*, do Verbo, *am*, e em, *I go*, presentes do Indicativo, que estão em lugar de *shall be*, e *shall go*, futuros.

Tambem se uza do tempo presente do Verbo, *I am*, com o Participio do presente do Verbo que se necessita para expressar o presente do ditto Verbo. Ex.

<i>I am going to Church.</i>	Eu vou a' Igreja.
<i>He is going for France.</i>	Elle vay para França.
<i>What is he doing?</i>	Que fas elle?
<i>He is writing.</i>	Elle escreve.
<i>He is reading.</i>	Elle le.
<i>What is she doing?</i>	Que fas ella?
<i>She is dressing her Head.</i>	Ella compoem sua Cabeça

O Exemplo está em, *am*, e, *is*, com os Participios do presente, *going*, *doing*, *writing*, *reading*, e *dressing*, dos Verbos necessarios, em lugar dos presentes, *goeth* ou *goes*, *doeth* ou *does*, &c.

Mas advirtasse, que he necessario, que o Verbo seja de movimento, e que acção tenha duração; por que não sera bem ditto, *he is sitting*, elle ve.

Tambem se uza do presente com o Signal, *did*, ou do preterito perfeyto, para exprimir o preterito imperfeyto. Ex.

*Alexander did take, ou took, great Pleasure in drinking.* *Alexandre tomava grande agrado na bebida.*

*He did take, ou took, such Pleasure in drinking, that Drunkenness was reckoned amongst his Crimes.* *Elle tomava tal prazer em abebida, que a embriagues foy contada entre seus Crimes.*

*The Pagans did worship, ou worshipped, the false Gods.* *Os Paganos adoravaõ os falsos Deuzes.*

O exemplo está em, *did take, ou took*, e em *did worship, ou worshipped*, uzados em lugar do imperfeito.

O Preterito imperfeito nos Verbos de Movimento, se expressão bello imperfeito do Verbo, *am*, com o participio do presente do ditto Verbo de Movimento. Ex.

*Whither were you going Yesterday when I met you?* *Aonde hias tu hontem quando eu te encontrey?*

*I was going to the Exchange.* *Eu hia á bolça.*

*What was he doing?* *Que fazia elle?*  
*He was writing.* *Elle escrevia.*

O exemplo está em, *were*, com o participio *going*, e em, *was going, was doing, was writing*; expressando com elles o preterito imperfeito dos Verbos de movimento, *go, do, e write*.

Alguás Vezes o preterito imperfeito toma este signal, *would*. Ex.

*He would take all the Men that came into the Wood.* *Elle tomava todos os Homens que Vieraõ ao bosque.*



*He would lay an Ambush to slay them.*

Elle fazia huã emboscada para matalos.

*As soon as they had done they would run away.*

Tanto que elles tinhaõ feyto fugiaõ,

*He would throw Money into the Streets!*

Elle lancava dinheyro pellas ruas!

O exemplo está em *take, lay, run, e throw*, todos expressando o preterito imperfeito com o signal, *would*.

O Preterito perfeito simples se exprime pello participio do preterito ajuntandolhe as pessoas: Ex.

*I loved*, eu amey; *I killed*, eu matey, o Exemplo está em, *loved*, e *killed*. Que com o Pronome, *I*, se exprime a primeyra pessoa do preterito dos Verbos *love*, e *kill*.

O Preterito perfeito Composto se exprime com o presente do Verbo *have*, e o participio do preterito do Verbo, que se quer uzar. Ex.

*I have been there several Times.*

Eu estive lá diversas Vezes.

*He hath carried your Letter to the Post-House.*

Elle levou a Vossa ou tua Carta ao Correyo.

*We have drank together a great many Times.*

Nôstemos bebido juntos muytas Vezes.

O Exemplo está em, *have been, hath carried, have drank*, que com seus pronomes, *I, he, we*, estão Expressando o preterito perfeito composto.

Notse que quando sefas Menssaõ de hum certo tempo he melhor servirse do preterito imperfeito, que do perfeito. Ex.

*I was there the last Week.*

Eu estive lá a semana passada.

*He*

<i>He carried your Letter</i>	Elle levo atua, ou
<i>to the Post-House the last</i>	Vossa Carta ao Correyo
<i>Night.</i>	anoite passada.

O exemplo está em *was*, e *carried*, preteritos imperfeytos, expressando por elles o preterito perfeyto, pella certeza do tempo do *sonana*, e noite passada.

O Preterito plusquam perfeyto se exprime com o preterito imperfeyto do Verbo, *have*, e o participio do preterito do Verbo, que se quer uzar; como sedisse na formaçã dos tempos. Ex.

<i>As they had agreed.</i>	Como elles tinhaõ acordado.
----------------------------	-----------------------------

<i>I brought home all the</i>	Eu trouxe acaza todo
<i>Money that I had owing.</i>	odinheyro; que eu tinha
	Gainhado.

<i>I gave to him a Shilling</i>	Eu lhe dey hum Shil-
<i>that I had found.</i>	lim; que eu tinha achado.

O exemplo está em, *had agreed*, *had owing*, *had found*, explicando o plusquam perfeyto dos Verbos de cada sentença, com os seus participios, e o imperfeyto, *had*, do Verbo, *have*.

O uzo do futuro com o Signais *shall* ou *will*, o do Imperativo com o signal, *let*, e o do Optativo, e Conjunctivo com os seus Signais, a qualquer Capacidade fica facil observando as Conjugações.

### *Do uzo do Infinito.*

Serveffe do infinito depois de outro Verbo, quando os dois Verbos pretencem a mesma pessoa. Ex.

<i>I desire to learn Mathe-</i>	Eu dezejo aprender
<i>maticks.</i>	Mathematica.

*Will you learn to write?* Queres aprender a escrever?

O exemplo está em, *to learn*, e *to write*, que estão no infinito por Couza dos Verbos *desire*, &c.

*Do uzo do Supino.*

Serveffe tambem depois de outro Verbo. Ex.

*I have something to do.* Eu tenho alguá Couza para fazer.

*He hath Letters to write.* Elle tem Cartas para escrever.

*I have a great Mind to go to Paris.* Eu tenho grande vontade de hir à París.

O exemplo está em, *to do*, *to write*, postos no Supino depois do Verbo, *have*.

O Gerundio em, *di*, pende de Substantivos, e de Adjectivos. Ex.

*Time of learning.* Tempo de aprender.

*Arts of learning.* Arte de aprénder.

*Diffrus of having.* De zêjozo de ter.

O Gerundio em, *do*, depende de preposição. Ex.

*He spends his Time in gaming and drinking.* Elle gasta seu Tempo em jogar e beber.

*He taketh great Delight in fishing.* Elle tem grande delectação em pescar.

*He spends whole Days in reading.* Elle gasta dias emteyros em ler.

O Exemplo está em, *gaming*, *fishing*, *reading*, Gerundios com adependencia da preposição, *in*.

Notese que o fazer menção de Gerundio em, *di*, e em *do*, he respeitando a terminação Latina; porque

que no *Ingles* tem estes Gerundios a terminação em, *ing*, como se vê nos Exemplos.

Tambem serve para Dativo, com os Adjectivos, que Significão aptidão, e utilidade Ex.

<i>Paper useful for writing.</i>	Papel util para escrever.
<i>Captain idoneus for war.</i>	Capitão Capás para guerra.

O exemplo está em, *for writing*, e *for war*, postos em Dativo aos Adjectivos, *useful*, e *idoneous*.

### *Da segunda Concordancia.*

Os Adjectivos ou sejaõ Nomes, ou Pronomes, ou Participios Concordão com seus Substantivos, em Genero, Numero, e Cazo, antecedendo adittos Substantivos; advertindo que no *Ingles* não tem adifficuldade, e trabalho como no Latim, para a concordancia nestes accidentes, por Servir o Adjectivo (na Lingua *Ingleza*) sem mudança determinacois para todo o Numero, e Genero.

E para saberse com clarezza qual he o Substantivo; quando na o razão se encontra hum Adjectivo; se fará a pergunta, *who*, quem, ou *what*, que couza, he aquillo que o Adjectivo significa; v. g. branco, negro, ou outra qualquer qualidade, ou accidente; e a palavra, que responder á esta pergunta, essa he o Substantivo, com quem hade Concordar o Adjectivo. Ex.

<i>A beautiful Woman pleases.</i>	A Mulher fermosa agrada.
<i>The wealthy Traveller sits still.</i>	O Caminhante cansando se a senta quieto
<i>The filthy Swine are always grunting.</i>	Os porcos Sujos sempre estão grunhindo.
<i>My pale Checks suddenly grew red.</i>	Minha Face amarela de repente se fes vermelha.
<i>Unjust Gains are esteemed.</i>	Lucros injustos são estimados.



O Exemplo está em, *Woman, Traveller, Swine, Cheeks, Gains*, que são os Substantivos com quem concordão os Adjectivos, *beautiful, weary, filthy, my, unjust*.

*Da terceira Concordancia do Relativo com o antecedente.*

Quando se acha hum relativo, se deve tambem fazer a pergunta, *who*, quem? ou *what*? que Couza? he aquillo, que o Verbo, ou Adjectivo que está despois do relativo, significa? e a palavra, que responde a esta pergunta, ella he o antecedente, com quem hade concordar o relativo, em Genero, Numero, e pessoa. Ex.

<i>The Man who is wise.</i>	O Homem, que he sabio.
<i>The Woman who speaketh few Words.</i>	O Mulher, qua fallapoucas Palavras.

Naõ concorda em Cazo; porque deve estar no Cazo, que o Verbo, ou Adjectivo, seguinte reger, ou outra qualquer dicção. Ex.

<i>The Letters which you sent, pleased.</i>	As Cartas, que tu mandaste agradaraõ.
<i>He came in that Place in which.</i>	Ehe veyo a quelle lugar em o qual.

O Exemplo está em os dois relativos, *which*, estando hum em Acuzativo do Verbo, *sent*; e o outro em Ablativo da Preposição, *in*.

Da quarta Concordancia da pergunta com a resposta.

A pergunta concorda com a resposta; isto he que pello mesmo cazo que se fas a pergunta; pello mesmo cazo se da a resposta. Ex.

<i>Who bought this? I.</i>	Quem comprou isto? eu.
<i>Of whom is this, of John, or John's?</i>	De quem he isto? de João?

*What*

*What did you buy? That.* Que comprasse isso ou aquillo?

*To whom did you give? A quem o deste? a elle.*  
*To him.*

*By whom was it bought? Por quem foy comprado? Por elle.*  
*By him.*

O Exemplo esta na pergunta, *who*, que estando em Nominativo, com ella concorda a resposta, *I*; e o mesmo nas mais, *of whom*, *to whom*, *what*, *by whom*, em os quais fazendo-se a pergunta pellos, Genitivo, Accusativo, Dativo, e Ablativo; concordão com elles nos mesmos Cazos as respostas.

Do Regimen, Governo, e Dependencia, que huã dicção, ou palavra tem da outra.

Em toda Oraçãõ, ou Sentença deve de haver Nominativo, e Verbo, e todo o Verbo pessoal do Modo finito Pede antes de si Nominativo, claro, ou escondido: vejasse o que se disse atrás na primeyra Concordancia do Verbo com o Nominativo.

Os Verbos, que significão o estado, condiçãõ habito; gestos, costume, ou constituição de alguã pessoa, ou coza regem antes e depois de si Nominativo. Ex.

<i>He stands streight.</i>	Elle está direito.
<i>He is gone to Bed supperless.</i>	Elle foy para acama sem cea.

O Exemplo está em, *streight*, e *gone*, Nominativos depois dos Verbos, *stands*, e *is*, concordando com os Nominativos antecedentes, *he*, *he*.

Os Verbos passivos; de estimar, conhecer, nomear, chamar regem antes, e depois de si Nominativo. Ex.

<i>Thy Brother is accounted a learned Man.</i>	Teu Irmão he estimado, por hum Homen sabio.
--	---

<i>Thou hast been found often false.</i>	Tu tens sido achado muitas vezes falso.
<i>The King is called Father of the Country.</i>	O Rey he chamado Pay da Patria.
<i>My Brother is named John.</i>	Meu Irmao se chama Joao.

O exemplo está em *my Brother, thou, the King, my Brother*, Nominativos antecedentes aos Verbos *to account, to find, to call, to name*, postos na passiva tendo depois de si os Nominativos, *learned Man, false, Father, John*.

### *Do Regimen do Genitivo.*

Dois Substantivos juntos pertencentes a Couzas diversas, o segundo vay a Genitivo com o signal, *of*, que corresponde a, dos, das, da, de, da Lingua Portugueza. Ex.

<i>The Sight of a fair Picture delights the Eyes.</i>	A Vista de huã boa Pintura de Leyta a Vista.
<i>The Beauty of a handsome Woman is pleasant.</i>	A Belleza da Mulher fermosa he agradavel.

O Signal, *of*, que significa, do, da, de, dos, das, em Portugues; posto depois dos Adjectivos, que significão dezejo, sabedoria, lembrança, Ignorancia, esquecimento, cuydado, modo, culpa, ou outra qualquer paixão do Animo, he signal do Genitivo, que regem dittos Adjectivos. Ex.

<i>Those Men that are desirous of Honour, ought to be studious of Learning and good Manners.</i>	Aquelles Homens, que são dezejozos de Honra, devem ser dezejozos de aprender, e de bons Costumes.
--	---

<i>He, who is always mindful of the Master's Commands, is not fearful of Punishment.</i>	Aquelle que está cuydadozo das ordens do mestre, não está medrozo do Castigo.
<i>Thou art ignorant of natural Things, rude of Letters, and uncertain of the Path of Virtue.</i>	Tu estás ignorante das Couzas naturais, rudo de Letras, e incerto do Atalho da Virtude.
<i>Thou and I are both accused of the same Crime.</i>	Tu e eu somos ambos accusados do mesmo Crime.
<i>The richest Man, careless of his Affairs, is reduced to Poverty; but a poor Man, careful of his, obtaineth Riches.</i>	O mais rico Homen, descuydado de seus Negocios, he reduzido á Pobreza; porem o pobre cuydadozo dos seus, alcança riquezas.

O Exemplo está em, *of Honour, of Learning, of good Manners, of the Master's Commands, of Punishment of natural Things, of Letters, of the Path, of the same Crime, of his Affairs, of his*; os quais estão em, Genitivo dos Adjectivos, *desirous, studious, mindful, fearful, ignorant, rude, uncertain, accused, careless, careful.*

Os Nomes Partativos, os Adjectivos partativamente postos, os Interrogativos, e os Numerais regem Genitivo, *Ex.*

<i>Thou hast chosen two Companions, of which one is a Fool, the other idle.</i>	Tu tens Escolhido dois companheyros, dois quais hum he tonto, o outro preguiçozo.
<i>It is a difficult Thing, which of the two Parties I shall take.</i>	He difficultoza Couza, qual das duas Partes tomarey.

Romulus



Romulus, who built the famous City of Rome, was the first of all the Roman Kings.	Romulo, que edificou a famosa Cidade de Roma, foy o primeiro de todos os Reys Romanos.
---	--

None of the Heathenish Gods delivered his Worshipper.	Nenhum dos Deuzes gentilicos livrou seu Adorador.
---	---

Which is my Book? Neither of these.	Qual he meu Livro? nenhum destes.
-------------------------------------	-----------------------------------

O exemplo está em, *of which, of two, of all the Roman Kings, of the Heathenish Gods, neither of these*, que estão em Genitivo do Numeral, *one*, dos, *putativos, whether, first, none, neither*.

Os Verbos de a Cuzar, condemnar, absolver, e admoestar Regem Genitivo da Couza do que se a Cuza, condemna, absolve, admoesta, e Acuzativo da pessoa como se verá adiante em seu proprio lugar. *Ex.*

He accuseth another Man of Dishonesty.	Elle acuzar outro Homem de desonestidade.
He condemns his Son-in-Law of Wickedness.	Elle condemna seu Genro da Maldade.
We admonish the Grammarians of their Duty.	Nós admoestamos os Grammaticos da sua Obrigação.
He is acquitted of Theft.	Elle he absolvido do Furto.

O Exemplo está em, *of Dishonesty, of Wickedness, of their Duty, of Theft*, os quais estão em Genitivo dos Verbos, *accused, condemns, admonish, acquit*.

Os Adjectivos de Alegria Regem Genitivo, *Ex:*

He is glad of the Honour.	Elle está alegre da Honra.
---------------------------	----------------------------

Os

Os Verbos de enquirir, ouvir Regem Genitivo da pessoa de quem se *enquire*, ou ouve; e Acuzativo da Couza como severã adiante. *Ex.*

<i>He saith, he came to in- quire of him.</i>	Elle dis, que veyo a in- quirir d'elle.
<i>Perhaps you had heard of some Body.</i>	Acazo tu tinhas ouvido de alguem.

As Particulas, *of, from, without*, quando estão antes de algum Verbo, Regem Gerundio ou Participio do presente. *Ex.*

<i>I come from drinking.</i>	Eu venho de beber.
<i>I am never weary of reading.</i>	Eu nunca estou cansado de ler.
<i>Can you not speak with- out laughing?</i>	Não podes falar, sem rir?
<i>Cannot Men be merry without quarrelling?</i>	Não podem os Homens estar alegres sem con- tender?

Os Verbos de receber Regem Genitivo da pessoa de quem se recebe, o Acuzativo da Couza, que se recebe. *Ex.*

<i>I receive my Money of Peter.</i>	Eu recebi o meu di- nheyro de Pedro:
---	---

### *Do Regimen do Dativo.*

A perda ou Proveyto se poem em Dativo idest, a pessoa a quem sedá a perda, ou o Proveyto se poem em Dativo. *Ex.*

<i>Corn grows for Man.</i>	O Trigo cresce para o Homen.
<i>Hay is mowed for Horses, and Cows.</i>	O Feno he segado para Cavalos, e Vacas.

Os

Os Adjectivos que significão Utilidadé, ou aptidão regem Dativo do Couza para que he util, ou apto, *Ex.*

*Paper useful for writing.* Papel util para escrever.

*Captain idoneous to War.* Capitão apto para a Guerra.

Os Verbos, que significão, *to promise*, prometer, *to pay*, pagar, *to give*, dar, *to sell*, vender, *to send*, enviar, *to offer*, offerer, *to bring*, trazer, *to buy*, comprar, *to lend*, emprestar, *to provide*, prover, *to tell*, dizer, regem Dativo da pessoa a quem se promete, &c. e Acusativo a Couza que se promete, &c. *Ex.*

*My Father promised great Rewards to me.* Meu Pay me prometeu grandes Premios.

*The Debtor pays to the Creditor great Sums of Money.* O Devedor paga ao Credor grande soma de dinheiro.

*My Father's Man brought me Bread and Cheese.* O moço de meu Pay me Troxe pão Equeijo.

*My little Brother sent me these Gloves.* Meu irmão Pequeno me mandou estas Luvas.

*My good Uncle will give me many choice Books.* Meu bom tio me dará muytos Livros escolhidos.

*Lend your Boots to the Servant of my Father, or my Father's Servant.* Emprasta tuas Botas ao Moço de meu Pay.

*When they offered Cæsar a Crown and Sceptre he refused them.* Quando offeresseraõ a Cæsar a Coroa, e Sceptro, elle os refuzou.

*Thou hast told thy Father many Lyes.* Tu diceste a teu Pay muitas Mentiras.

O Exemplo está em, *to me*, *to the Creditor*, *me*, *me*, *to the Servant*, *Cæsar*, *thy Father*, que está

tao em Dativo dos Verbos, *promise, pays, brought, sent, give, lend, offered, told.*

Os Verbos de persuadir regem Dativo da Couza a que se persuade, e Acuzativo da pessoa a quem se persuade, *Ex.*

*He persuades me to that.* Elle me persuade aisso.

O Signal, *to*, que em Portuguez significa, aos, a as, a, para, he de Dativo especialmente se se enstina alguma aquizicaõ, *Ex.*

*To give way to the Time.* Dar Tempo ao Tempo.

Antes de palavras Tempo de Movimento insinua dativo, *Ex.*

*He lifteth up his Hands to Heaven.* Elle levanta suas maõs ao Ceo.

*He came to Genoa.* Elle veyo a Genova.

Depois de huã palavra antes dos Adjectivos, que significao, para, promptidaõ, capacidade, ou inclinaçao insinua dativo, *Ex.*

*A ready way to Honour.* Prompto caminho para Honra.

Depois de huã palavra significante, *in Comparison of*, em comparaçao de, insinua dativo, *Ex.*

*Nothing to Perseus, nada a Perseu; i. e. in Comparison of Perseus,* em comparaçao de Perseu.

Depois de huã palavra a que se segue, *according*, conforme, insinua dativo, *Ex.*

*He speaks all according to his Will.* Elle falla tudo conforme a sua Vontade.

*I judge according to my own Sense.* Eu julgo conforme a meu proprio Juizo.

Deante



Deante dapeſſoa, *to whom*, aquem, ou *before whom*, diante quem, alguem ſe queixa, acuzar, condemna, ou falla, inſinua dativo, *Ex.*

*He complains to me by Letter.* Elle ſequeixa á mim por Carta:

*He made Oration to the People.* Elle fêz huá Prática ao Bovo.

Depois de huá palavra, que trâs expreſſão de *Cortezia*, *Courtesy*, ou Favor, *Kindness*, inſinua dativo, *Ex.*

*Your Kindness to me have been very manifest, and very great.* Voſſo Favor para comigo tem ſido muyto manifeſto, e muy grande.

De dilacção, ou prorogação, a the tal Tempo, ſe poem em Dativo, *Ex.*

*The Soldier's Hope is put off to another day.* A Esperança dos Soldados eſtá prorogada outro Dia.

### *Do Acuzativo.*

O Verbo Activo rege Acuzativo, *Ex.*

*We must love God.* Nos devemos amar a Deus.

Os Verbos de acuzar, condemnar, absolver, e admoestar, regem acuzativo da peſſoa, que ſe condemna, acuzar, &c. como ja ſe referio atrás.

Os Verbos de inquirir, ouvir, e receber regem acuzativo da Couza, que ſe inquire, ouve, ou recebe, como atrás ſe fez menção.

Os Verbos de prometer, pagar, dar vender, enviar, offereſer, trazer, comprar, empreſtar, prover, dizer, regem Acuzativo da Couza, que ſe promete, paga, &c. como ja ſe diſſe atrás.

Os Verbos de persuadir regem Acuzativo da peſſoa a quem ſe persuade.

*Do Regimen do Ablativo.*

O Instrumento, Cauza, ou maneyra, com que alguã Couza he feyta so poem em Ablativo. Ex.

<i>The Mind is distracted with Cares and Fears.</i>	O Animo he distrahido com cuydados, e temores.
<i>The Body is broken with Troubles.</i>	O Corpo está quebrado com Trabalhos.
<i>Soldiers overcome Dangers with daring.</i>	Os Soldados vencem Os perigos com a Audacia.
<i>Lions tear Beasts by Strength.</i>	Leões despedação Feras com Força.
<i>Nature is polished by Learning and Art.</i>	A Natureza he pulida com a Erudição e Arte.
<i>Art is perfected by Practice.</i>	A Arte he aperfeiçoada com a Prática.
<i>I struck my Brother, with my Fist and a Stone.</i>	Eu feri meu Irmaõ com meu Punho, e huã Pedra.

*Do Ablativo Absoluto.*

Hum Nome não tendo palavra por quem possa ser governado, se poem em Ablativo absoluto, e em Ingles se conheffe este por trazer antes do Verbo os Signais, *having, being, after, when,* ou outros semelhantes, e neste Cazo o Verbo se exprime pello Participio do preterito ou do presente. Ex.

<i>Having thus encouraged his Soldiers.</i>	Animados assim seos Soldados.
<i>Ptolomy being dead.</i>	Morto Potolmen.
<i>Antiochus being cut off, and all his Army.</i>	Vencido Antioco, e todo seu exercito.

Cleo-

<i>Cleopatra, his Mother-in law, promising him the Kingdom of Egypt.</i>	Prometendo a elle Cleopatra sua Madrasta o Reino de Egypto
<i>When Demetrius knew this.</i>	Cheffendo Demetrio isto,

*Do Uzo dos Artigos.*

Na Lingua Ingleza se uza dos Artigos como na Portugueza. Ex.

<i>The Body and the Soul.</i>	O Corpo, e a Alma.
<i>The Head is the highest.</i>	A Cabeça he o mais alto
<i>The Stomach receiveth</i>	o estomago recebe as
<i>Victuals.</i>	Comidas.
<i>The Heart dieth last.</i>	O Coraçãõ morre ultimo.
<i>The Sight is a fine Thing.</i>	A Villa he huã Bella Couza.

Falando porem de Virtudes, Paixões, Vicios, Artes, e Sciencias, naõ se Uza de Artigo. Ex.

<i>Men must respect Wisdom above Strength.</i>	Os Homens devem respeitar o Juizo mais que a força.
<i>Fools despise Wisdom.</i>	Os Locos desprezaõ o Juizo.
<i>Virtue cannot agree with Vice.</i>	A Virtude naõ pode concordar com o Vicio.
<i>Justice is without Interest.</i>	A Justiça he sem interesse.
<i>Chastity, Modesty, and Humility, are lovely Virtues.</i>	A Castidade, a Modestia e a Humildade, sãõ amaveis Virtudes.
<i>Prudence is the Rule of all Virtues.</i>	A Prudencia he Aregra, de todas as Virtudes.
<i>Pride is the Sin of the Devil.</i>	A Soberba he opecado do Diabo.
<i>Discords are the Ruin of States.</i>	As Discordias sãõ Ruinas dos Estados.

<i>Drunkennes is abominable.</i>	A Bebedice he abomivel.
<i>Anger doth breathe but Arms and Blood.</i>	A Ira respira so Armas, e Sangue.
<i>Philosophy is Mistress of Wisdom.</i>	A Philozophia he Mestra do Juizo.
<i>Musick is pleasant to the Ear.</i>	A Muzica he agradavel ao ouvido.
<i>Writing knoweth nothing, and teacheth all Things.</i>	A Escritura sabe nada e ensina todas as Couzas.
<i>Aritmetick is the Science of Numbers.</i>	A Arismetica he Sciencia de Numeros.

Falando de substancias em geral, principalmente da quellas, que não se contaõ, não se uza de Artigo, *Ex.*

<i>Bread is the staff of Life.</i>	O Paõ he bordaõ da Vida.
<i>If Salt lose its Savour.</i>	Se o Sal perde seu Sabor.
<i>I love Milk, Butter, and Cheese.</i>	Eu amo Leito, Manteiga, e queijo.
<i>Beef is the Partridge of England.</i>	A Vaca he aperdís de Inglaterra.
<i>Mutton is sweeter than Bacon.</i>	O Carneiro he mais doce que o touchinho.
<i>Roast Meat is better than boiled Meat.</i>	A comida Assada he melhor, que cozida.
<i>Wine doth rejoice the Heart.</i>	O Vinho alegra o Coraçãõ.
<i>Beer and Ale are good together.</i>	A Cerveja, e Elá juntas, são boas.
<i>Gold and Silver do all Things.</i>	O Ouro, e Aprata fazem todas as Couzas.
<i>Wheat, Rye and Barley, make Bread.</i>	O Trigo, Senteyo, e sevadas fazem Paõ.
<i>Grass and Hay, is the Food of Cattle.</i>	Aerva, eo Feno são o Alimento do Gado.



<i>Parsley and Sorrel are good in Broth.</i>	O Apio, e as Azedas faõ bons no Caldo.
<i>Garlick stinks.</i>	O Alho fede.
<i>Mustard is good with salt Beef.</i>	A Mostarda he boa com Vaca salgada.
<i>After Dinner Mustard.</i>	Depois de Gentar Mostarda.
<i>Sugar is sweet, but Pepper, Ginger, Nutmeg, and Mace, are not.</i>	O a Sucar de doce; mas a Pimenta, Gingivre nos Noscada e Flor de nos Noscada não o faõ.

Todos os Substantivos, que se podem contar recebem artigo no Singular, mas não no Plurar, *Ex.*

<i>I have a Friend.</i>	Eu tenho hum Amigo:
<i>I have Friends.</i>	Eu tenho Amigos.
<i>I have a good Book.</i>	Eu tenho hum bom Livro.
<i>I have good Books.</i>	Eu tenho bons Livros.
<i>I have bought a Knife.</i>	Eu comprey huá Faca.
<i>I have bought Knives.</i>	Eu comprey Facas.

*Note-se,* que estas Regras só tem Lugar quando se fala de Entidades, e Substancias, em sua Generalidade; porem quando a Generalidade se redúz a Couza particular, em tão seuz de Artigo, *Ex.*

<i>The Love of God.</i>	O Amor de Deus.
<i>The Wisdom of Men is Folly.</i>	O Juizo dos Homens he Louquice.
<i>I thank you for the Wine, that you sent.</i>	Eu te dou as Graças pello Vinho, que me mandaste.
<i>I have spent all the Gold and Silver, that I received Yesterday.</i>	Eu dispendi todo o Ou- ro, e Prata, que rece- bi Hontem.

*The Mutton that we did eat the other Day was very sweet.* O Carneiro, que nós comemos o outro Dia, era muyto doce.

*The Beer that I drank last Night was good.* A Cerveja que eu bebi a Noyte passada era boa.

*The Books, that, I bought, are good.* Os Livros, que comprey são bons.

Falando de Couzas diferentes não se repete o Artigo, Ex.

*The Kings and Princes.* Os Reys, e Principes.  
*The Eyes and Ears.* Os Olhos, e Orelhas.  
*The Arms and Legs.* Os Braços, e Pernas.  
*The Father, Mother and Children.* O Pay, May, e Crianças.

*The Brother and Sister.* O Irmão, e Irmã.  
*The Butter and Cheese.* A Manteiga, e Queijo.  
*The Light and Darknes.* A Lús, e Escuridade.

Quando se fala das Partes do Corpo, em Lugar do Artigo, se Uza dos Pronomes possessivos, Ex.

*My Head aches.* Medoe acabeça.  
*My Eyes are sore.* Meus olhos estaõ chagados.

*My Leg is broken.* Minha Perna está quebrada.

*I have burnt my Leg.* Queimey a Perna.

*Is your Belly full?* Está Chea tua barriga?  
*I will break your Neck.* Te quebrarey O pescoço.  
*He hath lost his sight.* Elle perdeu sua Vista.  
*Wash your Hands.* Lava tuas Mãos.

O Genitivo de pertençaõ ou possessaõ, como chamaõ os Lanitos, em Lugar quando se fala deduas  
 Z 2 pessoas

peſſoas, ou Couzas pertencentes hua ã outra eo tal Genitivo ſe antepoem ſem Artigo, a juntandolhe hum, s, e interpondo hum Apoſtrofe na Forma abaixo.

*The King's Son.*

O Filho do Rey.

*The Queen's Coach.*

O Coche da Rainha.

*The Brother's Wife.*

A Mulher do Irmaõ.

*My Father's House.*

A Caza de meu Pay.

*My Sister's Gloves.*

As Luvas de minha Irmaõ.

*My Cousin's Book.*

O Livro de meu Primo.

*My Uncle's Son.*

O Filho de meu Tio.

Porem quando dois Subſtantivos vem juntos, e pertencem a Couzas diverſas o ſegundo vay a Genitivo com o Artigo, *of* Signal do Genitivo, como ſe diſſe no Regimen do Genitivo.

Quando ſe fala de Materia de que alguã Couza he feyta, a Materia ſe poem em Genitivo, antecedendo o tal Genitivo a o Nominativo ſem Artigo.  
*Ex.*

*A brick House.*

Huã Caza de pedra.

*A silver Dish.*

Hum prato de Prata.

*A scarlet Cloak.*

Huma Capa de eſcarlate.

*A Silk Stocking.*

Huã meya de Seda.

*A wooden Box.*

Huã caixa de Paõ.

*A Horn Comb.*

Hum pente de Corno.

*Br ss Money.*

Dinheiro de Cobre.

*A Holland Shirt.*

Huã Camiza de Olanda.

Quando ſe fala, de Couzas que ſe pezaõ, contaõ, ou medem, a Couza contada, pezada, ou medida ſe poem em Genitivo, poſpoſto o tal Genitivo com o Artigo, *of*, *Ex.*

*A Glass of Wine.*

Hum Vazo de Vinho.

*A Barrel of Beer.*

Hum Barril de Cerveja.

<i>A Dish of Meat.</i>	Hum Prato de Carne.
<i>A Dozen of Lemons.</i>	Huã Duzia de Limoes,
<i>A Score of Oranges.</i>	Huã Vintena de Laran- jas.
<i>A Pint of Wine.</i>	Huã Pinta de Vinho.
<i>A Bushel of Wheat.</i>	Huma Fanega de Trigo.
<i>An Ell of Cloth.</i>	Huã Vara de Pano.
<i>A Pound of Butter.</i>	Hum Arratel de Man- teiga.
<i>A Yard of Ribbon.</i>	Huã Jarda de Fita.

Quando se fala de Muzica, ou Instrumentos, se Uza do Verbo, *to play*, com o Artigo, *the*, acompanhado dās Prepozições, *on*, ou, *upon*, Ex.

<i>To play upon the Fiddle.</i>	tanger Rabeca.
<i>To play upon the Lute.</i>	tanger a Laude.
<i>To play upon the Guitar.</i>	tanger Viola.
<i>To play upon the Verginal.</i>	tanger Cravo.

Falando de Jogos de Gaiñar, ou perder, se Uza do mesmo Verbo, *to play*, com a Prepozição, *at*, Ex.

<i>To play at Piquet.</i>	jugar os Piques.
<i>To play at Cards.</i>	jugar as Cartas.
<i>To play at Pins.</i>	jugar aos Paões.
<i>To play at Tennis.</i>	jugar a Pella.
<i>To play at Dice.</i>	jugar os Dados.

*Da pergunta, where, aonde?*

Quando a pergunta, ou questão se fas por, *where*, sem haver Movimento, a Lingua Ingleza, se serve nos Nomes proprios de Villas, Barrios, Aldeas da Propozição *at*, que significa, *em*, na Portugueza, Ex.

<i>The King of England is</i>	O Rey de Inglaterra es-
<i>at London, at Wind-</i>	tá em Londres, em
<i>sor, at New-Market.</i>	Uinsar, no Mercado Novo.



Tambem se uza de, *at*, com a palavra, *Home*, porem fallando-se de Provincias ou Reynos, se serve da Propizicao, *in* Ex.

<i>The King is in England,</i>	El Rey está em <i>Ingla-</i>
<i>in Holland, in Picar-</i>	<i>terra, em Olanda,</i>
<i>dy, in the Country.</i>	<i>em Picardia, em o</i>
	<i>Campo.</i>

*Da pergunta, whither, para onde?*

Quando há Movimento nos Nomes proprios de Villas, cidades, e Barrios se Uza de, *to*, Ex.

<i>I go to I ondon.</i>	Eu vou á <i>Londres.</i>
<i>I go to Versailles.</i>	Eu vou á <i>Varselles.</i>

Tambem se uza de, *to*, nos Nomes de Reinos, Provincias, havendo Movimento, Ex.

<i>I will go to England.</i>	Eu hirey a <i>Inglaterra.</i>
<i>I am going to Holland.</i>	Eu vou a <i>Olanda.</i>

Com a palavra, *Home*, se supprime o *to*, Ex:  
*He goes Home.*                      Elle vay a Caza.

*Da pergunta, from whence? de donde.*

Quando a pergunta se fas, *from whence?* A Lingua Ingleza uza de, *from*, que significa, de, na Portugueza; em todos os Nomes, sem excepção de Reynos, nem Provincias sendo proprios, Ex.

<i>From whence come you?</i>	De donde vens?
<i>I come from England,</i>	Eu venho de <i>Inglaterra,</i>
<i>from London, from</i>	<i>de Londres, de Var-</i>
<i>Versailles.</i>	<i>felles.</i>

Mas em os outros Nomes que não são proprios, se uza de *from*, com, *the*, Ex.

<i>I come from the Market.</i>	Eu venho do Mercado.
<i>I come from the Church.</i>	Eu venho da Igreja.
<i>I come from the Country.</i>	Eu venho do Campo.

*Da*

*Da pergunta, by which Way? porque Parte?*

Em todos os Nomes proprios, uza de, *by*, Ex.

*I will go by France, by* Eu hirey por *França*, por  
Paris *by* Versailles. *Pariz, por* Varselles.

Em todos outros Nomes, se ajunta o Artigo, *the*,  
Ex.

*I passed by the Window.* Eu passey, pella Janella.  
*I passed by the Door.* Eu passey pella Porta.  
*I passed by the Master's* Eu passey pello Campo,  
*Country.* do amo.

Do Uzo he hum Verbo pessoal em todas as ac-  
ções; Affirmativas, Interrogativas, e Negativas.

*Prezent.*

<i>I do see.</i>	eu vejo.
<i>I do not see.</i>	naõ vejo.
<i>Do I see?</i>	vejo eu.
<i>Do I not see?</i>	naõ vejo eu?
<i>He doth see.</i>	elle ve.
<i>He doth not see.</i>	elle naõ ve.
<i>Doth he see?</i>	vé elle?
<i>Doth he not see?</i>	naõ ve' elle?
<i>We do see.</i>	nós vemos.
<i>We do not see.</i>	nós naõ vemos.
<i>Do we see?</i>	vemos nós?
<i>Do we not see?</i>	naõ vemos nos?
<i>You do see.</i>	vós vedes.
<i>You do not see.</i>	vos naõ vedes.
<i>Do you see?</i>	vedes vós.
<i>Do you not see?</i>	naõ vedes vós?
<i>They do see.</i>	elles veem.
<i>They do not see.</i>	elles naõ veem.
<i>Do they see?</i>	veem elles?
<i>Do they not see?</i>	naõ veem elles?

*Imperf.*

*Imperf.*

<i>I did see.</i>	<i>eu via.</i>
<i>I did not see.</i>	<i>eu não via.</i>
<i>Did I see?</i>	<i>via eu?</i>
<i>Did I not see?</i>	<i>não via eu?</i>

*Perf.*

<i>I have seen.</i>	<i>eu tenho visto.</i>
<i>I have not seen.</i>	<i>eu não tenho visto.</i>
<i>Have I seen?</i>	<i>tenho eu visto?</i>
<i>Have I not seen?</i>	<i>não tenho eu visto, &amp;c.</i>
<i>You have done.</i>	<i>vos tendes feito.</i>
<i>You have not done.</i>	<i>vos não tendes feito.</i>
<i>Have you done?</i>	<i>tendes vos feito?</i>
<i>Have you not done?</i>	<i>não tendes feito?</i>

*Plusq.*

<i>I had loved.</i>	<i>eu tinha amado.</i>
<i>I had not loved.</i>	<i>eu não tinha amado.</i>
<i>Had I loved?</i>	<i>tinha eu amado?</i>
<i>Had I not loved?</i>	<i>não tinha eu amado?</i>

*Futuro.*

<i>I will do.</i>	<i>eu farey.</i>
<i>I will not do.</i>	<i>eu não farey.</i>
<i>Shall I do?</i>	<i>farey eu?</i>
<i>Shall I not do?</i>	<i>não farey eu?</i>

*Imperf.*

<i>Let him do.</i>	<i>faça elle.</i>
<i>Let him not do.</i>	<i>não faça elle.</i>
<i>Let us go.</i>	<i>vamos.</i>
<i>Let us not go.</i>	<i>não vamos.</i>
<i>Speak.</i>	<i>falla.</i>
<i>Do not speak, &amp;c.</i>	<i>não falles.</i>

Do Uzo de hum Verbo Impessoal na vóz activa.

<i>It rains.</i>	chove.
<i>It doth not rain.</i>	naõ chove.
<i>Doth it rain?</i>	chove?
<i>Doth it not rain?</i>	naõ chove?
<i>It did rain.</i>	chovia.
<i>It did not rain.</i>	naõ chovia.
<i>Did it rain?</i>	chovia?
<i>Did it not rain?</i>	naõ chovia?
<i>It hath rained.</i>	tem chovido.
<i>It hath not rained.</i>	naõ tem chovido.
<i>Hath it rained?</i>	tem chovido?
<i>Hath it not rained?</i>	naõ tem chovido?
<i>It will rain.</i>	choverá.
<i>It will not rain.</i>	naõ choverá.
<i>Will it rain?</i>	choverá?
<i>Will it not rain?</i>	naõ chovera?
<i>Let it rain.</i>	chova.
<i>God grant it may rain.</i>	Oxalá chova.
<i>O would to God it might rain!</i>	Oxalá chovera!

E por esta forma se seguem os mais.

<i>It blows, ou it doth blow.</i>	aventa.
<i>It freezes, ou it doth freeze.</i>	gella.
<i>It thaws, &amp;c.</i>	desgella.
<i>It doth snow.</i>	neva.
<i>It grieves me.</i>	me ancea.
<i>It behoveth me.</i>	me convem.
<i>It concerns me.</i>	me importa.
<i>It concerns you.</i>	te importa.
<i>It is hot.</i>	está quente.
<i>It is cold.</i>	está frio.
<i>It is fair Weather.</i>	está bom Tempo.



<i>It is foul Weather.</i>	está maõ Tempo:
<i>It is dirty.</i>	está lamacento.
<i>It is dry.</i>	está seco.
<i>It falls out sometimes.</i>	a conteece alguás vezes.
<i>It is good to be here.</i>	está bom para estar aqui.
<i>It is not good to travel in Winter.</i>	Naõ he bom caminhar de Inverno.
<i>It is dangerous.</i>	he perigozo.
<i>It is better to be alone, than with bad Company.</i>	he melhor estar só que com má Companhia.
<i>It is better to dine late, than never.</i>	melhor he gentar tarde, que nunca.
<i>It is better to bow than to break.</i>	melhor he dobrar, que quebrar.

Do Uzo do Verbo, *to be*, impessoalmente affirmando.

<i>there is.</i>	está.
<i>there was.</i>	estava.
<i>there hath been.</i>	esteve ou tem estado.
<i>there had been.</i>	tinha estado.
<i>there will be.</i>	estará.
<i>let there be.</i>	esteja.

*Preguntando.*

<i>is there?</i>	está?
<i>was there?</i>	estava?
<i>hath there been?</i>	esteve, ou tem estado?
<i>had there been?</i>	tinha estado?
<i>will there be?</i>	estará?
<i>would there be?</i>	estaria?

Do uzo do Verbo, *must*, dever, ou necessitar.

He Verbo defectivo, se uza de Tempo presente fazendo hum sentido de futuro.

<i>I must go.</i>	eu devo ou necessito hir.
<i>I must do that.</i>	eu devo fazer aquillo.
<i>You must do that.</i>	deves fazer aquillo.
<i>You must prepare.</i>	necessitas preparar.
<i>They must learn.</i>	devem aprender.
<i>We must have Care.</i>	devemos ter Cuydado.
<i>We must all die.</i>	devemos morrer todos.
<i>We must all wonder.</i>	naõ devemos admirar.

O Imperfeyto deste Verbo se, Expressa pella particula, *should*.

<i>You should have done that.</i>	devias ter feito aquillo.
<i>I should have gone there.</i>	eu devia ter hido lá.

Para os outros Tempos he necessario uzar de Paraphrazes, formandoos com o auxiliar, *to be*, e o Adjectivo, *needful*, que significa Couza necessaria, v. g. para formar o preterito perfeito, se dirá.

*It hath been needful.* foy necessario.

E da mesma Sorte os mais, &c.

Do uzo do Verbo impessoal na voz passiva.

O Verbo impessoal nesta vóz passiva, na Lingua Ingleza; huás vezes se exprime pella dicção, *they*, v. g.

<i>they speak.</i>	falasse.
<i>they speak good French at Blois.</i>	falasse bom Frances em Blois.
<i>they drink good Wine in France.</i>	bebesse bom Vinho em França.
<i>they speak better English in London, than any where else.</i>	falasse melhor Ingles em Londres, que em outra qualquer parte.
<i>they eat good Cream at Blois.</i>	comesse boa nata em Blois,

Outras

Outras vezes se exprime pellas dicções, *Men, People, one*, v. g.

*Men know that well.*

sabesse bem isso.

*Men have not all that they wish for.*

naõ se tem quanto se deseja.

*One commanded me to do.*

emcomendosse a fazer.

*Men lose many Things for Want of asking.*

perdense muytas Couzas, por falta de Preguntar.

*People talk of that.*

falasse disso.

*One told me so.*

assim se medice.

*People tell a great many Lies.*

se dizem muytas Mentiras.

Mas mais communmente se uza do Verbo, *to be*, e do Participio do preterito do Verbo, conforme o que se quer expressar, v. g.

*It is said,*

se dis,

*Good Wine is drank in France.*

bom Vinho se bebe em França.

*The best English is spoken at London.*

o melhor Inglês se falla em Londres.

*That is well known, I have been commanded.*

isso bem se sabe, fuy mandado.

*Many Things are lost for Want of asking.*

muytas Couzas se perdem por falta de Preguntar.

*It will be found.*

se achará.

*It will be done.*

se fará.

*Roses are found among Thorns.*

se achão Rozas entre Espinhos.

*A Friend is known in Necessity.*

o Amigo se conhece na Necessidade.

*Pequenos Dialogos para Principiantes.* *Small Dialogues for Beginners.*

*Palavra por Palavra.* *Verbatim.*

I.

De donde venst tu Senhor?

*From whence come you Sir?*

Eu venho da nossa Igreja comminha May.

*I come from our Church with my Mother.*

Tens tu ouvido hum bom Sermão?

*Have you heard a good Sermon?*

Muyto bom, e muyto científico.

*Very good, and very learned.*

Quem ha pregado esta Manham?

*Who hath preached this Morning?*

Elle he o Senhor Lucas vosso Amigo.

*It is Mr. Lucas your Friend.*

Elle he hum honesto Homem.

*He is a very honest Man.*

Elle faz muyto bons Sermons.

*He maketh very good Sermons.*

Onde vas tu a gora?

*Wether go you now?*

Agentar, e entã aver hum Amigo

*To Dinner, and then to see a Friend*

Novamente vindo do Campo.

*Newly come from the Country.*

Queres tu gentar com migo?

*Will you dine with me?*

Que tens tu para gentar?

*What have you for Dinner?*

Nos temos alguã Vaca, algum Carneiro;

*We have some Beef, some Mutton;*

Alguma Vitela, algum Cordeyro, alguns Graos;

*Some Veal, some Lamb, some Peas;*

Hum par de Coelhos, huã Salada.

*A Couple of Rabbits, and Sallad.*



Eu não posso gentar  
comtigo hoje.

Elle será para outra  
ocaziaõ.

A Deus, eu sou teu  
Servidor.

Eu sou vossõ com to-  
do meu Coraçãõ.

*I cannot dine with you  
to-day.*

*It shall be for another  
Time.*

*Farewell, I am your  
Servant.*

*I am yours with all my  
Heart.*

## II.

Onde queres tu hir  
ésta tarde.

Vesta a *Greenwich* ou  
*Windsor*.

Quereis vos hir a Pé,  
ou em Coche?

A Cavallo, ou em Ba-  
tel?

Vamõs em hum Batel  
eute rogo;

Porem antes bebamos  
juntos

Huã Botelha de Vinho  
em ésta Taverna.

Rapãs, chama teu A-  
mo; onde está elle?

Senhor, elle he hido  
a o Campo

Com sua mulher e  
suas Crianças.

Eu posso tirar hum  
taõ bom Vinho como  
qualquer Homem em  
*Inglaterra*.

Vay depressa, aviate,  
despacha, corre.

*Whither will you go this  
Afternoon?*

*Let us go to Greenwich  
or Windsor.*

*Will you go on Foot or  
in a Coach?*

*On Horseback, or in a  
Boat?*

*Let us go into a Boat I  
pray you;*

*But before let us drink  
together*

*A Bottle of Wine in this  
Tavern.*

*Boy, call your Master;  
where is he?*

*Sir, he is gone into the  
Country*

*With his Wife and his  
Children.*

*I can draw as good  
Wine as any Man in Eng-  
land.*

*Go quickly, make haste,  
run.*

Entre tanto concertemos hum Batel.

Com este Barqueiro:

Quanto tomáras tu da qui a *Greenwich*?

Dois Xilins, Senhor.

Isto he muyto tu terás hum.

Vay, traze teu Batel, corre depressa.

Rapás tira outra Botelha devinho.

Traze hum vidro, lava o bem.

A vossa faude, Senhores, acabemos.

Bebe todo, paguemos e vamos.

Vos estais muy apressado; porque tão sedo

Eu quero tornar sedo; e eu tambem.

*In the mean Time let us bargain for a Boat.*

*With this Waterman.*

*What will you take from hence to Greenwich?*

*Two Shillings, Sir.*

*It is too much, you shall have one.*

*Go fetch your Boat, run quickly.*

*Boy, draw another Bottle of Wine.*

*Bring a glass, wash it well.*

*To your Health, Gentlemen, let us make an End.*

*Drink all, let us pay and be gone.*

*You are very hasty, why so soon.*

*I will return betimes; and I also.*

### III.

Eres tu o Mestre da tenda?

Sim, Senhor, a vosso Serviço.

Entre Vm<sup>ce</sup>.

Tens tu alguãs boas Luvas?

Mostrame alguãs das melhores.

A palpa estas, prova-as.

Ellas são muyto brandas, e huã boa Cor.

*Are you the Master of the Shop?*

*Yes, Sir, at your Service.*

*Come in, Sir.*

*Have you any good Gloves.*

*Shew me some of the best.*

*Feel this Pair, try them.*

*They are very soft, and a good Colour.*

Ellas

Ellas são muy pequenas, ellas são muy estreitas.

*They are too little, they are too narrow.*

Quanto pedes tu por estas aqui?

*What do you ask for these here?*

Meya Coroa.

*Half a Crown.*

Esse preço não he razoavel.

*That Price is not reasonable.*

Tem, ahy estão dois Xilins.

*Hold, there is two Shillings.*

Tens tu Camaras para alugar?

*Have you Chambers to lett?*

Vem dentro se te agrada, tu as veras.

*Come in if you please, you shall see them.*

Esta Caza he muyto bella,

*This House is very fine,*

Mas as escadas são muyto escuras.

*But the Stairs are very dark.*

Quanto pedes tu por estas duas Camaras?

*What do you ask for these two Chambers?*

Queres tu dar-me trez Livras a o Mez.

*Will you give me three Pounds a Month?*

Dame Sinal, o Concerto esta feito.

*Give me Earnest, the Bargain is made.*

Ahy está huã Coroa, estas tu contente?

*There is a Crown, are you content?*

Sim Senhor, vem quando tu quizeres.

*Yes, Sir, come when you will.*

#### IV.

Sois vós Ingles, Senhor?

*Are you an Englishman, Sir?*

Sim, Madama, a teu serviço.

*Yes Madam, at your Service.*

Eu estou muyto alegre de encontrar a ty aqui.

*I am very glad to meet you here.*

Que dizes tu de esse  
Pays?

*What say you of this  
Country?*

Elle he o mais bello  
Pays do Mundo.

*It is the finest Country  
in the World.*

Tens tu estado em Ve-  
neza?

*Have you been at Ve-  
nice?*

Sim, Madama, ella he  
duã bella Cidade.

*Yes, Madam, it is a  
fine City.*

Sabest tu falar *Italiano*?

*Can you speak Italian?*

Eu emtendo, melhor  
do que falo.

*I understand better than  
I speak.*

Queres tu gentar com  
migo hoje?

*Will you dine with me  
to-day?*

Eu me alegrarey de  
vossa Companhia.

*I shall be glad of your  
Company.*

Naõ posso por certo,  
tenho que fazer.

*I cannot indeed, I have  
Business to do.*

Mas eu virey a Menha  
sem falta.

*But I will come to mor-  
row without fail.*

Vos sereys sempre pre-  
bem vindo.

*You shall be always  
welcome.*

Trazey vossa Irmaõ  
com vós.

*Bring your Sister along  
with you.*

V.

Irmaõ aqui está vosso  
Mestre.

*Brother, here is your  
Master.*

Vinde a escrever.

*Come to write.*

Eu naõ posso em ver-  
dade, eu estou muy do-  
ente.

*I cannot indeed, I am  
very sick.*

Vos estais sempre in-  
disposto quando vos ve-  
des vosso Mestre.

*You are always indis-  
posed when you see your  
Master.*

Vos estais porquicozo,  
minha May estara agas-  
tada.

*You are lazy, my Mo-  
ther will be angry.*

A a

Eu



Eu aprenderey mais a manhã de Manhã.

Senhor, demorate mais com migo.

Eu tenho huã grande vontade de aprender hoje.

Agora eu começo a estar cansado.

Eu imagino que he bastante por Agora.

Onde queres tu hir está tarde?

Eu quero hir ver nosso Amigo Thomas.

Te rogo lhe des meus Recados.

Eu quero, eu não faltarey.

*I will learn more to-morrow Morning.*

*Sir, stay longer with me.*

*I have a great Mind to learn to-day.*

*Now I begin to be weary.*

*I think it is enough for this Time.*

*Whither will you go this Afternoon?*

*I will go to see our Friend Thomas.*

*I pray you give him my Compliments.*

*I will, I shall not fail.*

Huã Collecção de Verbos Inglezes e Portuguezes para expressar as acções mais ordinarias.

*A Collection of Portuguese and English Verbs to express most common Actions.*

*To eat, comer.*

*To drink, beber.*

*To taste, provar.*

*To chew, mastigar.*

*To gnaw, roer.*

*To swallow, engulir.*

*To fast, jejuar.*

*To breakfast, almoçar.*

*To dine, jantar.*

*To sup, ceiar.*

*To treat, convidar.*

*To be hungry, ter fome.*

*To be dry, ter sede.*

*To fill or satisfy, satisfazer.*

*To have a Stomach, ter appetite.*

*To drink hard, beber muito.*

*To get drunk, embebedar-se.*

<i>to go to Bed,</i> <i>hir para</i> <i>acama.</i>	<i>to rest, or repose,</i> <i>des-</i> <i>cançar.</i>
<i>to sleep,</i> <i>dormir.</i>	<i>to snore,</i> <i>roncar.</i>
<i>to awake,</i> <i>acordar.</i>	<i>to dream,</i> <i>sonhar.</i>
<i>to watch,</i> <i>vegiar.</i>	<i>to rise,</i> <i>levantar.</i>
<i>to dress one's self,</i> <i>com-</i> <i>porse, ou vestirse.</i>	<i>to powder one's Hair,</i> <i>polvilhar o Cabelo.</i>
<i>to undress one's self,</i> <i>dis-</i> <i>pirse.</i>	<i>to curl one's Hair,</i> <i>em-</i> <i>crespar o Cabello.</i>
<i>to put on one's Stock-</i> <i>ings,</i> <i>calçar as meyas.</i>	<i>to paint one's self,</i> <i>pin-</i> <i>tar-se.</i>
<i>to put on one's Shoes,</i> <i>calçar os Sapatos.</i>	<i>to wash one's Hands,</i> <i>lavar-se as mãos.</i>
<i>to pull off one's Stock-</i> <i>ings, or Shoes,</i> <i>descalçar</i> <i>as meyas ou os Sapatos.</i>	<i>to put on one's Hat,</i> <i>por-se o Chapeo.</i>
<i>to comb one's Head,</i> <i>pentear a Cabeça.</i>	<i>to button one's self,</i> <i>abo-</i> <i>toarse.</i>
<i>to dress one's Head,</i> <i>tou-</i> <i>car a Cabeça.</i>	<i>to lace one's self,</i> <i>ata-</i> <i>car-se.</i>

*Acções naturais dos Homens.*

*Natural Actions of Men.*

<i>to laugh,</i> <i>rir.</i>	<i>to hear,</i> <i>ouvir.</i>
<i>to sing,</i> <i>cantar.</i>	<i>to spit,</i> <i>cuspir.</i>
<i>to cry, or weep,</i> <i>chorar.</i>	<i>to smell,</i> <i>cheirar.</i>
<i>to sigh,</i> <i>suspirar.</i>	<i>to blow one's Nose,</i> <i>asnar.</i>
<i>to groan,</i> <i>gemer.</i>	<i>to see,</i> <i>ver.</i>
<i>to sob,</i> <i>salugar.</i>	<i>to look,</i> <i>reparar.</i>
<i>to sneeze,</i> <i>cusparrar.</i>	<i>to bleed,</i> <i>sangrar.</i>
<i>to gape,</i> <i>bocejar.</i>	<i>to sweat,</i> <i>suar.</i>
<i>to blow,</i> <i>soprar.</i>	<i>to wipe,</i> <i>limpar.</i>
<i>to whistle,</i> <i>suvlar.</i>	<i>to rub,</i> <i>estregar.</i>
<i>to hearken,</i> <i>escutar.</i>	<i>to shake,</i> <i>chocalhar.</i>

# 356 Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.

<i>to tremble, tremar.</i>	<i>to tickle, fazer cocegas.</i>
<i>to scratch, arranhar.</i>	<i>to feel, apalpar.</i>
<i>to pinch, beliscar.</i>	

## To study, Estudar.

<i>ler, to read.</i>	<i>corregir, to correct.</i>
<i>escrever, to write.</i>	<i>borrar, to blot out.</i>
<i>aprender, to learn.</i>	<i>traduzir, to translate.</i>
<i>decorar, to get by Heart.</i>	<i>começar, to begin.</i>
<i>aproveytar, to improve.</i>	<i>continuar, to continue, to go on.</i>
<i>assignar, to sign, or subscribe.</i>	<i>acabar, to make an end.</i>
<i>dobrar, to fold up.</i>	<i>finalizar, to finish.</i>
<i>selar, to seal.</i>	<i>poder, to be able.</i>
<i>por Osobreção, to put the Supercription.</i>	<i>querer, to be willing.</i>

## To speak, falar.

<i>pronunciar, to pronounce.</i>	<i>to bid.</i>
<i>fazer accento, to accent.</i>	<i>reprehenher, to chide.</i>
<i>dizer, to say.</i>	<i>obedecer, to obey.</i>
<i>contar, to tell.</i>	<i>confessar, to confess, ou to own.</i>
<i>relatar, to relate.</i>	<i>asegurar, to assure.</i>
<i>gritar, to cry out.</i>	<i>negar, to deny.</i>
<i>chamar, to call.</i>	<i>proibir, to prohibit, ou forbid.</i>
<i>preguntar, to ask.</i>	<i>queixar-se, to complain.</i>
<i>responder, to answer.</i>	<i>contender, to contend.</i>
<i>cabar, to hold one's Tongue.</i>	<i>disputar, to dispute.</i>
<i>ensinar, to teach.</i>	<i>razoar, to reason.</i>
<i>instruir, to instruct.</i>	
<i>mandar, to command, ou</i>	

*Effects of the Mind.*

*Efeitos do Pençamento.*

conhecer, *to know.*  
 imaginar, *to imagine.*  
 agradar, *to fancy.*  
 crer, *to believe.*  
 duvidar, *to doubt.*  
 suspeitar, *to suspect.*  
 cuidar, *to think.*  
 lembrar, *to remember.*  
 esquecer, *to forget.*  
 dezejar, *to wish.*

esperar, *to hope.*  
 temer, *to fear.*  
 dissimular, *to dissemble.*  
 fingir, *to feign.*  
 provar, *to try.*  
 julgar, *to judge.*  
 concluir, *to conclude.*  
 rezolver, *to resolve.*  
 decider, *to decide.*

*Of Love and Hatred.*

*Do Amor, e Odio.*

amar, *to love.*  
 acariciar, *to caress.*  
 lizonjear, *to flatter.*  
 abraçar, *to embrace.*  
 beijar, *to kiss.*  
 saudar, *to salute.*  
 reverenciar, *to make a*  
*Bow or Courtesy.*  
 louvar, *to praise or com-*  
*mend.*  
 nutrir, *to feed.*  
 corrigir, *to correct.*  
 castigar, *to chastise.*  
 ameaçar, *to threaten.*  
 bater, *to beat.*  
 açoitar, *to whip.*  
 perdoar, *to forgive.*

aborrecer, *to hate.*  
 culpar, *to blame.*  
 comprimentar, *to compli-*  
*ment.*  
 felicitar, *to wish Joy.*  
 congratular, *to congra-*  
*tulate.*  
 acuzar, *to accuse.*  
 escuzar, *to excuse.*  
 condenar, *to condemn.*  
 abusar, *to abuse.*  
 punir, *to punish.*  
 querelar, *to quarrel.*  
 peleijar, *to fight.*  
 vencer, *to overcome.*  
 despir, *to strip.*  
 despojar, *to plunder.*  
 A a 3                      matar,



matar, *to kill,* roubar, *to rob.*  
 fogar, *to stiff,* ou *to* furar, *to steal.*  
*cheek.*

*To take one's Pleasure.*

*Tomar Divertimento.*

cantar, <i>to sing.</i>	apostar, <i>to lay a Wager.</i>
dancar, <i>to dance.</i>	aventurar, <i>to venture.</i>
saltar, <i>to leap, ou jump.</i>	cortar, <i>to cut.</i>
esgrimir, <i>to fence.</i>	baralhar, <i>to shuffle.</i>
cavalgar, <i>to ride.</i>	enganar, <i>to bubble, ou to</i>
zombar, <i>to play the Fool.</i>	<i>cheat.</i>
jugar as Cartas, <i>to play</i>	Zombar, <i>to jeer, or ban-</i>
<i>at Cards.</i>	<i>ter.</i>
gainhar, <i>to win.</i>	rirse, <i>to laugh at.</i>
perder, <i>to lose.</i>	

*To be sick.*

*Estar doente.*

tratar de hum doente,	sangrar, <i>to let Blood, ou</i>
<i>to tend or nurse a sick</i>	<i>bleed.</i>
<i>Body.</i>	dar hua ajuda, <i>to give a</i>
ter cuydado, <i>to take</i>	<i>Clyster.</i>
<i>Care.</i>	tomar Medicina, <i>to take</i>
curar, <i>to dress a Wound,</i>	<i>Physick.</i>
<i>ou cure.</i>	vendar, <i>to bind with a</i>
melhorar, <i>to recover.</i>	<i>Fillet.</i>

*Of Bargains.*

*De Contratos.*

comprar, <i>to buy.</i>	trocar, <i>to change, ou</i>
vender, <i>to sell.</i>	<i>truck.</i>
entregar, <i>to deliver.</i>	pagar, <i>to pay.</i>
	pedir

pedir emprestado, <i>to borrow.</i>	enganar, <i>to cheat.</i>
prestar, <i>to lend.</i>	tirar, <i>to take away.</i>
dever, <i>to owe.</i>	prometer, <i>to promise.</i>
dar, <i>to give.</i>	guardar, <i>to keep.</i>
alugar, <i>to hire.</i>	mandar, <i>to bid.</i>
aceytar, <i>to accept.</i>	empenhar, <i>to pawn.</i>
refuzar, <i>to refuse.</i>	perder, <i>to lose.</i>
negar, <i>to deny.</i>	rogar, <i>to pray.</i>
tomar, <i>to take.</i>	suplicar, <i>to beseech.</i>
receber, <i>to receive.</i>	obter, <i>to obtain.</i>

*Of Life.*

*Da Vida.*

parir, <i>to be delivered, ou brought to Bed.</i>	crescer, <i>to grow.</i>
nascer, <i>to be born.</i>	viver, <i>to live.</i>
baptizar, <i>to baptize, ou to christen.</i>	morrer, <i>to die.</i>
	enterrar, <i>to bury.</i>

*Of Motion.*

*Do Movimento.*

mover, <i>to move, ou stir.</i>	passar, <i>to walk.</i>
ir, <i>to go.</i>	caminhar, <i>to march.</i>
vir, <i>to come.</i>	desaparecer, <i>to disappear.</i>
partir, <i>to depart.</i>	correr, <i>to run.</i>
irse, <i>to go away.</i>	fugir, <i>to run away.</i>
aportar, <i>ou arribar, to arrive.</i>	seguir, <i>to follow.</i>
tornar atras, <i>to come back.</i>	evitar, <i>to shun.</i>
ir atras, <i>to go back.</i>	escapar, <i>to escape.</i>
chegar, <i>to go near, ou come near.</i>	tornar, <i>to turn.</i>
estar de pe, <i>to stand.</i>	alcançar, <i>to overtake.</i>
	escorregar, <i>to slide.</i>
	arrimar, <i>to lean.</i>

cahir, *to fall.*tropeçar, *to stumble.*continuar, *to go on.*avançar, *to advance.*distanciar, *to go from.*hir, ao encontro, *to go to meet.*entrar, *to go, ou come in.*sahir, *to go, ou come out.*subir, *to go, ou come up.*baixar, *to go, ou come down.*embalsacar, *to amuse one's self.*enviar, *to send.*apressar, *to make haste.*deter, *to tarry.*sentarse, *to sit down.*nadar, *to swim.*margulhar, *to dive, ou duck.*sumergir, *to drown.*caminhar, *to travel.**Handy Works.**Obras de Maãos.*trabalhar, *to work.*tocar, *to touch,*manejar, *to manage.*fechar, *to shut.*tapar, *to stop.*abrir, *to open.*levantar, *to lift up.*encher, *to fill.*derramar, *to spill, ou shed.*molhar, *to dip, ou steep.*alcançar, *to reach.*armar, *to arm.*tirar, *to draw, ou pull.*arrebatar, *to snatch.*arrancar, *to pluck out.*mostrar, *to shew.*misturar, *to mingle.*estender, *to pull out. ou stretch out.*plantar, *to plant, ou set.*pezar, *to weigh.*atar, *to tie, ou bind.*desatar, *to untie.*anodar, *to knit.*amontoar, *to heap.*ajuntar, *to gather.*quebrar, *to break.*despedaçar, *to tear.*cortar, *to cut.*pizar, *to bruize.*espremer, *to squeeze.*ter, *to hold.*esconder, *to hide.*cubrir, *to cover.*descobrir, *to discover.*buscar, *to seek, ou look for.*achar, *to find.*fujar, *to stain.*enlamear, *to dirt.*limpar, *to cleanse.*

bar-

barrer, <i>to sweep.</i>	imprimir, <i>to print.</i>
lavar, <i>to wash.</i>	encaderner, <i>to bind a Book.</i>
enchagoar, <i>to rinse.</i>	tocar o sino, <i>to ring.</i>
pintar, <i>to draw Pictures.</i>	pentear, <i>to comb.</i>
gravar, <i>to engrave.</i>	remendar, <i>to mend.</i>
entalhar, <i>to carve.</i>	cozer, <i>to sew.</i>
edificar, <i>to build.</i>	prespantar, <i>to stitch.</i>
acender, <i>to kindle, ou light.</i>	ferrar, <i>to shoe a Horse.</i>
estender, <i>to spread out.</i>	

*Of the Sound of Beasts.*

*Do Son dos Animais.*

O Cavallo rincha, <i>the Horse neighs.</i>	O Lobo uva, <i>the Wolf howls.</i>
O Asno zurra, <i>the Ass brays.</i>	O Caõ ladra, <i>the Dog barks.</i>
O Leão brame, <i>the Lion roars.</i>	A Ovelha berra, <i>the Sheep bleats.</i>
O Boy berra, <i>the Ox bellows.</i>	A Cobra asobia, <i>the Snake hisses.</i>
O Porco grunhe, <i>the Hog grunts.</i>	O Gato mya, <i>the Cat mews.</i>

*The Birds are used.*

*Os Passaros são costumados.*

cantar, <i>to sing.</i>	O Papagayo fala, <i>the Parrot talks.</i>
chirriar, <i>to chirp.</i>	a Pega grasna, <i>the Mag-pye chatters.</i>
picar, <i>to pick.</i>	a Galinha poem Ovos, <i>the Hen lays Eggs.</i>
o Galo canta, <i>the Cock crows.</i>	
o Corvo grasna, <i>the Raven croaks.</i>	



*Frazes familiares.**Familiar Phrases.*

eu vos peſſo dame ſe te agrada.	<i>I pray you, or pray give me if you please.</i>
trazeme.	<i>bring me.</i>
empreſtame.	<i>lend me.</i>
eu te agradeço.	<i>I thank you.</i>
eu vos dou Graças.	<i>I give you Thanks.</i>
vay e traze.	<i>go and fetch.</i>
logo.	<i>preſently.</i>
amando Sr. fazeme, eſte Favor.	<i>dear Sir, do me that Kind- neſs or Favour.</i>
amada Senhora conce- deme eſte Favor.	<i>dear Madam, grant me that Favour.</i>
eu vos ſuplico.	<i>I beſeech you.</i>
eu vos rogo ou eu vos conſejo a fazelo.	<i>I entreat you, ou I con- jure you to do it.</i>
eu volo peſſo por Fa- vor.	<i>I beg it as a Favour.</i>
obrigame a tanto.	<i>oblige me ſo far.</i>

*Exprefões de Carinho.**Expressions of Kindneſs.*

minha Vida.	<i>my Life.</i>
meu Amor.	<i>my Love.</i>
minha querida Alma.	<i>my dear Soul.</i>
meu Brinquinho.	<i>my little Darling.</i>
meu Coraçõzinho.	<i>my little Heart.</i>
meu doſe Coração.	<i>my ſweet Heart.</i>
meu querido Mielzinho.	<i>my little Honey.</i>
meu querido Minino.	<i>my dear Child.</i>
meu lindo Anjo.	<i>my pretty Angel.</i>
meu Tudo.	<i>my All.</i>

Pará agradecer e Com- primentar, ou mos- trar Benignidade.	<i>To thank and compli- ment, or shew Kind- ness.</i>
Eu vos agradeço.	<i>I thank you.</i>
Eu vos dou as Graças.	<i>I give you Thanks.</i>
Eu vos rendo mil Graças.	<i>I render you a thousand Thanks.</i>
Eu o farey com Gosto.	<i>I will do it with Plea- sure.</i>
com todo meu Coraçãõ.	<i>with all my Heart.</i>
de Coraçãõ.	<i>heartily.</i>
eu vos sou obrigado.	<i>I am obliged to you.</i>
eu sou todo vosso.	<i>I am wholly yours.</i>
eu sou vosso servidor.	<i>I am your Servant.</i>
vosso humilidissimo ser- vidor.	<i>your most humble Servant,</i>
vos estais muito obrigad- or.	<i>you are too obliging.</i>
vos vos dais muito Tra- balho.	<i>you give yourself too much Trouble.</i>
e nenhum acho em vos servir.	<i>I find none in serving you.</i>
Tu eres muy benigno ou muito civil.	<i>you are very kind, or very civil.</i>
Isso he muito benevolo.	<i>That is very kind.</i>
que dezejas tu ter?	<i>What will you be pleased to have?</i>
eu dezejo que tu sejas livre commigo.	<i>I desire you to be free with me.</i>
sem Comprimento.	<i>without Compliment.</i>
sem Ceremonia.	<i>without Ceremony.</i>
eu te amo com todo meu Coraçãõ.	<i>I love you with all my Heart.</i>
eu tambem.	<i>and I also.</i>
fiate de mim.	<i>rely or depend upon me.</i>
mandame.	<i>command me.</i>

Hon-

honrame com teus mandatos.	<i>honour me with your Commands.</i>
tens tu em que mandar-me?	<i>have you any Thing to command me, ou have you any Commands for me?</i>
tu necessitas só mandar-me.	<i>you need but command me.</i>
dispoem de teu Criado.	<i>dispose of your Servant.</i>
eu só espero porteus mandatos.	<i>I only wait for your Commands.</i>
naõ tens mais que falar.	<i>do but speak.</i>
tu me fazes muito favour.	<i>you do me much Honour.</i>
deichemos Comprimentos eu rogo, peffo.	<i>let us forbear Compliments I pray.</i>
deichemos Cerimonias.	<i>let us forbear Ceremonies.</i>
pois na primeira Ocaziõ,	<i>well then on the first Occasion.</i>
me valerey de teus Favores.	<i>I'll value myself of your Favours.</i>
Para affirmâr negar, consentir.	<i>To affirm, deny, consent.</i>
he verdade.	<i>it is true.</i>
he verdade?	<i>is it true?</i>
naõ he mais que muita verdade.	<i>it is but too true.</i>
para vos dizer averdade.	<i>to tell you the Truth.</i>
realmente assim he.	<i>really it is so.</i>
quem o divide?	<i>who doubts it? who questions it?</i>
naõ ha duvida.	<i>there is no doubt on it.</i>
eu creio que sim.	<i>I believe yes.</i>
eu creio que naõ.	<i>I believe not.</i>
eu digo que sim.	<i>I say yes.</i>

eu digo que não.	<i>I say no.</i>
eu aposto que he.	<i>I lay it is.</i>
eu aposto que não he.	<i>I lay it is not.</i>
em minha consciencia.	<i>in my Conscience.</i>
por minha vida.	<i>upon my Life.</i>
morra eu se te digo fabula, ou mintira.	<i>let me die if I tell you an Untruth or a Lye.</i>
sim, eu juro.	<i>yes, I swear.</i>
eu juro como' sou Cavalleiro.	<i>I swear as I am a Gentleman.</i>
como' sou homem de bem.	<i>as I am an honest Man.</i>
sobre meu honor ou Credito.	<i>upon my Honour, or Credit.</i>
credeme.	<i>believe me.</i>
eu posso dizerte.	<i>I can tell you.</i>
eu posso a segurar-te.	<i>I can assure you.</i>
eu apostaria alguma couza.	<i>I could lay something.</i>
não zombes.	<i>don't you jest.</i>
falas serio?	<i>are you serious, or are you in earnest?</i>
eu falo serio.	<i>I speak, or I am in earnest.</i>
fem divida.	<i>I warrant you.</i>
tu tens ádivinhado.	<i>you have guessed right.</i>
meteste ó prego na Cabeça.	<i>you have hit the right Nail on the Head.</i>
eu te creyo.	<i>I believe you.</i>
pode crer-se.	<i>one may believe you.</i>
isso não he impossivel.	<i>that is not impossible.</i>
tude pode ser.	<i>all may be.</i>



Dehir, devir, de se mover.      *Of going, coming, stirring, &c.*

de onde vens?	<i>from whence come you?</i>
a onde vas?	<i>whither do you go, or where are you going?</i>
eu venho, eu vou.	<i>I come, I go.</i>
vem acima, vem abaixo.	<i>come up, come down.</i>
vem dentro, say.	<i>come in, go out.</i>
apressate.	<i>make haste.</i>
naõ te movas da qui.	<i>do not stir from thence.</i>
espera ahy.	<i>stay there.</i>
vem junto amim.	<i>come near me.</i>
vaite.	<i>get you gone.</i>
vay teu caminho.	<i>go your ways.</i>
chegate, ou arr date a-	<i>go back a little.</i>
tras hum pouco.	
vem aqui.	<i>come hither.</i>
espera hum pouco.	<i>stay a little.</i>
espera por mim.	<i>stay for me.</i>
naõ vas taõ depressa.	<i>do not go so fast.</i>
tu vas muy depressa.	<i>you go too fast.</i>
tirate da minha Vista.	<i>get you out of my Sight.</i>
naõ me toques.	<i>do not touch me.</i>
deicha isso.	<i>let that alone.</i>
porque?	<i>why?</i>
porque, por cauza.	<i>because.</i>
eu estou bem aqui.	<i>I am well here.</i>
a Porta está fechada.	<i>the Door is shut.</i>
a Porta está aberta.	<i>the Door is open.</i>
abre a Porta.	<i>open the Door.</i>
fecha a Porta.	<i>shut the Door.</i>
abre Ajanelia.	<i>open the Window.</i>
fecha Ajanelia.	<i>shut the Window.</i>
vem por este caminho.	<i>come this Way.</i>

vay por aquelle camin-	go that way.
ho.	
passa por este caminho.	come, ou pass by that way.
que buscas ?	what do you look for ?
que perdeste ?	what have you lost ?

*Das Sezois.*

*Of the Seasons.*

que sezaõ te agrada mel-	what Season pleases you
hor.	best ?
a Primavera he mais	the Spring is the most
agradavel de todas as	pleasant of all Seasons.
Sezõins.	
tudo feri conforme sua	every thing smiles in Na-
Natureza.	ture.
o Tempo he muy sua-	the Weather is very mild.
ve.	
o Ar he temperado.	the Air is temperate.
nem he muy quente,	it is neither too hot, nor
nem muy frio.	too cold.
todas as Criaturas fazem	all Creatures then make
emtaõ o Amor.	Love.
nos naõ temos Prima-	we have no Spring this
vera este Anno.	Year.
nada, avança, adiante.	nothing forward.
a Sezaõ está bem atra-	the Season is very back-
zada.	ward.
nos temos hum quente	we have a very hot Sum-
veraõ ?	mer.
que quente que está ?	how hot it is ?
está excessivamente quen-	it is excessive hot.
te.	
languido, aneado Tem-	it is faint Weather.
po naõ posso aturar calor.	I cannot endure Heat.
eu suor, estou todo em	I sweat, I am all over in
hum suor.	a sweat.

eu nunca Exprimentey tal Calor, ou Tempo taõ quente.	<i>I never felt such Heat, or such hot Weather.</i>
está hum bello Tempo para os Frutos da Terra.	<i>it is very fine Weather for the Fruits of the Earth.</i>
ha muita Abundancia de Fruta.	<i>there is Abundance of Fruit.</i>
todas as Arvores estão cheas de Fruta.	<i>all the Trees are full of Fruit.</i>
nos necessitamos de huã pouca de Chuva.	<i>we want a little Rain.</i>
o Tempo da segada he chegado.	<i>harvest Time draws near.</i>
começasse a segar o Trigo.	<i>they begin to cut down the Corn.</i>
os Prados estão sega- dos.	<i>the Meadows are mowed.</i>
necessitamos recolher o Trigo.	<i>we must get in the Corn.</i>
nos estamos na Canicu- la.	<i>we are in the Dog-Days.</i>
o veraõ passou, ou se fey.	<i>the Summer is gone.</i>
o Outono, ou o cahir da Folha, tem toma- do seu lugar.	<i>Autumn, or the Fall of the Leaf has took its Place.</i>
vem chegando a Vindi- ma.	<i>Vintage draws near.</i>
ha huma bella Vindima.	<i>there is a very fine Vin- tage.</i>
nos Vindimaremos em tres ou quatro Dias (para fazer Vinho).	<i>we shall gather Grapes (to make Wine) in three or four Days.</i>
os Vinhos serão bons este Anno.	<i>the Wines will be good this Year.</i>

*Hũa Collecção de Ad- A Collection of Adjec-  
jeſtivos expreſſando tives, expreſſing ſe-  
diverſas Qualidades. veral Qualities.*

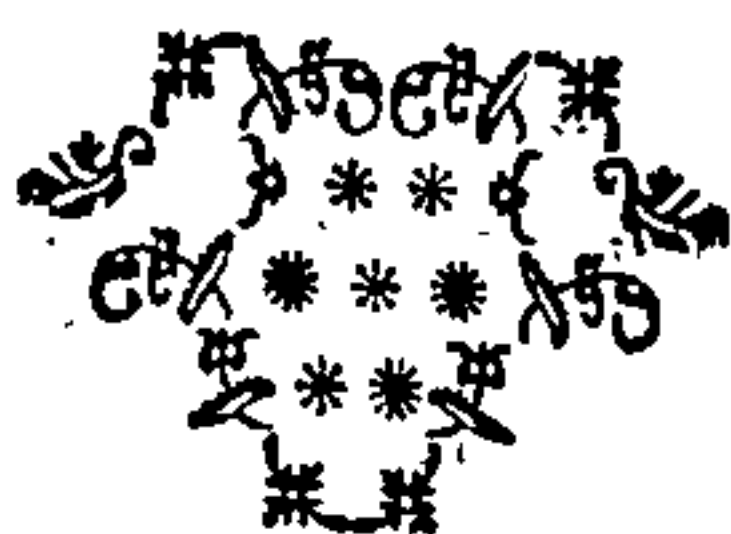
<i>good, bom.</i>	<i>neat, puro.</i>
<i>ill, bad, ou naughty, mau.</i>	<i>cirty, neſty, fujo.</i>
<i>wiſe, ſabio.</i>	<i>ſtuttiſh, immunda.</i>
<i>great, grande.</i>	<i>sloven, immundo</i>
<i>ſmall, pequeno.</i>	<i>hot, quente.</i>
<i>thick, groſſo.</i>	<i>cold, frio.</i>
<i>thin, delgado.</i>	<i>dry, ſeco.</i>
<i>tall, ou high, alto.</i>	<i>wet, molhado.</i>
<i>low, baixo.</i>	<i>moist, humido.</i>
<i>long, longo, comprido.</i>	<i>ſtrong, forte.</i>
<i>ſhort, curto, breve.</i>	<i>weak, fraco.</i>
<i>wide, ou broad, largo.</i>	<i>ſtiff, tezo.</i>
<i>narrow, ſtrait, eſtreito.</i>	<i>handsome, bello.</i>
<i>right, direito.</i>	<i>proper, proprio.</i>
<i>left, eſquerdo, canhoto.</i>	<i>comely, bemparecido.</i>
<i>new, novo.</i>	<i>pretty, bonito.</i>
<i>old, velho.</i>	<i>ugly, homely, feo malfeito.</i>
<i>fat, gordo.</i>	<i>flat Noſe, nariz chato.</i>
<i>lean, magro.</i>	<i>one Eye, monculo, de</i>
<i>heavy, pezado.</i>	<i>hum ollo.</i>
<i>dull, entorpecido.</i>	<i>ſquinty, veſgo, torto.</i>
<i>light, leve, ligeiro.</i>	<i>blind, cego.</i>
<i>full, cheo.</i>	<i>purblind, peticego.</i>
<i>empty, vazio.</i>	<i>lame, coxo.</i>
<i>hard, duro.</i>	<i>maimed, eſtropeado.</i>
<i>ſoft, molle, brando.</i>	<i>crooked, curvo, encur-</i>
<i>hard, difficult, difficultozo</i>	<i>vado, corcovado.</i>
<i>eaſy, facil.</i>	<i>bald, calvo.</i>
<i>ſweet, doce.</i>	<i>dumb, mudo.</i>
<i>bitter, amargo.</i>	<i>deaf, furdo, mouco.</i>
<i>ſour, azedo.</i>	<i>toothleſs, deſdentado.</i>
<i>clean, limpo.</i>	<i>dreſſed, veſtido.</i>



<i>naked</i> , nu.	<i>sincere</i> , sincero.
<i>rich</i> , rico.	<i>liar</i> , mentirozo.
<i>poor</i> , pobre.	<i>deceitful</i> , enganadōr.
<i>odd</i> , desigual.	<i>cunning</i> , astuto.
<i>expert</i> , experto.	<i>sharp</i> , agudo.
<i>skilful</i> , entendido.	<i>chaste</i> , casto.
<i>unskilful</i> , desentendido.	<i>wanton</i> , lascivo.
<i>drunk</i> , bebedo.	<i>modest</i> , modesto.
<i>healily</i> , saudavel.	<i>bashful</i> , vergonhozo.
<i>sick</i> , doente.	<i>bold</i> , atrevido.
<i>happy</i> , feliz.	<i>fearful</i> , medroso.
<i>unhappy</i> , infeliz.	<i>affable</i> , afavel.
<i>true</i> , verdadeyro.	<i>courtous</i> , cortêz.
<i>false</i> , falso.	<i>rude</i> , rudo.
<i>troublesome</i> , trabalhozo.	<i>clownish</i> , grosseiro.
<i>peevish</i> , rabugento.	<i>agreeable</i> , pleasant, agra-
<i>merry</i> , alegre.	davel.
<i>glad</i> , alegre.	<i>civil</i> , civil.
<i>sad</i> , sorrowful, triste.	<i>kind</i> , benigno.
<i>imprudent</i> , imprudente.	<i>clement</i> , clemente.
<i>wise</i> , sabio.	<i>merciful</i> , misericordiozo.
<i>mad</i> , louco.	<i>pitiful</i> , piadozo.
<i>just</i> , justo.	<i>cruel</i> , cruel.
<i>unjust</i> , injusto.	<i>revengeful</i> , vingativo.
<i>valiant</i> , valente.	<i>stubborn</i> , teimozo. perti-
<i>courageous</i> , animozo.	naz, cabeçudo.
<i>coward</i> , cobarde.	<i>prodigal</i> , prodigo.
<i>loyal</i> , leal.	<i>obstinate</i> , obstinado.
<i>faithful</i> , fiel.	<i>liberal</i> , liberal.
<i>unfaithful</i> , infiel.	<i>covetous</i> , cobiçozo.
<i>holy</i> , santo.	<i>niggardly</i> , escaço.
<i>profane</i> , profano.	<i>grateful</i> , agradecido.
<i>godly</i> , piadozo.	<i>ungrateful</i> , desagradeci-
<i>ungodly</i> , impio.	do, ingrato.
<i>charitable</i> , caritativo.	<i>glutton</i> , glotaō.
<i>proud</i> , lofty, soberbo.	<i>idle</i> , ociozo.
<i>humble</i> humilde.	<i>lazy</i> , preguiçozo.
<i>innocent</i> , innocente.	<i>slotkful</i> , vagozo.

*hasty*, apressado.  
*constant*, constante.  
*inconstant*, inconstante.  
*all*, todo.  
*none*, nenhum.  
*any*, qualquer  
*some*, algum.  
*somebody*, alguem.  
*certain*, certo.

*few*, pouco.  
*other*, outro.  
*another*, esse outro.  
*alone*, sô.  
*either*, o hum, ou outro.  
*neither*, nem hum, nem outro.  
*both*, ambos.



## Cartas Sobre a Mercancia ou Negocio.

*Senhor F. F. Londres, 30 de Janeiro, 1750.*

**A** S de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. de 3e 15 do mez passado receby em 5 do Corrente, pello Navio *F. F.* Capitão *B. B.* Mestre, e nullas a virto q<sup>ta</sup>. carregara Vm<sup>ce</sup>. abordo do primeiro bom Navio destinado p<sup>a</sup>. esta praça, as fazendas q' recommentey a feu cuydado na minha ultima, com esta vaó mais mostras mais o q' lhe peço he, de emcomendar a otintureiro q<sup>ta</sup>. ascorres tenhaõ viveza e q<sup>ta</sup>. sejaõ dedura; pello ultimo, Navio mandey avm<sup>ce</sup>. a conta davenda da partida das meas de seda como tam bem dos 3 Caxiões de chapeos q<sup>ta</sup>. me vieraõ consignados pello Navio *A* se se offerecerem mais de qual quer dos generos sobreditos sendo acomodados bem pode mandalos, por serem agora pedidos, com esta condicam q<sup>ta</sup>. sejam da moda e de bom, feitio; tenho contradado por suas 20 Pipas de azeite pellos primeiros navios deçafras 20 Pipas de Vinho tinto com as 20 Pipas e 3 quattros de Branco ja estam abordo do Navio *S. F.* Capitão *F* mestre dos quaes a Factura vay incluza eos conhecimentos iraõ pello correyo queyra Deos que cheque a salvamento sendo o que por oras se offerece.

*Mais obrigado Servidor de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. q<sup>ta</sup>. S.M.B.*

*Mr.*

Letters on Business, or Mercantile Affairs.

Mr. F. F. London, *the 30th of January, 1750.*

**Y**OURS of the 3d and 15th of last Month, came to Hand on the 5th Current by the Ship F. F. Captain B. B. Commander; and therein I take Notice, that you intend to put on board the next good Ship bound hither, the Goods I recommended to your Care in my last, herewith I send you more Patterns, but I would desire you to be solicitous with your Dyer, that the Colours may be lively and durable. By the last Ship I remitted you Account of Sales, of the Parcel of Silk Stockings, and the three Boxes of Hats, by the Ship A; and if you meet with a Parcel of either, or both, to your Mind, you may please to send them, being now in Demand, but great Care must be taken of the Fashion and Make. I have taken care to secure your twenty Pipes of Oil for the first Ships in the Season, and put on board the Ship N. your twenty Pipes of Red, and twelve Pipes and three Hogsheads of White Wine, Capt. F. commander, of which the Invoice\* goes herewith, and the Bills of Loading shall be sent by the post, and hope will come safe to Hand; which being the Necessary at present, I remain,

SIR,

Your humble Servant,

Mr.

*Senhor Jasinto Jones;*

*Meu Senhor,*

**E**STAS servem para avizar a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. como por este Navio, o *Derby*, tenho feito o Retorno do seu Cabedal em meu Poder em duas Bóllas de Diamantes montando a Pagodas 4396, 25 *Fan.* 10 *Casks* tendoas registrado conforme sua Ordem nos Livros da Companhia, incluzo está Conhecimento, junto com a Factura e sua Conta Corrente feichada a qual dezeijo q<sup>o</sup>. chegue a Salvamento e q<sup>o</sup>. lhe fasa boa Conta; como eu estou para Tornar com este Trespasso para *Europa*, a minha chegada a *Londres* terey o Honor dever a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. e darlhe huma exacta, conta do Negocio na *India*, e sou Enteiramente.

Fort St. George,  
Nov. 12, 1750.

*Mais humilde Servidor,*  
*de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. Q. S. M. B.*

*Abraham Truelock.*

*Londres, a 4 Marco, 1750-1.*

*A Lisboa:*

*S<sup>r</sup>. Joaõ Ferrier.*

*Meu Senhor,*

**E**STOU favorceido com a de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. de 3do Corrente, e acho que em Comprimento a minha Ordem tem Vm<sup>ce</sup>. comprado os quinhentos Barils de Arenques de fumo a Livras onze por Lastre eu não tenho duvida que esse foy o menor preso porque Vm<sup>ce</sup>. os podia ter, e que sua boa Qualidade o Corresponda, meu Navio se esta preparande com toda a pressa para hir Buscalos ille se pode caregar



Mr. James Jones.

Sir,

**T**H E S E will advise you, that by this Ship the Derby, I have made the Return of your Stock in my Hands in two Bulses of Diamonds, amounting to Pagodas 4396, 25 Fan. 10 Casks, having enregistered them according to your Order in the Company's Books; inclosed is a Bill of Lading, together with Invoice, and your Account current closed, which I wish may come safe to you, and turn to a good Account, as I am returning by this Conveyance into Europe; at my Arrival at London, I shall have the Honour to see you, and give you an exact Account of the Trade in India. I am entirely,

Sir,

Fort St. Geerge,  
Nov. 12. 1750.

Your humble Servant,

Abraham Truelock.

---

London, 4 March, 1750-1.

To Lisbon. Mr. John Ferrier.

Sir,

**I** Am favoured with yours of the 3d Current, and find, in Compliance to my Order, you have bought the five hundred Barrels of red Herrings, at 11l. per Last, I make no doubt, but that was the lowest Price that you could get them for, and the Goodness does answer it: my ship is getting ready wick all Speed to go down to fetch them, and she may be laden at your Key, being she draws no more than nine Foot

B b 4

of

gar em o seu Cáys, sendo que não tira mais de que nove Pes de Agua; como Vm<sup>ce</sup>. he servido de apontar-me, que me apoparia de Gastos quatro peniques por Baril, eu julgo que elle podera levar sette cento. Barils ou mais. se assim for, quando elle chegar, Vm<sup>ce</sup>. o podera despachar, o Capitaõ não tera Ocazião de qualquer dinneiro, assim que não haverá mister de nenhum Suprimento. Agradeço a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. pella Informaçã que me da em relação dos Cambios de *Lisboa* a este Lugar mas como eu olho para Remessas do Dinheiro aquy tão ariscado em Letras do Exchequer. Vm<sup>ce</sup>, tera servido de sacar sobre mim ao mais acomodado Cambio que lhe for possível e suas Letras a o uzual Curso as quais terãõ todo o divido Honor,

*My ferto S. r. ior de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. que S. M. B.*

*Ambrozio Nimble-Tongue.*

*Londres 18. Marco, 1750.1.*

*A Cadiz.*

*Senhor Joao Fryer,*

*Meu Senhor,*

**D**iversas Cartas de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. me vieraõ a mão a seu Tempo, como tambem minha conta Corrente a qual tenho notado em Conformidade com Vm<sup>ce</sup>. sua ultima foy de 29 do Mez passado, na qual me da Vm<sup>ce</sup>. recibo das trez Letras importantes seis Mill Pieces de Oito as quais meo Irmao *Joseph* mandou a V<sup>ce</sup>. por minha Conta, e por minha Ordem; eu farey hum triste Negocio com ellas depois do desembolho de meu Dinheiro ha tanto Tempo, ademais que o Cambio me custou caro, eu Acho que seus limites a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. foraõ mais fomenos que o Preço, da Prata e Cambio; agora sendo que tenho es-  
perado

*of Water, as you are pleased to mention, which will save me the Charge of four Pence per Barrel; I judge she will carry about seven hundred Barrels, or more; if so, when she arrives, you may fit her up, the Captain will not have Occasion for any Money, so will want no Supply. I thank you for the Information you give me in Relation to the Exchange betwixt Lisbon and this Place; but as I look upon the Remittance of the Money hence, as hazardous in Exchequer Bills, you will be pleased to draw on me at the most commodious Exchange, that is possible, and your Bills at the usual Course, which shall meet with all due Honour from,*

Sir,

Your humble servant,

Ambrose Nimble-Tongue.

---

London, March 18, 1750-1.

To Cadiz. Mr. John Fryer,

Sir,

**Y**OUR several Letters came to Hand in due Time, as did my Accompt Current, which have noted in Conformity with you; your last to me was of 29 of last Month, wherein you give me Receipt of the three Bills, amounting to six thousand Pieces of Eight, which my Brother Joseph sent to you for my Account and by my Order; I shall make but a sorry Bargain in them, after so long a Disbursement; besides they cost me a dear Exchange; I find his Limits to you were much under the Price of Plate and Exchange: Now since I have waited all this Time, and there being no Probability of their falling, be pleased to send  
my

perado todo este Tempo e não havendo Probilidade de sua baixa seja Vm<sup>ce</sup>. servido de mandarme meu Dinheiro como vem o Cambio tanto para esta praça, ou *Amsterdam*, como Vm<sup>ce</sup>. julgar me fará melhor Conta, se a Prata ou Cochonilha baixar a preço que a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. lhe pareça ser melhor do que por remessa de Cambio, em tal cazo investe Vm<sup>ce</sup>. meu inteiramente a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. estando persuadido que Vm<sup>ce</sup>. actuara em meus Negocios como se foraõ seus proprios, eu me alegratia ouvir da chegada da Frota que podera ser que dese algum alento a o Negocio para que huã pessoa podece fazer algum emprego que a o presente não Convida a nada sendo quanto se offrece

*Servidor de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. que M. B.*

*Londres, Março 21, 1751.*

A Cadez, Senhor João Fryer.

*Senhor,*

**D**O outro lado, está a Cópia da minha ultima de 18 do Corrente, eu suponho que meu Irmão *Joseph* tam feito algumas Remessas a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. por minha Conta, do que saberey a quantia pello primeyro Correo de Olanda; com esta mando a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. tres Letras, importantes quatro Mil pezos de Outo. sobre aboa pessoa de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. a quem as endousey, valor em minha Conta, cujo Dinheiro, Vm<sup>ce</sup>. será servido empregar, junto com aquelle que meu Irmão *Joseph* lhe tiver remetido, em dous, ou tres, Navios de Guerra, e me alegrarey que isto chegue a Tempo bastante para alcançar Senhor *John Trueman*, e os outros Navios de Guerra, em tal Cazo, e não de outro modo, podera Vm<sup>ce</sup>. facar mais do que se



my Money, as the Exchange comes either for this Place or Amsterdam, which you judge will turn most to Account. If the Plate or Cochineal should fall to a Price, which you may conceive will answer better than by Remiss of Exchange, in such Case invest my Money in either of them, which I do entirely leave to you, being persuaded, you will act in my Affairs equal to your own. I should be glad to hear of the Fleet's Arrival, for, perhaps, might give some Heat to Business, that a Body could make some Employ, for at present, it does not invite to any Thing; which is all from

Sir,

Your humble Servant,

---

Londres, March 21, 1750-1.

To Cadiz, Mr. John Fryer.

Sir,

ON the other Side is C<sup>py</sup> of my last to you of the 18th Instant; I suppose my Brother Joseph has made you some Remittances for my Account, of which I shall know the Sum by the first Dutch Post. I herewith send you three Bills, amounting to four thousand Pieces of Eight on your good Self, to whom I have indorsed them Value in my Account; which Money please to employ, together with that my Brother Joseph has remitted you in two or three Men of War, and should be glad this should get Time enough to reach Sir John Trueman's, and the other Men of War: In such Case, and no other, you may draw, over and above what is remitted you for my Account, ten thousand Ducats, and put it, with my other Interest,



### 350 *Grammatica Lusitano - Anglica.*

lhe tem remetido por minha Conta, Dez Mil Ducados, e ponhaõs Vm<sup>ce</sup>. com o meu outro Interesse, em tres ou quatro Navios de Guerra, e seja servido de observar que sem embargo que eu ordeney a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. na Cópia da minha antecedente, para carregar em huã Galera ou Navio Marcante tres Mil Ducados, e em Navio de Guerra des Mil Ducados, e para facar; eu revoco a Ditta Ordem, e peso a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. que não carregue em Galera, ou Navio Marcante, mais de dous Mil Ducados, e que não fa que a o presente, mas somente que empregue o que tenho remetido a Vm<sup>ce</sup>. e seja servido mandar-me hua distincta Conta, com inteira informação do Negocio para meu Governo, e ficou com todo o devido respeyto.

*May certo Servidor de Vm<sup>ce</sup>. Q. S. M. B.*

---

*Hum escriptinho que vay aberto a hum vezinho, ou Amigo, em qualquer occasiam.*

**A** O Senhor G. S. que T. M. ou seu servo criado beja a S. M. as maos mil vezes e que lhe faça amerce de Inemandar pello portador desta  
sendolhe precisamente necessario nesta occasiam, e sempre ficara may prompto as suas Ordens.

*A. Q. D. G.*

---

### *A Carta ou Instrumento de Procuraçam.*

**S** Aibam todos quantos este instrumento ou Carta de procuraçam virem que eu A. B. de Londres homem de negocio tenho nomeado e constituido e  
por

rest on three or four Men of War; and please to observe, that notwithstanding I ordered you in the foregoing Copy for to load in any Galley or Merchant-men, three thousand Ducats, and in a Man of War, ten thousand Ducats, and for to draw, I do revoke the said Order, and desire you not to load in any Galley or Merchant-man, more than two thousand Ducats, and for the present not to draw, but only employ what have remitted you, and please to send me a distinct Account of the Cost, with full Information of the Business for my Government, and remain with due Respect,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

---

*A short open Escrito, or Message, to a Friend or Neighbour, for any Thing upon Occasion.*

**T**O Mr. G. S. that T. M. his most humble Servant, desires the Favour of him to send by the Bearer having at present immediate Occasion for it, and he shall always remain obliged to him as his

*Humble Servant.*

---

*A Letter of Attorney.*

**K**NOW all Men by these Presents, That I A. B. of London, Merchant, have named and constituted, and by these Presents do name, ordain, appoint,

por estes presentes, nomeo, ordeno, constituyo e  
faço o Senhor B. C. de                  o meo verdadeiro e  
legitimo procurador, por mim e em meu Nome e ao  
meu uso pode demandar, arrecadar e receber de T. B.  
Mercador, soma de                  amim devida por  
ditto T. B. dando e por esta concedendo ao meu  
ditto Procurador o meu poder plenario e autoridade  
de exercitar e usar de todas taes auções e outras cou-  
sas em direito necessarias para a cobrança da ditta  
dívida e em meu nome de dar e fazer quitações ou  
outras descargas, e geralmente de fazer e executar  
na materia sobre ditta tão plenariamente como se  
eu mesmo fizese ou pudese fazer, estando pessoal-  
mente presente ratificando, confirmando, e outor-  
gando tudo e qualquer cousa que o ditto meu procu-  
rador legitimamente fizer ou causar de se fazer nella  
pör estes presentes. Em testemunha ho que Assiney  
e selley esta em                  aos 20 dias domez de                  de  
17por A. B.

Afinado e Sellado adiante

de  $\begin{matrix} T. A. \\ M. B. \end{matrix} \}$  Testemunhas.

*A Carta ou o Instrumento de Fretamento.*

**E**STA Carta ou Instrumento de Fretamento contratado feito aos vinte Cinco dias do mez de *de Anno* de mil e trezentos do nascimento de nro Senhor *Jesus Christo*, &c. Entre *T. B.* Mestre de baixo de Deos do bom navio nomeado, de dozentas e cincoenta toneladas de carga *P. M.* que ao presente esta Surto e ancorado no Rio de de hua parte e *E. T. M. B. L. &c.* homens de negocio da outra parte: Certificaõ que o ditto Mestre tem dado em alquer e fretado o Ditto Navio aos ditos homens de negocio e que elles

appoint, and make my trusty Friend, B. C. of Merchant, my true and lawful Attorney, for me, and in my Name, and to my Use, to Demand, sue for, recover, and receive of T. B. of Merchant, the Sum of                      to me due and owing by and from the said T. B. giving, and hereby granting unto my said Attorney, my full Power and Authority to use and exercise all such Acts, Things, and Devices in the Law, as shall be necessary for recovering of the said Debt and Acquittance, or other Discharges, in my Name, to make and give, and generally to do and execute in the Premises, as fully as myself might or could do, being personally present; ratifying, confirming, and allowing all and whatsoever my said Attorney shall lawfully do, or cause to be done therein, by these Presents. In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, in the 20th of                      17

Sealed and delivered

in the Presence of

*A. B.*

*T. A*

*M. B.*

---

*The Copy of a Charter-Party of Affreightment.*

**T**HIS Charter-Party of Affreightment, intended, made the                      of the Month of                      *Anno Domini*, between T. A. Master, under God, of the good Ship or Vessel, called the                      of the Burthen of                      Tuns, or thereabouts, now riding at Anchor, in the River of                      of the one Part, and E, T, M, B, L, &c. Merchants, of the other Part, witnesseth, that the said Master hath granted and letten the said Ship to freight unto the said Merchants, and that they the said Merchants have accordingly



os ditto Homens de negocio tem tomado em alugar pella viagem aos concertos e as condições, a saber o ditto Mestre faz concerto, promete e otorga, por elle mesmo, ou seus Testamenteiros e Administradores e com os ditto homens de negocio, e qualquer delles, ou seus e a qualquer dos seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes, por estes presentes; que o ditto Navio forte e saõ de quilha, e bem bastantemente provido de mantimentos, enxarcias e gente, e aparelhado de todas as couzas convenientes e necessarias para fazer a viagem pordiante declarada; com o primeiro vento favoravel e bom tempo que Deos premitira despois da data destes presentes, partira do porto de \_\_\_\_\_ com dotas as taes fazendas e Mercadorias que os ditto homens de negocio ou os Seus Constituintes entrementes carregaram ou meteram abordo d'elle, e com ella em dereitura dara a vela e aplicara ao \_\_\_\_\_ como o vento eo tempo mais favorecerem ao ditto Navio na sua viagem; e em chegando tao' perto do ditto lugar de \_\_\_\_\_ elle o ditto Mestre ou os Seus Constituintes dentro de \_\_\_\_\_ Dias de traballo para se contarem logo despois de tal sua chegada, naõ somente descargaram e entregaram as ditas fazendas e mercadorias metidas bordo do dito Navio a o \_\_\_\_\_ sobre ditto, aos ditto homens de negocio, aos seus Feitores ou Constituintes ou a alguns ou algum delles em Salvamento e bem acondicionadas salvante o risco dos mares e o tohimento de principes e Governadores mas tambem receberam, tornaraõ a carregar e tomaram abordo do ditto Navio de e dos ditto homens de negocio, dos seus Feitores ou Constituintes ou de alguns ou algum delles todas as taes fazendas e mercadorias que elles ou qualquer delles ali carregaram ou meteram abordo d'elle athe a comprimento inteiro da carga do ditto Navio; a Saber: tanto quanto bem tem para arrumar debaixo da cuberta

no



cordingly hired her for the Voyage, and upon the Terms and Conditions following: That is to say, the said Master doth covenant, promise, and grant for himself, his Executors, and Administrators, to and with the said Merchants, and either of them, their and either of their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents; That the said Ship, strong and staunch, and well and sufficiently victualled, tackled, manned, and apparelled, with all Things meet, needful, and necessary for the Performance of the Voyage hereafter mentioned, shall, with the first fair Wind and Weather, which God shall send, after the Date of these Presents, depart from the Port of \_\_\_\_\_ with all such Goods and Merchandizes as the said Merchants, or their Assigns, shall in the mean Time lade and put on board her, and therewith directly sail, and apply unto \_\_\_\_\_ as Wind and Weather shall best serve for the said Ship to sail, and being arrived as near to the said Place of \_\_\_\_\_ he the said Master, or Assigns, shall and will, within working Days next, from and after such her Arrival to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes put on board the said Ship at \_\_\_\_\_ afore said, unto the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, in Safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes and Rulers excepted, but also shall and will receive, relade, and take on board the said Ship, of and from the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, all such Goods and Merchandizes, as they or any of them shall there please to lade and put on board her, to the said Ship's full and compleat Lading; that is to say, as much as can conveniently be stowed in the whole Hold, and between Decks, afore the Main-Mast, Room only reserved for the said Ship's Provisions, Tackle, and  
C c Apparel,

no conves, e adiante do masto grande, Salvante fo  
lugar pellos mantimentos enxarcias e a parelhos do  
ditto Navio, eos dittos dias de trabalho

fendo a cabados ou o ditto navio fendo ali mais de-  
pressã despachado, o que primeiro foceder elle o  
ditto Mestre ou os seus constituintes com a primeira  
boa ocafiã de tempo e vento favoravel em derei-  
tura navegaraõ e tornaraõ a vir com o ditto Navio  
e a Sua Carga do ditta porto de descaregar, e re-  
caregar de aqui dentro de

dias de trabalho logo despois da entrada  
do ditto Navio dada na alfandega desta ditto

elle o ditto Mestre ou o seus Constituintes  
descaregam e entregaraõ as dittas fazendas e mer-  
cadorias carregadas abordo do ditto Navio ao seu  
descarregar e recarregar sobre ditto aos

dittos homens de negocio e os seus Testamenteiros,  
Administradores ou Constituintes em salvamento,  
falante o risco dos mares e o tolhimento de Princi-  
pes e Governadores, e assim se acabara a ditto desti-  
nada Viagem Eos dittos homens de nego-

cio concertam prometem e otorgam por elles mes-  
mos e qualquer delles, ou seus e qualquer de seus  
Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes por  
estes presentes: que os seus Testamentei-  
ros, Administradores, Feitores o Constituintes naõ  
fomente descaregaram e recaregaram o ditto, na-  
vio ao seu porto de descaregar e recaregar de

sobre ditto, e despacharam e descaregaram o mes-  
mo neste na maneira e forma acima decla-  
tado; e dentro dos certos dias e tempos sobre no-  
meados; Mas tambem por inteiro de todo o frete  
que se vencer, para se para e pedir por e durante esta  
presente destinada viagem; bem e verdadeiramente  
pagaram ou Coufaram que se pague ao ditto Me-  
stre, aos seus Testamenteiros Administradores ou  
Constituintes a Conthia de

de dinheiro corrente de

na maneira e  
forma

Apparel, and the said working Days being expired, or the said Ship there sooner dispatched, which first shall happen, he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will, with the then next Opportunity of Wind and Weather from her said unlading and relading Part of afore said, directly sail, return, and come back with the said Ship and Lading unto the port of and here within working Days next after the said Ship shall be entered in the Custom-House of this said he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes, laden on Board the said Ship at her lading and relading afore said, unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, in Safety, and well-conditioned, the Danger of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes, and Rulers excepted, and so end the said intended Voyage; and the said Merchants do covenant, promise, and grant, for themselves, and either of them, their, and either of their Executors and Administrators, to and with the said Master, his Executors and Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents, that their Executors, Administrators, Factors, or Assigns, shall and will not only unlade and relade the said Ship, at her unlading and relading Port of afore said, and dispatch and discharge the same at this in Manner and Form as above expressed, and within the respective Days and Times above mentioned, but also shall and will, in full of all Freight to be due, payable, or demandable, for or during this present intended Voyage, well and duly pay, or cause to be paid, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, the Sum of of lawful Money of in Manner and Form following: That is to say, Part thereof within C c 2 Days



forma seguinte A saber parte delle  
dentro em dias depois da entrada  
do ditto navio dado na alfandega de

Item mais delle dentro em dias proxi-  
mo seguintes, e o restante do ditto frete inteiro den-  
tro em dias logo depois da descarga  
do ditto Navio aqui em sobre ditto, E

acordarse reciprocamente por e entre ambas as par-  
tes por elles mesmos, os seus particulares Testamen-  
teiros, e Administradores que todos os gastos dos  
portos que se vencerem para pagar-se ou pedir-se, du-  
rante esta presente destinada viagem; serem pagos  
e satisfeitos na maneira e, forma seguinte; A saber

delles pellos dittos homens de negocio ou  
seus Testamenteiros ou Constituintes: Alem disso  
por este se concerta que podra ser e seja licito aos e  
pellos ditto homens de negocio, os seus feitores ou  
Constituintes de reter o ditto navio em detença ao seu  
porto de descarga e recarga sobre ditto, e tambem  
a sobre ditto tanto tempo e tantos dias que  
se requeiram, alem dos dias certos acima apontados  
salvo que nam passem os, dias por inteiro;

Elles os dittos homens de negocio os seus Feitores  
Constituintes por cada hum e cada tal dia pagando ao  
ditto Mestre ou aos seus Constituintes de dia em dia  
como mesmo se vencer para se pagar, qualquer cou-  
za sobreditta em contrario nao' obstante; e pello com-  
primento de todas e de cada hua das cousas acima de-  
claradas, as quaes par parte e pello que toca ao dit-  
to Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros Administradores  
ou Constituintes e cada hum delles sam e devem de-  
fer avidas, tidas, observadas e compridas, O ditto  
Mestre se obriga a sy mesmo os seus Testamenteiros  
e Administradores, juntamente com o ditto Navio,  
o seu frete, enxarcias e parelhos aos dittos homens  
de negocio aos seus Testamenteiros, Administra-  
dores e Constituintes e cada hum delles na soma ou  
pena de de dinheiro corrente de

para

Days after the said Ship shall be entered into the Custom House of *Item,*

more thereof within Days then next following, and the remaining Part of the said whole Freight within Days next after the

said Ship shall be delivered after lading here at afore said; and it is mutually agreed by and between the said Parties to these Presents, for themselves, their several Executors and Administrators, That all Port Charges which shall grow due, payable, or demandable, during this present intended Voyage, shall be paid and satisfied in Manner and form following; That is to say, thereof by the said Merchants, their Executors, Factors, or Assigns, and the other thereof by the said

Master, his Executors or Assigns: Further, it is hereby agreed, that it shall and may be lawful unto and for the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, to keep the said Ship in Demurrage at her unlading and relading Port above mentioned, and also at afore said, over and above the respected Days aforementioned, such other Time and Number of Days as will be requisite, so as the same exceed not Days in the whole, they the

said Merchants, their Factors, for each and every such Day, paying unto the said Master, or his Assigns Day by Day, where the same shall grow due and payable, any Thing afore said to the contrary notwithstanding; and for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, observed, and performed, the said Master doth bind and oblige himself, his Executors and Administrators, together with the said Ship and her Freight, Tackle and Apparel unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every



para se pagar bem e verdadeiramente por estes presentes e tambem pello comprimento de todas e de cada huã nas cousas sobre dittas, os quaes por parte epello que toca aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, Constituintes ou qualquer delles, Sam edevem de fer guardadas, pagas e Compridas; os dittos homens de negocio se obrigam a sy mesmos os seus Testamenteiros e Administradores, junta e separadamente com a suas fazendas que se carregaram abordo do ditto Navio nesta presente destinada viagem, ao ditto Mestre aos seus Testamenteiro, Administradores e Constituintes, e a cada hum delles, na semelhante Soma de pena de                      de Semelhante dinheiro corrente de                      para fer pago bem e verdadeiramente por estas presentes; Em Testimunha no que as partes Sobredittas affinaram e Selaram reciprocamente estas presentes Cartas de fretamento contratas, ao dia e anno primeiro acima declarado.

T. B.

Sellado e entregue  
adiante de  
A. B. C. D.

### *A Police de Seguro.*

**E**M o Nome de Deus, *Amen*

Tanto no seu proprio nome como por ou em o nome ou os nomes de todos e cada pessoa ou pessoas aquem o mesmo pretence, possa ou podra pertencer, em parte ou em todo faço Seguro, cada sy mesmo e a elles, e a cada hum delles de assegurar-se, perdidos ou não perdidos

sobre qualquer genero de fazendas e Mercaderias qualquer carregadas ou para se carregarem abordo do bom Navio por nome                      da Carga

of them, in the Sum or Penalty of                      Pounds  
of lawful Money of                      well and truly to be  
paid by these Presents, and likewise for the Per-  
formance of all and singular the Premises, which  
on the Part and Behalf of the said Merchants, their  
Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, or any  
of them, are and ought to be kept, paid, and per-  
formed, the said Merchants do bind and oblige  
themselves, their Executors, and Administrators,  
jointly and severally, together with their Goods, to  
be laden on board the said Ship, this present intend-  
ed Voyage, unto the said Master, his Executors,  
Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them,  
in the like Sum and Penalty of                      of like  
lawful Money of                      also well and truly to  
be paid by these Presents. In Witness whereof, the  
Parties aforesaid to these present Charter-Parties in-  
dented, have interchangeably put their Hands and  
Seals the Day and Year first above written.

*T. B.*

Sealed and delivered in  
the Presence of  
*A. B. C. D.*

*A Policy of Assurance.*

**I**N the Name of God, *Amen*,  
as well in his own Name, as for and in the  
Name and Names of all and every other Person and  
Persons to whom the same doth, may, or shall ap-  
pertain, in Part, or in all, doth make Assurance,  
and causeth himself and them, and every of them,  
to be insured, lost, or not lost                      upon  
any Kind of Goods and Merchandize whatsoever,  
loaden or to be loaden aboard the good Ship called  
the                      Burthen                      Tons,

de toneladas, *P. M.* do que he Mestre debaixo de Deos *C. T. M.* ou quem quer que for por Mestre do ditto Navio ou o Mestre delle se nomea ou nomeara; principiando a aventura sobre as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias de e logo despois de carregallas abordo do ditto Navio e assim se cōtinuara e ficara ate que o ditto Navio com as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias quaesquer chegar

eas mesmas ahi descarregadas em Salvamento; e sera licito pello ditto navio; nesta viagem, deparar e deterse em quaesquer portos ou lugares sem prejuizo a este Seguro. As

dittas fazendas e, Mercadorias por concerto, sam e seram avaliadas em Sem que fede outra

conta dellas mesmas, Tocante as Venturas e riscos com que nos ou asseguradores contentamonos e que tomamos sobre nos nesta viagem, Ellas sam dos Mares, das naos de guerra, de fogo, inimigos. Cossaios, ladrões, Roubadores, Jettezonas ou fazendas perdidas e deitadas no mar lettras de Marte, e contra Marte, sobresaltos tomadas no Mar, citações, tolhimentos e detenções de todos os Reys, Princepes e povos de naçam condiçam ou qualidade qualquer barratria e contraites enganofas do mestre e dos Marinheiros, e de todos os outros perigos; perdas e desastres que ja vieram ou que viram ou prejuizo desaproveitamento ou dano das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguã parte dellas. E se a caso soceder alguã perda ou desventura, sera licito aos Asseguradores Feitores. Servos e Constituintes de mandar fazer diligencias e trabalhar por, em a acerca da defeza Salvamento e recobramento das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguã parte dellas sem prejuizo ao deste Seguro, aos, gastos do que nos os Asseguradores contribuiremos cada hum conforme a Sua conthia nelle assegurada; e nos os Asseguradores estamos de accordo e concerto que esta cōstituição e seguro tera tanta força e valor como

amais

or thereabouts; wherefore P. M. is Master, under God, for this present Voyage or who-soever else shall go for Master in the said Ship, or by whatsoever Name or Names the said Ship, or the Master thereof, is or shall be named or called; beginning the Adventure upon the said Goods and Merchandise from and immediately following the Loading thereof aboard the said Ship and so shall continue and endure until the said Ship, with the said Goods and Merchandise whatsoever, shall be arrived and the same there safely landed; and it shall be lawful for the said Ship in this Voyage to stop and stay at any Port or Places without Prejudice to this Assurance.

The said Goods and Merchandises by Agreement, are and shall be valued at without further Account to be given for the same, touching the Adventures and Perils which we the Assurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this Voyage, they are of the Seas, Man of War, Fire, Enemies, Pirates, Rovers, Thieves, Jettezons, Letters of Mart and Counter-mart, Surprizals, Takings of Sea, Arrests, Restraints, and Detainments of all Kings, Princes, and People of what Nation, Conditions, or Quality soever, Baratry of the Master and Mariners, and of all other Perils, Losses and Misfortunes, that have or shall come to the Hurt, Detriment, or Damage of the said Goods and Merchandises, or any Part thereof; and in Case of any Loss or Misfortune, it shall be lawful to the assured Factors, Servants, and Assigns, to sue, labour, and travel, for, in, and about the Defence, Safeguard, and Recovery of the said Goods and Merchandises, or any Part thereof, without Prejudice to this Assurance, to the Charges whereof, we the Assurers will contribute each one according to the Rate and Quantity of his Sum herein assured: And it is agreed by us the Insurers, that



amais authentica Police ou escritura de Seguro dantes feita em qualquer parte de Easim nos os Afseguradores fomos contentes e por este prometemos e obrigamonos cada hum por sua propria parte, os nossos Eredeyros, Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes pello verdareiro comprimento das cousas acima declaradas, confessando que estamos pagos e satisfeitos do que se nos deve acontae deste Seguro.

Em testimunha do que nos os Afseguradores, assinamos ao pe deste con as conthias afseguradas, &c.

Eu *A. B.* Sou Contente com este Seguro } 100*l.*  
 por cem livras Esterl. L. em de }  
 1767.

### *O Conhecimento.*

**D**I GO eu *T. B.* de Mestre ou Capitão que sou do Navio que Deos salve por Nome que ao presente esta furto e ancorado no porto de para com o favor de Deos seguir viagem ao porto de aonde he minha direita descarga, que he verdade, que receby, e tenho carregado dentro do ditto Navio debaixo de cuberta enxuto e bem acondicionada de Marcado da marca defora o qual me obrigo e prometo, levandome Deos abom salvamento o ditto Navio ao ditto Porto de entregar em nome do sobredito a *T. M.* auzente a quem seus poder tiver pagando me de frete para assim comprir e guardar, obrigo minha pessoa e bens e ditto Navio em certeza do qual dey tres conhecimentos de hum theor assinados gor mim ou por meu Escrivão, hum comprado



that this Writing and Assurance shall be of as much Force and Effect, as the surest Policy or Writing of Assurance heretofore made in or elsewhere in and so we the Assurers are contented, and do hereby promise and bind ourselves, each one for his own Part, our Heirs, Executors, and Goods, to the Assured, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, for the true Performance of the Premises, confessing ourselves paid the Consideration due unto us for this Assurance, by In Witness whereof, we the Assurers have subscribed our Names and Sums assured in

I. A. B. am contented with this Assurance for One hundred Pounds: Witness my Hand } 100*l*.  
1767. }

*A Bill of Lading.*

**S**HIPPED, by the Grace of God, in good Order, and well-conditioned, by in and upon the good Ship called the where-of is Master under God, for this present Voyage and now riding at Anchor in and, by God's Grace, bound for to say being marked and numbered as in the Margin and are to be delivered in like good Order, and well-conditioned, at the aforesaid Port of the Danger of the Seas only excepted, unto Mr. or his Assigns, he or they paying for the said Goods with Primage and Avarage, as is accustomed. In Witness whereof, the Master and Purser of the said Ship hath affirmed to three Bills of Lading, all of this Tenor and Date; the one of which three Bills being accomplished, the other two to stand

prido os outros não valham; feito em  
 em de de 1767 Annos.  
 Do que contem não sey.

---

*Ou Instrumento ou Escritura de Compromisso.*

**A** Todos quantos este presente Instrumento ou  
 Escritura de Compromisso, virem, de nos  
 Acredores de G. M. Mercador de Saude;  
 Em como ditto G. M. ao presente fica devendo e  
 em direito deve a nos os Acredores delle ditto G.  
 M. varias e diversas somas de Dinheiro, &c. As  
 quaes em rasam de muitas dividas e algumas dellas  
 muy grandes, que tambem em direito se lhe devem  
 a elle, nem se podem arrecadar sem alguma dilaçam  
 de tempo, e por serem algumas dellas irrecuperaveis  
 sem demanda, elle esta por ora muito desabilitado  
 de fazer, pagamento a nos os seus Acredores da,  
 nosa inteira e justa divida conforme asua vontade e  
 desejo; ao respeito de que, elle nos pede com todo  
 o encarecimento que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada  
 hum de nos fossimos servidos de dar e conceder a  
 elle o Ditto G. M. aos seus Testamenteiros, Admi-  
 nistradores, ou Constituintes, tanta largeza o dilaçam  
 de tempo pello pagamento e satisfaçam de nossas  
 dividas particulares que lhe parecer justo e rezaõ  
 pello alcance e cobrança das dittas dividas, A saber,  
 que nos e cada hum de nos ficassemos contentes a  
 tomar e receber de nossas dividas inteira sem  
 para se repartirem em partes, para sepa-  
 garem em pagamentos diversos na maneira  
 e forma Seguinte A Saber, o primeiro pagamento  
 della hade ser e o resto pargar-sea em  
 proximo pella inteira paga e Satisfaçam  
 das dittas dividas espezifcadas; E pello mais ple-  
 nario comprimento dos varios pagamentos sobre-  
 dittos

stand void. And so God send the good Ship to  
her desired Port in Safety. *Amen.* Dated in  
on                      of 1767.  
Inside and Contents unknown.

---

*A Letter of Licence.*

**T**O all People, to whom this present Writing  
shall come, We the Creditors of G. M. of  
Merchant, send greeting. Whereas the  
said G. M. at this present Time, doth stand in-  
debted, and doth justly owe unto us the said Cre-  
ditors of him the said G. M. divers and sundry Sums  
of Money, &c. which, by Reason of many Debts,  
and some of them very great, that are likewise  
justly owing unto him, and cannot be had or re-  
covered without some Respite of Time, and some  
of them not without Suit, he is very much disa-  
bled at present to make Payment unto us the  
said Creditors, our whole and just Debt, as he seem-  
eth willing and desirous; in consideration whereof,  
he instantly desireth us, That we the said Creditors,  
and every of us, would be pleased to give and grant  
unto the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators,  
or Assigns, such Liberty or Respite of Time, for the  
Payment and Satisfaction of our several Debts, as  
he thinketh reasonable for the obtaining, getting  
and recovering of the said Debts: *viz.* That we  
and every of us would be content to take, and ac-  
cept of our whole Debts in                      to be divided  
in                      Parts, to be paid at                      several  
Payments, in Manner and Form following: *viz.*  
The first Payment thereof to be                      and the  
Residue to be paid at                      next                      in  
full Payment and Satisfaction of the said several  
Debts: And for the more full Performance of the  
said several Payments aforesaid, in such Manner and  
2                      Form

dittos em tal maneira e forma como acima se limita e declara, ao verdadeiro intento destas presentes elle o ditto G. M. ao ou antes do                      fera obrigado a nos os dittos acredores na mesma conformidade, por hua obrigação que sefara na melhor forma de direito com todos e cada hum dos pagamentos na maneira em cima limitada, hum certo lugar ou lugares convenientes de nos os dittos Acredores no meados, e apena de cada huã das obrigacoes hade fer dobrada da Soma inteira incluza nella mesma para ser a nos entregue e acada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros ou Constituintes, ao ou antes do

proximo Seguinte data esta; por esta causa Saiba-se; que nos os dittos Acredores a qui em baixo assinados, e cada hum de nos para sy em particular, e por sy. Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes ao respeito do em cima especificado e declarado, por estes presentes devontade propria consentimentos, contratamos, propetemos e concordamos ao e com o ditto G. M. ou seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes por estes presentes que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, aceitaremos do ditto G. M. dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, todas e cada huã de taes dividas e conthias dinheiro do ditto G. M. a nos e cada hum de nos, devidas evencidas na vertude de taes obrigações, Segurança ou Seguranças sobreditas para se pagarem em tal modo e maneira, e aos taes dias e tempos que acima se limitão e requerem. E alem, disso, que nos os dittos Acredores e cada hum de nos, ou nossos e cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes em conformidade ao entregue da ditta Obrigação aos e a cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes ao custo do ditto G. M. os seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes, Sellaremos assinaremos e



Form as is above limited and declared, according to the true Meaning of these Presents, he the said *G. M.* shall and will, at, or before the                    become bound unto us the said Creditors respectively, by one Obligation in due Form of Law to be made, including all and every the Payments in such Sort as is above limited, at some convenient Place or Places                    by every of us the said Creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the Penalty of every Obligation to be double the whole Sum included in the Condition of the same to be delivered to us, and every of us, our Executors or Assigns, at or before the                    next ensuing the Date hereof: Know ye therefore, that we the said Creditors, whose Names are here under-written, and every of us for his own Part, and for his Executors, Administrators and Assigns, for the Consideration above specified and expressed, do by these Presents willingly consent, covenant, promise and agree to and with the said *G. M.* his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, to accept of the said *G. M.* his Executors and Assigns, all and every of the said Debts and Sums of Money by the said *G. M.* unto us, and every of us, owing, and paying upon such Obligations, Assurance and Assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such Manner and Sort, and at such Days and Times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the said Creditors, and every of us, our, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns respectively, upon the Delivery of the said Obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, shall and will, at the Charge of the said *G. M.* his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, seal, subscribe, and, in due Form of Law, deliver to the said *G. M.* our sufficient general Release, for him, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, to bear Date  
and

na melhor forma e dereito entregaremos ao ditto G. M. a nossa geral e sufficiente descarga, para ser rendida por elle o ditto G. M. ou seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes a data e a limitação ante o do dia e data desta obrigação nova; em testemunha do que a esta temos assinado e sellado ao dia e no anno, &c.

---

### *A Letra de Cambio.*

*Londres,*

por 300 Milres.

**A** Vista desta minha primeira Letra de Cambio pagara Vm. ao Senhor T. M. ou Ordem a Conthia de trezentos Milreis em dinheiro corrente de Portugal, o Valor, recebido de Senhor T. D. a tempo fara bom pagamento, lançandoa na conta como por avizo de

Ao Senhor T. M. Mercador  
em Lisboa.

S. D. V. M.  
T. M.

---

*Lisboa em do*

1746, por 250 £. Starl.

**A** Quarenta Dias Vista desta minha Segunda Letra de Cambio, a primeira não sendo paga, pagara Vm, ao Senhor F. G. & Companhia, ou Ordem a Soma de dozentas e Cinquenta libras Esterlinas em moeda corrente de Inglaterra, o valor recebido de Senhor J. D. a tempo fara bom pagamento apresentandoa na conta com por avizo de

Ao Senhor T. B. Mercador.  
em Londres.

H. S.

and Limitation, before the Day of the Date  
of this new Obligation to be made for the Debt.  
In Witness whereof, we have hereunto set our  
Hands and Seals. Dated the  
of                      &c.

---

*Bills of Exchange.*

*London*                      of                      1767                      for 300 Milreas.

**A**T Sight of this my first Bill of Exchange,  
please to pay to Mr. T. M. or Order, the  
Sum of Three Hundred Milreas in current Money  
of *Portugal*, Value received of Mr. T. D. at Time.  
Make good Payment, placing it to Account, as  
*per Advice*, from,                      S I R,  
To Mr. T. M. Merchant                      Yours, H. S.  
in *Lisbon*.                      T. M.

---

*Lisbon*                      of                      1746,                      for 250 £. Sterl.

**A**T Forty Days Sight, of this my second Bill  
of Exchange, my first and third not being  
paid, please to pay to Mr. F. G. and Company, or  
Order, the Sum of two Hundred and fifty Pounds  
*Sterling*, in current Money of *England*, Value re-  
ceived of Mr. J. D. at Time. Make good Pay-  
ment, and place it to Account, as *per Advice*,  
from                      S I R,  
To Mr. T. B. Merchant                      Yours, H. S.  
in *London*,                      F. P.

*O protesto de huà Letra de Cambio.*

**S** AIBAM todos a quem esta presente escritura tocar que aos domez de, do anno de ao requerimento de *P. C.* Mercador de eu *M. N.* Tabaliaõ de notas jurado e admitido pella autoridade del Rey, &c. fuy a casa de morada de Senhor *T. B.* sobre quem a Letra de Cambio em cima referida he facada, e mostrey a original ao ditto *T. B.* requerendo a sua aceitaçam della; o que merespondeo que não aceitaria a ditta Letra por huãs' razoens que escrevesse ao Senhor *T. P.* o facador; pella qual razão eu o ditto Tabaliaõ protestey, or por estes presentes protesto, tanto contra o ditto *F. P.* o facador como tambem contra o ditto *T. B.* sobre quem he facada, demais contra todas as outras pessoas, Endorsadores, ou outras nella interessados, por todos os Cambios, Recambios, danos e interesses quaesquer: Em presença de *H. J. S. T.* chamados por Testemunhas a este presente acto feito no meu Escritorio em o dia e anno acima declarado.

*M. N.* Notario Publico.

*Varias Formas de Recibos.**Dinheiro recebido por inteiro.*

**R** Eceby 1 Janeiro, 1750, do Senhor *Thomas Crew*, Ceis Livras Cete Xilins e Ceis peniques por inteiro comprimento de todas as contas, por

*Dinheiro recebido por Conta de meu Amo.*

**R** Eciby a 22 de Fevereiro 1750, do Sr. *Jonas Lee*, quatro Livras e Cinco Xillins por Conta de meu amo *Moises Trust*, por.

*Din.*



*A Protest of a Bill of Exchange.*

**K** NOW all Persons whom this present Writing may concern, that the \_\_\_\_\_ of \_\_\_\_\_ in the Year \_\_\_\_\_ at the Request of Mr. P. C. of Merchant, T. M. N. Public Notary, sworn and admitted by Authority of his most sacred Majesty, did go to the Dwelling-house or Habitation of Mr. T. B. upon whom the abovenamed Bills of Exchange is drawn, and shewed the Original unto the said Mr. T. B. demanding his Acceptance of the same, who answered me he should not accept the same Bill, for some Reasons he should write Mr. F. P. the Drawer: Wherefore I the said Notary did protest, and by these Presents protest, as well against the said F. P. the Drawer, as likewise against the said T. B. upon whom it is drawn; as also against all other Persons, Indorsers, or others therein concerned, for all Changes, Rechanges, Damages and Interest whatsoever, in Presence of H. J. and S. T. called for Witnesses to this present Act, done in my Office in \_\_\_\_\_ the Day and Year above mentioned.

M. N. Notary Public.

*Various Forms of Receipts.*

*Money received in full.*

**R** Eceived 1st January, 1750, of Mr. Thomas Crew, Six Pounds Seven Shillings and Sixpence, in full of all Demands per \_\_\_\_\_

*For another's Use.*

**R** Eceived 22d February, 1750, of Mr. Jonas Lee, Four Pounds Five Shillings, for the Use of my Master Moses Trust, per \_\_\_\_\_

*Money*

*Dinheiro recebido em parte.*

**R** Eciby a 30 de *Março*, 1751, do Sr. *Jacinto Cook*, Cincō Livras Cinco Xilins, em parte de doze Livras e dez Xilins, por Conta de meu pay. *Antonio Truelove*, por

*Dinheiro recebido em parte de Contas que nao' estam ajustadas.*

**R** Eciby a 24 de *Abril*, 1751, da Senhora *Martha Rich*, por mãos de Pedro Cornet, onze Livras à Conta, por

*Quando hum Rol ou Conta se paga por inteiro.*

**R** Eceiby a 15 de *Mayo*, 1751, a conthia de esta Conta, per

*Quando se paga dinheiro a Conta debam rol.*

**R** Eceiby 6 de *Junho*, 1751, cete livras em parte desta Conta, por

*Notas ou Obrigacoens que faz hum Homem quando toma dinheiro emprestado.*

*Londres, 4 de Junho, 1751.*

**E** U abaixo firmado premeto pagar a o Sr. *E. D.* Banqueiro do Thezouro de sua Magestade do Excise, ou a sua ordem quarenta dias despois da data desta obrigaçã quatro centas e trinta livras por valor recebido.

£ 430

p *Christovo Wade.*

**E** U abaixo firmado premeto pagar a o Sr. *Paulo Barker* cavalheiro ou sua ordem em fendo requerido trezentas, e noventa, e quatro livras dous Xilins

*Money recived in Part.*

**R**Eceived 30th of *March*, 1751, of Mr. *James Cook*; Five Pounds Ten Shillings; in Part of Twelve Pounds Ten Shillings, for my Father *Anthony Truelove*, per

*Money received on Accounts unsettled.*

**R**Eceived 24th *April*, 1751, of Mrs. *Martha Rich*, by the Hands of *Peter Cornet*, Eleven Pounds on Account, per

*When a Bill is paid in Full.*

**R**Eceived 15th *May*, 1751, the full Contents hereof, per

*When a Bill is paid in Part.*

**R**Eceived 26th *June*, 1751, Seven Pounds in Part hereof, per

*Promissory Notes, for a Man's Self, &c.*

*London, June 4th, 1751.*

**I** Promise to pay to Mr. *Edward Draper*, Cashier of his Majesty's Revenue of Excise, or Order, forty Days after Date, Four hundred and thirty Pounds. Value received

£ 430

per *Christopher Wade*

**I** Promise to pay to *Paul Barker*, Esq; or Order, on demand, Three hundred and ninety-four Pounds, Two Shillings, and Six-pence.  
I Value

Xilins e ceis peniques por valor recebido hoje 17  
de *Julio*, 1751,

£ 394 2 6

*per Philip Venham.*

**E**U abaixo firmado premeto pagar ao Sr. *J. T.*  
ou sua ordem quarenta, e nove libras, e tres  
Xilins 6 mezes despois da data desta obrigação' por  
valor recebido em verdade do que a assigney hoje  
24 de Agosto 1751.

£ 49 3

*N. B.* Observece q<sup>m</sup>. em notas ou obrigaçoens  
sempre se declara a soma recebida sem a qual não'  
fao' de nenhuma força nem tem Authoridade.

*F I N I S.*





Value received this 17th of *July*, 1751.  
£ 394 2 6 *per Philip Venham.*

**I** Promise to pay to Mr. *J. T.* or Order, Forty  
nine Pounds Three Shillings, six Months after  
Date, Value received. Witness my Hand this  
24th of *August*, 1751.  
£ 49 3 *per William Jones.*

*N. B.* Observe in Promissory Notes that the  
Value received is mentioned, or they are of no  
Force.

*F I N I S.*

